

The Last Days



Maria Valtorta

The Last Days

Maria Valtorta

This is the 2nd in a series of Anonymous' ebooks,
non-commercial compilations of excerpts,
from the writings of Maria Valtorta,
“The Word that gives eternal life.”

The Last Days excerpts were taken from the English editions of Maria Valtorta's Italian publisher's copyrighted books below, © variously, 1986-2022. Due attribution is made where excerpted.

- *The Gospel as Revealed to Me*, Vols. 1-10, (ref. abbrev. Gospel), 2022, formerly titled and published as *The Poem of the Man-God*, Vols. 1-5 (Poem), 1991, 1989, 1989, 1989, 1990 resp.
- *The Notebooks 1943* (NB43), 2004
- *The Notebooks 1944* (NB44), 2024
- *The Notebooks 1945-1950* (NB45), 2021
- *The Little Notebooks* (LNB), 2022
- *Lessons on the Epistle of St. Paul to the Romans* (LES), 2020
- *The End Times As Revealed To Maria Valtorta* (ET), 1994

Publisher:

Centro Editoriale Valtortiano srl.
Viale Piscicelli 89-91
03036 Isola del Liri (Fr) – Italy
www.mariavaltortastore.com
cev@mariavaltortastore.com

Contents

Compiler's Foreword..... xliii

From The End Times As Revealed To Maria Valtorta

Foreword..... xlvii

Maria Valtorta And Her Writings xlix

Context li

1. Good Friday; The First Dictation By Jesus On Co-Redemption 1

Co-Redemption: Call for suffering souls to participate in redemption by substituting for Christ's second martyrdom, as each self-immolating creature is granted power to save some souls (1)

Final Judgment: Jesus will come only at the final hour, and His look alone will suffice to defeat the antichrists; His second advent will be for judgment, not salvation (1)

God's Patience Exhausted: The Father is weary and permits hell's punishments to be unleashed because humanity has preferred hell to Heaven and chosen Lucifer as dominator (1)

Humanity's Preference for Darkness: People have rejected God's salvation, preferring hell and Lucifer over Heaven, rendering both the flood and Christ's blood ineffective (1)

Prayer's Efficacy: All can obtain the power of entreaty not through special study but by making one's heart a manger for Jesus and a cross to bear Him, achieving annihilation of self in Christ (2)

Souls and Redemption: The flood of blood (Christ's sacrifice) did not make humanity children of God; each practicing self-immolation can save some souls, as Christ saved only a few at His death (1-2)

2. The Penance Of The Co-Redeemers 3

Co-Redeemers' Place: A special place exists for the generous co-redeemers, distinct from both martyrs and the saved, standing between the two arrays, with Mary at their head (4)

Love vs. Bread: Love is more necessary than bread, yet men toil for bread while neglecting to acquire love, thereby losing God, His help on earth, and the vision of Him in heaven (4)

- Penance and Love:** Only penance and love have weight in God's eyes to block events and divert them from their course; they are not useless or out-of-date (4)
- Pentecost Rejected:** A new Pentecost descending in full force would not suffice to set men aflame with God unless they first clear their souls of false gods (4)
- Signs Requested:** Many ask for a sign of the hour or of Christ's power, but the signs are already present in the Gospel and in the Law, which men have changed (4-5)
- Spiritual Death:** Men are lost unless a miracle is accomplished; they must turn around and pray to Love to save themselves from perdition (4)

3. The Enduring Sign Of The Gospel..... 4

- Christ's Power:** Signs of Christ's power have been given for twenty centuries through miracles, cures, and the sending of His Mother, yet men have exploited these gifts for human purposes (5-6)
- Gospel as Prophecy:** All that was to happen from Christ's time as man until His coming as Judge is contained in the Gospel, which men no longer understand (5)
- Lucifer's Gifts:** The Beast breathes fire and submerges men in evil; these are the only gifts Lucifer can give to those who place themselves under his sign (5)
- Mary as Temple:** Mary is God's Temple, a house of prayer, not a den of commerce; men have made her coming an object of wrangling and have treated her words as useless ditties (5-6)
- Record of Sins:** Everything is recorded in the great book of God's Intelligence, written not with ink but with the kindled coal of Love, and nothing is forgotten (5)
- Scourges Useless:** Neither scourges nor acts of goodness have been enough to make men understand; they treat God as an idiot, exploiting His power and patience (5)

4. Jesus' Postponement Of Judgment, Entreaty To Our Lady Of Sorrows..... 6

- Christ's Second Advent:** Jesus will come again, but His coming will be one of severe, inexorable, general Judgment, and for most it will be condemnation, not salvation (6-7)
- Entreaty to Our Lady of Sorrows:** Mary, who took humanity as her children at the foot of the Cross, is implored to look upon her children sprinkled with Christ's Blood and obtain life, salvation, and peace (7)
- Mercy Withheld:** Even if Jesus showed Himself, hearts lack the residue of faith and respect needed to bend in repentance; a new chorus of insults would be hurled against Him (7)
- Miracle's Futility:** A miracle would not lead the major wrongdoers to repent; they would trample on the bodies of the punished and use judgment as a throne for further oppression (7)

Sieve of Salvation: The present hour is a sieve; those with the devil's darnel will fall to Satan, while those with germinating wheat will spring into eternal life (7)

Vengeance Misguided: Those who ask the Father for vengeance misunderstand Him, for He is the Father of forgiveness, not vengeance (7)

5. **Constant Vigilance To Preserve God's Gift, The World's Rejection Of Grace, A Night Of Expiatory Affliction8**

Annihilation in Christ: The secret to obtaining graces is the complete annihilation of self in Christ, dissolving one's human personality so that Jesus alone acts, with the soul merely bringing voices of individuals to Him (9)

Eucharistic Union: Christ's presence in the soul transforms it, but if this blessedness were lost through fault, the soul would suffer; loving when God seems absent is the highest form of love (10)

Forgiveness and Vengeance: The spirit of revenge that ruined humanity and sent Christ to the cross came from Lucifer; forgiveness requires moral effort against human nature's tendency toward vengeance (10)

Grace and Spirit: Grace gives life to the spirit; God infused the life of spirit into Adam, making him in God's image, but the seed of perfection was corrupted by the defeated one's revenge (10-11)

Human Nature vs. Spirit: As Maria Valtorta, she is very human in terms of oversensitiveness, pride, and passions; to live as "Maria of the Cross" requires burning oneself to be reborn from human ashes (9)

Spirit vs. Flesh: The spirit duels in humanity against the poisons of hellish bite; in some the spirit wins out, in others it lives with difficulty, and in some it is killed by the creature who forfeits being a child of God (11)

Two-Thirds of Humanity: Over two-thirds of the human race belongs to the category that lives under the sign of the Beast, for whom Christ died in vain (11)

6. **Explanation Of The Different Effects Of The Euucharist.....14**

Categories of Communicants: Four groups approach the Eucharist—the perfect who seek fusion with Christ, those who come out of need, those who approach out of habit, and the Pharisees who eat their own condemnation (14-15)

Eucharistic Fusion: The perfect who seek Christ only for the joy of union become fused with Him like metals in a crucible, taking on His imprint, properties, and beauty (14)

Heart as Tabernacle: Cathedrals are not necessary to contain Christ; a heart consecrated by love is enough, and the most beautiful cathedral is the soul inhabited by God (14-15)

Lack of Charity Condemned: Jesus does not forgive lack of charity, hypocrisy, and pride; He flees from hearts where these reside as quickly as possible (15)

Miracles for Loving Souls: Jesus is ready to work prodigious miracles to unite Himself to souls who come with ardor and trust, giving all the love they are capable of (14)

World as Altar: If men truly fed on Christ with all their faculties, hatreds would collapse, wars would cease, and the earth would become an altar ready for Christ's second coming (16)

7. **The Stigmatization Of Faithful Souls, The Need To Pray That There May Be Sufficient True Priests 16**

Abomination of Desolation: The time when there would be no more truly priestly priests would bring the "abomination of desolation" with such terrible violence that it would be hell brought onto earth (19-20)

Faithfulness in Suffering: Great generosity, charity, and faithfulness are needed to follow Jesus into the torture chamber; those who cleave to His wounds receive rays of special light (16-17)

John's Courage: John, the loving and pure one, followed Jesus into the torture chamber while others fled; his love defied everything and everyone (16-17)

Priests as Salt: Much salt has become insipid, and souls suffer losing the savor of Christ and His doctrine; the number of true tireless workers is not sufficient (18-20)

Stigmatization of Souls: Stigmatization is not always bloody; every soul in love with Jesus to the point of following Him into torture bears His stigmata in heart and mind (17)

True Priests: The more true priests there are when times are fulfilled, the shorter and less cruel the time of the Antichrist and final convulsions will be (20)

8. **The Battle Between Angels And Demons, Eucharistic Union With Christ As Seen In Mary 20**

Angels and Demons Battle: Behind human ranks, angels and demons battle; this is a struggle between Heaven and hell, with Satan's kingdom not divided and thus enduring (20-21)

Earth as Deceptive Screen: Men are nothing but a deceitful screen; behind human pretexs lies the true reason: Satan's battle against Christ (21)

Eucharistic Union with Mary: Mary lived Eucharistically nearly all her life; her union with Christ must be the model for human union with Him, never separating since the Annunciation (22-23)

Satan's Imitation of God: Lucifer imitates God in his manifestations, giving each nation its demon just as God gives each nation its protecting angel (20-21)

Selection of Humanity: This is one of the first selections of humanity approaching its final hour, to separate the harvest of the elect from the harvest of the reprobate (21)

Single Order to Demons: Lucifer gives a single order to all demons: "Sow horror, despair, and errors so that peoples will separate themselves from God, cursing Him" (21)

9. Maria's "Little Horeb," The Blessed Death Of The Innocent.....23

Blessed Death of Innocents: Those who fall innocently in the time of wrath, whose death becomes without rancor, are as beautiful as martyrs and eternally blessed as victims (23-24)

Corpus Christi in Wartime: On the feast of Corpus Christi, Jesus does not pass triumphantly on carpets of flowers but falls among ruins amid hellish din of unleashed hatred against Charity (23)

Hosts Slain: Jesus' slain children become the flowers of Corpus Christi in the time of wrath; His whiteness as Host remains while the blood of others splashes Him (23)

Mark of Christ: On Jesus' dearest children, the true children, His sign remains, shining on the heads of victims who fall with Him under Satan's weapons (24)

Satan Strikes Churches: On the feast of Christ's divine Body, Satan strikes Jesus in His churches and in His sons and daughters (23)

Victims as Forerunners: Those who fall with Christ under Satan's weapons are the forerunners of the second coming of Christ (24)

10. The Persistence Of Temptation, A Comparison Of The Trinity To Light24

Comparison of Trinity to Light: The Trinity is like light—the Father as vast majestic light, the Son as more vibrant light giving life to souls, the Holy Spirit as inflamed concentrated light (26-27)

God's Possession of Souls: As souls possessed by Satan are called possessed, those embraced and mastered by God can be called "possessed by God"—a beatific, sublime, joyful possession (28-29)

Jesus' Blood as Knowledge: Jesus' Blood is Knowledge and His Predilection is a School; if His Blood were more loved and invoked, much evil leading to the abyss would be dispelled (25-26)

Perseverance of Just Men: If ten just and generous souls gather in prayer for mercy for a place, Jesus will not reject their prayer, provided they are constant in faith, sacrifice, and purity (27-28)

Spiritual Infirmities: Two types of infirmities exist—those from God bringing light and love, and those from Satan enveloping people in darkness and torment (28)

Temptation's Purpose: The more a soul advances on God's Way, the more violent temptation becomes; Satan unleashes his intelligence where more effort is needed to snatch a soul from Heaven (24-25)

11. The Two Kinds Of Spiritual Infirmities And “Possession” By God 28

Christ's Example of Temptation: Christ experienced temptation beyond the desert, including exhaustion from wandering and the spiritual agony of Gethsemane; He is present wherever anyone suffers for Good (28-29)

Merit Through Struggle: Merit requires struggle; if there were no temptation, there would be no merit; souls must not lose heart when tempted, as being tempted is not evil—yielding is evil (28)

Perseverance of Just Men: If ten just and generous souls gather in prayer for mercy for a place, Jesus will not reject their prayer, provided they are constant in faith, sacrifice, and purity (27-28)

Satan's Cunning: Satan uses little temptations when souls are wary of big ones; these subtle temptations can enter anywhere and cause falls without one realizing (28)

Temptation Increases with Holiness: The more a creature advances on God's Way, the more violent temptation becomes; Satan unfolds his intelligence where more effort is needed to snatch a soul from Heaven (28)

12. The Choice Peter Had As Head, A Vision Of The Beast 30

Beast's Ugliness: The Beast's repellent ugliness should spur souls toward greater diligence and penance; he seeks shadow to act and hates the Light (31-32)

John as Poetry, Peter as Practice: John was the comfort—poetic genius, peace, freshness; Peter was the support—practical genius, mature, impulsive, needed to form the Church (30-31)

Peter's Selection: Jesus chose Peter as head of Church not because he loved most, but due to his age, authority, experience, and ability to impose himself in hard times (30-31)

Satan's Imitation of God: The eternal envious one seeks to copy God in all manifestations; Satan has his faithful archangels as imitators of Michael and Gabriel (31)

Souls Lost Through Lack of Reflection: Man does not reflect on the subjection he enters by wedding sin; he exchanges God's fatherhood for momentary pleasure like Esau (31)

13. The Increase Of Sin And Pride And Jesus’ Saving Efforts.....32

- Christ's Coming as New Weight of Sin:** Christ's coming, intended to save, became a new weight of sins that humanity must answer for; He gave Word, Love, and Blood, yet men closed ears and souls (33-34)
- Culmination of Malice and Pride:** The world has reached the culmination of malice and pride; the descending parabola toward the end will be a plunge, not a long decline (32)
- God's Law Unchanged:** Since light began, what is Good and Evil has been established by God's Mind; human strength cannot corrode this eternal code (32-33)
- Idolatry of Self:** The worst idolatry is self-idolatry; men have created gods of corrupt flesh and before them sing hosannas while unable to bend before God (34)
- Punishment as Self-Inflicted:** Present punishment is not undeserved but just and less harsh than deserved; God lets men punish themselves for their madness and commerce with the Beast (35)
- Soul's Value:** The price and value of a soul is such that earthly treasures cannot buy it; the Blood of God alone suffices (35)

14. Priests As “Stars” In Christ’s Firmament, Final Persecutions Of The Church By The Beast35

- Church Will Suffer Passion:** The Church must suffer what her Creator suffered before dying to rise again eternally; she will experience hours of darkness and horror similar to Christ's Passion, multiplied over time (36)
- Final Persecutions:** Like olives between wheels, the children of Christ will be persecuted, squashed, and crunched by the Beast in the final persecution, but not swallowed (36)
- Priests as Stars:** Priests are the "stars" spoken of—lights reflecting Christ's Light for multitudes; Satan seeks to extinguish these luminaries by shaking them (35-36)
- Satan's Strategy:** Satan studies how to extinguish priestly luminaries by shaking them; if many stars fade, the darkness crushing multitudes will be obvious (35-36)
- Selection Through Persecution:** A painful but just selection occurs when spiritual lights are extinguished; the Church will subsist and resist through her best children (36)
- Short Reign of Antichrist:** When many spiritual lights are extinguished, the short-lived but tremendous reign of the Antichrist will be established, generated by Satan (36)

15. Merciful Intercession To Save Others37

Consistency and Honesty Required: It is inconsistency, dishonesty, and cowardice to be pitiless toward the defeated—whatever their defeat may be, whether just punishment or undeserved circumstances (38-39)

Forgiveness from the Heart: From a heart that possesses Christ and His Word, nothing should emerge but words of peace and forgiveness; this requires moral effort against human nature (38)

Judgment Left to God: Leave judgment, punishment, and reward to God; seek only to merit His reward and be consistent and honest (38)

Pity for Deviant Sons: Those who have sold their conscience for thirty pieces of silver cause both disgust and pity, for Christ is the God of mercy and feels pity for His deviant sons (37-38)

Prayer for the Great: Those least to blame for the present hour are guilty for not praying day and night for the great; the great need the prayer of the small to remain great in Goodness (38)

Worship of Man: Many have worshipped a man and followed him against the Law, committing the sin of idolatry (38)

16. To Forgive Much So As To Be Forgiven Much39

Forgiveness Multiplied: Whoever loves and forgives much will be forgiven much; if forgiveness is absolute, all may be forgiven (39)

Hatred as Ruin: Hatred is humanity's ruin, yet men make it their doctrine, no longer familiar with the sweet herbs of forgiveness (39)

Heaven's Rejoicing: There will be threefold, tenfold rejoicing in heaven over one child who forgives as Christ forgave; such forgiveness brings God's blessing upon the earth (40)

Jesus as Father's Voice: Jesus is the Father's Voice moved by Love, flowing like a river over the world to seek souls one by one, using all arts of love to attract them (39)

Need for Forgiveness: All need to be forgiven seventy times seven; God stands with forgiveness in His divine hands, waiting for souls to deserve it through their mercy (39)

Tireless Shepherd: Like a tireless shepherd, Jesus runs after His little sheep, calling them with a loving voice, forgetting every labor in the joy of having them around Him (39)

17. Prayer And Suffering To Avert The “Ultimate Sin”.... 40

Childlike Souls Needed: In a world corrupted by the Beast, it is hard to find childlike souls with simplicity, trust, and innocence; both confidants and the confident are needed for the joy of Christ's Heart (40)

Great Evil Prevented: A great evil has been prevented through prayers, offerings, and suffering; now more than ever it is necessary to pray and suffer so the overcome evil does not sprout into a thousand small evils (41)

Leaders' Sins and Mass's Responsibility: Leaders commit sins, but it is the mass which, by its lesser sins, brings the leaders to the great Sin (41-42)

Prayer and Suffering to Avert Ultimate Sin: Jesus inspired in the best souls many desires to pray and suffer to impede the commission of the ultimate sin; great effort was needed to overcome the danger (40-41)

Self-Idolatry Warning: If the single great self-idolatry is succeeded by many small forms of self-idolatry adorned with Satanic signs of lust, haughtiness, deceit, woe to the people (41)

Ultimate Sin Explained: The "ultimate sin" was something other than what was thought; there is still need for great effort to bring the matter to a close without worse degeneration (41)

18. Commentary On Isaiah: Deceitful Use Of Power42

Alliances Without God: Woe to those who form alliances from which only evil can come to God's people, using power badly provided their persons triumph (44-45)

Deceitful Use of Power: Those who rule under the sign of the Beast pass like a torrent of pain in the land of the saints, dragging the lesser wicked into evil (43-44)

Heart of Man: The heart of man, which the prophet calls wicked, is a mixture of pride, overbearing, and rebelliousness; the threefold lust is the throne where Evil sits (43)

Isaiah's Prophecy Applied: The words of Isaiah apply to the present hour; those who make alliances with death and pacts with hell will be swept away by the scourge (42-43)

Rome as Second Jerusalem: Rome is the second earthly Jerusalem, a beloved land where Christ wanted His Church; it should be treated like a shining relic by its leaders (44)

Satan's Betrayal: Satan acts as lord of the lie, ensnaring men and turning lies against them to make them perish; he cannot give lasting fruits (44)

19. Commentary On Isaiah: The Church As The Earthly Jerusalem45

Church as Earthly Jerusalem: The Church is the earthly Jerusalem, the antechamber of the heavenly Jerusalem; no human force can devastate her, for she is cemented by the Blood of God and His saints (47-48)

Demons in Hearts: Demons are already in the place where God will punish; legions of devils move whole nations like puppets where hearts have become the dwelling of Lucifer's children (48-49)

God as Master: The prime cause of evil is to be without God; the world is dying because it no longer has God as Master (45-46)

Love as Sacrifice: The most fitting word on Christ's death is not scourges, tortures, or cross—it is love; love sacrificed the Son of God, and may it be love that sacrifices the new redeemers (49)

Sword of Justice: A people shall be struck by the sword of Justice; many more will be struck, for the world has fornicated with the devil in many parts (48-49)

Wisdom of the Wise Shall Perish: God will excite admiration with a stupendous prodigy so that the wisdom of the wise shall perish; those who wandered in spirit shall learn knowledge (45-46)

20. Faith And The Incredulity Of Rationalism..... 49

Antichrist's Reign: The bestial sovereignty of the son of the Enemy will be so cruel that every minute will seem a day; his name could be "Negation," for he will deny God, deny Life, deny all (52)

Faith Brings Salvation: Whoever believes, really believes, is saved; Faith brings with it the other virtues and causes them and the Law to be practiced (50)

Jesus Never Weary: Jesus never grows weary of being with His poor sons and daughters; He awaits them in churches, enclosed in little bread to be visible to material heaviness (49-50)

Rationalism Condemned: Rationalism deflowers, desecrates, and kills Faith; it has been the seed from which many other poisonous doctrines have come, opening doors to Satan (51)

Signs Refused: If men do not heed the voice of conscience inspired by Christ, if they smother sensibility under incredulity, they will not believe even if someone rises from the dead (50)

Virginity of Spirit: Holy virginity of the spirit preserves the snow-whiteness of Baptism, the ardor of Confirmation, the nourishment of Communion; few are able to preserve it (51)

21. Commentary On Revelation: The Spiritually Alive And The Spiritually Dead 53

Angels' Song: The angelic choirs will sing the praises of Christ and His servants, whose virtues making them His sons and daughters will be proclaimed by Him over against the foolish, blind world (53-54)

Christ's Look as Thunderbolt: For those who are not Christ's servants, especially those who have led the earth and the weak to perdition, Christ's glance will be a thunderbolt plummeting into the abyss (54)

Final Judgment: The Judge will ignite a sun seven times brighter than the ordinary sun, and the heavens will shine by it at the time of judgment (53)

Servants Proclaimed: Christ's servants, whose virtues make them His sons and daughters, will be proclaimed by Him in that hour (53-54)

Woe to Administrators of Evil: It is inevitable that Evil should exist, but eternally cursed are those who become servants and administrators of Evil (54)

22. The Final State Of The Wicked..... 54

Mary's Sinlessness: One single creature did not savor even the bitter smell of sin—Mary, who did not cause Jesus to miss the Paradise He left to be-

come flesh; in Mary the Father found eternal whiteness and shining love (54)

Remorse of the Wicked: The wicked one will keep watch over his Crime, with the keen memory of so many homicides of souls committed by him; remorse will scourge him much more atrociously than infernal scourges (55)

Souls Given to Love: Souls given to Love mean Christ's Paradise on earth; they bring a little slice of heaven into this poor world, where the Son of God sets His feet to find His delights (56)

Three Dwellings of Souls: Souls, when separated from bodies, have three dwellings until Judgment: the blessed rejoice in eternal rest, the suffering accomplish expiation, the damned toss in anger over good lost (55)

Wicked One's Perfection in Evil: The wicked one takes sin to demoniacal perfection; in Evil, the Devil can reach perfection, and his most loyal disciples are not less than their master (54-55)

23. Charity And Effective Prayer56

Formative Value of Writings: The part of the writings that is Christ's, separated from the human part, has formative value; the voice of the Gospel is found therein and always has value for spiritual formation (56)

Peace vs. Truce: The truce will come for arms because it must come, but it will be only a truce; peace means external and internal concord, sought and willed by spiritual sight and affection (56-57)

Prayer's Power Limited: Even among the few who pray, only a few satisfy the requisites which make prayer powerful; holy, true peace is not desired by all (57)

Selfishness Hinders Prayer: War means ruin for many but gain for many; when faced with his own gain, man neglects collective gain, living locked into selfishness (56)

Ten Just Men Theme: There are so few just men as opposed to the mass of the unjust; Satan has an immense number of children and servants, while the Son of God has an insignificant number of true servants (57)

Writings' Use: Writings should be used with the human part having informative value for curiosity, while Christ's part has formative value for spiritual formation (56)

24. Christ As The Firstborn And His Spiritual Kingdom, The Spiritual Course Of Mankind After The Fall. The Progressive Spiritualization Of All True Christians. Christ's "New Evangelization"57

Christ as Firstborn: Jesus is the Firstborn from among the dead in both human and divine orders—firstborn of Adam born alive, and firstborn Son of the Father, opening the way for resurrection (57-58)

- Mankind's Spiritual Evolution:** Man set out from deep darkness after the Fall; over centuries, those wanting to remain flesh sank lower, while those wanting to live in spirit became increasingly spiritual (60-61)
- New Evangelization:** When the time comes, Christ will address the portion of humanity that has reached spiritual maturity with a new evangelization, not different in meaning but in power (61-62)
- Spiritual Kingdom:** Christ's kingdom is not of this earth in the sense of earthly reign, but it is a Kingdom of the earth—a visible, real Kingdom will come when He is sole and true King (59)
- Time of the Spirit:** The time of the spirit must come; man must reach spirituality as he proceeds toward the final hour, with each portion following the part chosen—God's part or Satan's part (60-61)
- Two Resurrections:** Christ will speak later about the two resurrections, which are viewed in human terms when they should be viewed with spiritual sight (58)

25. They Shall Look Upon The One They Have Pierced ...62

- Accursed Who Pierced Christ:** Among the accursed will be those who with sacrilegious spirit have sought, worshipped, and prostituted themselves with the Beast, piercing the divine spirit of the Son of God over centuries (63-64)
- Christ as Bearer of Life and Death:** The bearer of Life, the eternal Living One, will open the gates to true Death and enclose both bodies and souls of those who have pierced Him (63-64)
- Judgment Entrusted to Son:** All judgment is entrusted to the Son; He will pronounce judgment on all sins committed against the Father and the Spirit (63)
- Those Who Pierced Me:** When Christ comes, "even those who pierced Me" refers not to those who pierced Him twenty centuries ago, but to those who over centuries have pierced His divine spirit (63)
- Time of Triumph:** When Christ comes, it will be the time of the triumph of His Kingdom and the testimony of the spirit (63)

26. The Victors Over The Beast 64

- Faith as Intrinsic Life:** Faith must not be something resting upon a person at certain hours like a veil, but must be an intrinsic part, inseparable and vital, like food becoming blood and flesh (64)
- Hidden Manna as Word:** The hidden manna is Christ's Word, bringing together all the sweetness of love of the Trinity, spoken in the secrecy of the heart to those deserving to savor it (66)
- Pearls Not for Swine:** Christ does not give pearls to swine and holy things to dogs; many who have been washed in Baptism and redeemed by His Blood are lower than swine (66)
- Victors Defined:** Victors are not those with resounding heroic works, but those who in themselves gain victory over the Beast, through secret, obscure, continuous struggle (64)

Word as Food: Christ gives the victor the fruit of the tree of Life beginning on earth through His spiritual doctrine, and in the other life through His eternal presence (65)

27. The Hidden Manna Of The Word66

Empty Space Created by Sin: An empty space has been created in the mystical forest by human sins; in that space the eternal Serpent has installed himself as master, poisoning with his breath (67)

My Law the Only Salvation: No human force will check the world's race toward the abyss because the one thing that saves—Christ's Law—is lacking to the world and its forces (67)

Satan as Master: Men have cast aside Christ's gift and called Satan to be their master and king; Satan instructs and rules them, salting and lashing them to make them worthy of his hell (67)

World Perishing Without Word: The world is perishing because it has not kept Christ's Word, neglected and derided it (67)

28. The Seven Seals. Commentary On The Antichrist And Judgment67

Antichrist as Falling Star: The Antichrist will be a very lofty person, a star from a supernatural sphere who, yielding to flattery of the Enemy, will experience pride after humility, atheism after faith (69)

Earth as Great Babylon: The "great Babylon" is the whole Earth, the great harlot that has committed fornication with all powers of earth and hell (77-78)

Mankind Splitting: Mankind is splitting increasingly—the spiritual portion ascending, the carnal portion descending to frightful depth of vice (76)

Seven Seals Opened: The seven seals have been opened; war, famine, pestilences, earthquakes, signs in the sky indicate the time of Christ's Wrath and Judgment may seem near (67-68)

Two Witnesses: In the two witnesses are concealed all masters in faith—pontiffs, bishops, the inspired, doctors of the Church, souls pervaded by Light and Voice (71)

Warning Signs Not Yet the Hour: The present horror is great, but it must increase much more to become the Horror of the last times; these are warning signs, not yet the hour (68)

29. The Two Witnesses, The Satanic War Behind Human War71

Blessed Are the Faithful: Blessed are those who have rebuffed Satan and his enticements, not worrying about his apparent triumphs, remaining faithful to Christ and His Church (72)

Satan's Aim: Satan aims to make a second ascent to Heaven but, rebuffed, plunges to earth to defeat God through the hearts of His children (72)

- Satan's Black Angels:** Satan has sent his black angels to mobilize the kingdoms of the earth against each other; the supernatural Battle has already begun behind human battle scenes (72)
- Selection by Self:** It is not Christ who makes the selection for now; men select themselves spontaneously—those who grasp God remains God rise to meet Light, others plummet toward Darkness (72)
- True Cause of War:** The true cause making brothers into murderous beasts is not human causes but another—Satan pulls the strings of slaughter in which more souls than bodies die (72)

30. The Demons Aping God's Angles, The True Knowledge Of Christianity, The Seven Last Plagues, The Earth As Babylon Among Numerous Worlds 73

- First and Second Resurrections:** The first resurrection begins when the soul separates from the body and appears before Christ in individual judgment; the final resurrection will cause flesh to take on again the weight of the spirit (81)
- Knowledge as Idolatry:** Rationalism, Humanism, Philosophism, and other doctrines have led many to perdition through mental pride causing scorn of Faith; only one science is necessary—to know God and serve Him (74)
- Satan's Two Beasts:** The first beast corresponds to Michael, using force to persuade man to cancel Christ's sign; the second beast corresponds to Gabriel, persuading with lying sweetness (73-74)
- Seven Last Plagues:** The seven last plagues correspond to the seven peels of thunder; the first is the ulcer—disgusting diseases for unforgivable sins against God (75-76)
- True Knowledge:** One science alone is necessary—to know God and serve Him, to know Him in things, to see Him in events, and distinguish Him from His adversary (74)
- Two Resurrections:** Those who have killed their spirit come to judgment with spirit already dead; those who have overcome the flesh come with alive spirit that enters Paradise (81)

31. Clarification Of The Apocalypse..... 82

- Dictations Not Contradictory:** The dictations do not contradict each other; one must read them with faith and simplicity of heart, as periods are reflected in future times under increasingly grandiose aspects (82)
- Forerunners of Antichrist:** The present period is that of the forerunners of the Antichrist; then the period of the Antichrist himself will come, helped by the two beasts named in the Apocalypse (82)
- Peace Period After Antichrist:** Once the Antichrist is defeated, a period of peace will come to give men time to gather under Christ's sign before the final coming of Satan (82)
- Three Manifestations of Evil:** The anti-Christian epoch will rise to maximum power in its third manifestation—the last coming of Satan (82)

32. The Difference Between God’s Word And Human Words84

- God's Simplicity:** God is simple; the closer one comes to God, the simpler one becomes, feeling increasingly the tedium and vanity of human science (83-84)
- Jesus as Wisdom of God:** Jesus is infinitely superior to the wisest of men; He instructs His people, having favorite disciples for whom the Master becomes a friend (83)
- Love as Guide:** For those close to God, love must be the guide, not fear; actions moved by love will never be completely wicked, covered by the banner of love which cancels sins (84)
- Mission of Little Christs:** The mission of being a little Christ in place of Jesus; victims are called to take the Redeemer's place and give their bodies as hosts of propitiation (83)
- Vanity of Human Science:** Human science, including that aimed at God but written by man, becomes harsh and bitter compared to the sweet, supernatural tone of God's word (83-84)
- Word Entrusted to Faithful:** Jesus entrusts His Word to His faithful, to be transmitted with sacred respect, for it gives eternal Life (83)

33. The Blood Shed Over All The Earth82

- Blood Shed Everywhere:** Jesus shed His Blood everywhere to sanctify everything and everyone—at Gethsemane for countryside, in Temple for future Church, in Herod's palace for kings, in Praetorium for authority (85-86)
- Feast of the Holy Cross:** The feast would better be called the "Feast of the Sacrifice" or "of the Blood," for on the Cross Jesus finished shedding His Blood to the last drop (84-85)
- Last Blood Gathered by Mary:** The final drops of Christ's Blood were not lost; Mary gathered them in her virginal veil, making them the divine purple on virginal whiteness that will be the banner of Christ the Judge (86-87)
- Mary's Suffering:** From Christ's birth to death, Mary suffered not being able to give her Child first and last comforts; out of her veil she made clothing for her newborn and a shroud for the slain Son (86-87)
- Military Sanctification:** Jesus reddened the soldiers with His blood to infuse a sense of humanity in militias during wars; soldiers will be punished for ferocity and abuses not necessary to combat (86)
- Streets Sanctified:** Christ's Blood bathed the streets of the City to sanctify them where so many people pass and so much evil is done (86)

34. Commentary On Joel: Spiritual And Physical Gifts In The Last Times.....87

- Final Selection:** The great and terrible day of the Lord will be the final selection of those living on the earth, taking place during the last raging of Satan (88)

- Gifts of God:** After the wars of the Antichrist, God will fill humanity with His gifts—no hunger, massacres, calamities; bodies and souls fed by His hand (87)
- Joel's Prophecy Applied:** Joel's words about well-being are the advance announcement of what John later describes in the Apocalypse—a period of true peace after Satan's wars (87)
- Kingdom of the Spirit:** The Kingdom of the Spirit must begin in hearts; from there Christ's Kingdom on earth begins, a great but still limited Kingdom (87-88)
- Men's Ingratitude:** Nearly all men are deaf to spiritual voices; instead of recognizing God's goodness, they take advantage of well-being to sink lower into the abyss (88)
- Remnant of the Lord:** The faithful who remain for the Lord after Satan's plunder are the "remainder" Joel speaks of, thrice blessed eternally (89)

35. The Examples Of Three Gentiles. 89

- Examples of Gentiles' Faith:** The centurion, the Cananean woman, and Pilate's wife—three Gentiles outside the Law who had more faith in Christ than His countrymen (90)
- Hatred Purification:** Time is needed for the soul to be purified of anti-Christian poison after hate rushes in with hellish wind; cloudiness remains until waves are totally calm (89-90)
- Jesus' Teaching on Charity:** The Gospel provides a teaching of lofty charity through three episodes demonstrating that in all races there are good, unknown children of God (90)
- Judge Not:** Do not judge or disdain; love all, for there is a single Father Creator, and all are brothers and sisters formed from the same dust and animated by the same breath (90)
- Superhuman Calling:** Humanity is a transitory phase, whereas the superhuman is eternal; from creation, souls are in light or darkness according to earthly action, but for eternity (89-90)

36. "Into Your Hands I Commend My Spirit" 91

- Children of Sin:** Children of sin, when they emerge from childhood, suffer from their condition; human charity gives them bread and roof but often less than given to stray animals (91-92)
- Commendation of Spirit:** Jesus' final thought on the Cross turned to His spirit, commending it into the Father's hands to teach that one single thing is valuable: the spirit (92-93)
- Father, Into Your Hands:** This sentence teaches the value of the spirit; all possessions on earth die with flesh, but the spirit remains and presents itself to the Judge (93)
- Mercy on Spirits:** Have mercy on what does not die like flesh—the spirit, which can die only by losing the Light of God here below and the vision of God in heaven (93)

- Motherless Children:** Many motherless children exist—some whose mothers do not love them, some whose mothers have rejected them; Jesus knows their tears and acts of rebellion (91-92)
- Second Death:** Woe to dead spirits that will infuse death into the flesh they inhabited; the "second death" knows no resurrection (93)

37. Purgatory. Observing The Lord’s Day. The “Holy Episcopate” Of Parents94

- Love as Central to Law:** The entire Law hinges on love—love for God in the first commandment, love for neighbor in the others; Purgatory is suffering of love for love not given on earth (94)
- Purgatory as Love's Suffering:** Souls in Purgatory suffer only because of love and expiate with love; they long for God, weep over His absence, and become capable of being penetrated by Charity (101)
- Parents' Dignity:** Parents are second creators of human beings on earth, with sublime dignity only slightly inferior to God when they make their child a new little Christ (98)
- Sin Against Love:** All violations of the Decalogue violate love; sin must be expiated with love in Purgatory, where souls burn with charity for being lukewarm on earth (101)
- Souls in Purgatory:** The souls being purged suffer only because of love and expiate with love; when the merits of Christ are cast into Purgatory, incandescence of love penetrates more powerfully (101)
- True Worship:** One alone is God; remove deceitful gods from minds and hearts, beginning with the god of mire that one becomes when not living in God (94-95)

38. Obadiah And Italy102

- Betrayal of God:** All have betrayed—betrayed God the Father, betrayed His Word of Life, betrayed consciences; they are so many Judases who have sold those near and distant for money and deceitful promises (104)
- Italy's Pride and Fall:** The pride of heart came to pervert Italy's rulers; it was fatal for them to have won, as the gift fermented with evil producing destruction of grace, God's benevolence, and its fruit (103)
- Obadiah's Prophecy for Italy:** Obadiah's words are the page of Italy in this last century; from Piedmont, where the Holy Shroud witnesses to God's Passion, the error began that blossomed into painful flower (102-103)
- Punishment for Idolatry:** Italy exalted over the ruin of others, worshipped a golden calf, served precursors of the Beast; the Beast gives fruits of his kingdom—death, ruin, indigence, famine, shame, servitude (104)
- Voice of God Unheard:** The Voice of God cries out in consciences and thunders in the skies, but even those who ought to perceive it no longer hear it; they have consecrated clothing but desecrated hearts (104)
- Witness of Holy Shroud:** In Piedmont there is a witness to God not inferior to the Mosaic Tabernacle—the story of Christ's Passion written with the ink of divine Blood on the linen (102-103)

39. Admonition For Priests And Leaders..... 105

- Praises of Men Vain:** Praises of men are the vainest thing, vanishing into nothing like air bubbles from slimy depths; they arise from human sentiment, drag miasmas, and break the mirror of inner peace (105-106)
- Responsibility of Shepherds:** Woe to shepherds who feed themselves—priests and heads of nations have tremendous responsibility; they deform their mission, feeding themselves instead of giving food (106-107)
- Shepherd Imagery:** The good shepherd gives his life for his sheep; priests pay attention to preserving their own, and sheep have dispersed as prey of the fierce (107)
- True Glory:** True Glory is obtained by overturning the world's values—moderation, continence, sincerity, honesty, humility, love, patience, meekness, mercy, forgiveness (107)
- Woe to Power Abusers:** Woe to those who dominate with fierce absolutism; God will create solitude around them, and those living amid ruins are ruined (105)

40. Events In The Last Times 108

- Famine as Sign:** Famine produced by plundering and accursed wars, by arresting of cosmic laws, will cruelly torment this arrogant race hostile to God (109)
- Michael as Heavenly Sign:** The archangel who overcame Lucifer will rise up as a heavenly sign in the last time, when Israel is rejoined to Christ's Rome (108)
- Mortality as Selection:** Mortality from wars, pestilences, earthquakes will hurl into the next life the good and the wicked—the former for punishment (deprived of best), the latter for their punishment (hell before time) (109-110)
- Punishment's Purpose:** Punishments are created to punish and call men back to God with their painful power, effecting selection between children of God and of Satan (109)
- Voice of God Agonized:** The voice of God, agonized and agonizing, thunders over the world and announces His wrath, still calling men for He suffers over punishing them (111)
- Zephaniah's Prophecy:** When God has Zephaniah say He will carry off everything from the earth, He prophesies what will happen before the last time, later announced in the Apocalypse (108-109)

41. Judgment Of Those Exercising Power..... 113

- Earthly Power's Illusion:** Earthly power is fleeting and precarious; those who rule must remember that their authority comes from God and lasts only as long as He permits (113-114)
- Justice Required of Leaders:** Strength without justice is not an attribute of holiness; the powerful must be more powerful in justice than in strength, for true greatness comes from God (113)

Light from God: Those who govern need light, which comes only from God; they must seek the Lord as their counselor rather than foolish, self-interested advisors (114)

Seeking God with Sincere Heart: Seeking God with lying intentions is accursed; God does not confirm the works of the wicked with His help, and their ephemeral triumphs come from Satan (114)

Solemn Judgment Awaiting: Those who kill bodies and souls, especially those who lead souls to doubt God, will be judged with a most severe judgment (115)

42. The Two Kinds Of Death115

Alive in the Lord: To be alive in the Lord is the greatest thing in beauty, joy, duration, and splendor; those who lived in the Lord do not die (116-117)

Death's Two Kinds: There is little death (freed from flesh) and great death (killing the immortal spirit); one rises from the former but never from the latter (115)

God Did Not Create Death: God did not create death; it was generated by humanity's marriage to Satan through Adam's sin (115-116)

Immortality Through Righteousness: Nothing shall be without judgment; those who lived in the Lord turn privations, afflictions, and early death into joy, seeing the Father's hand in all things (117)

Seeking Death Foolishly: Men often cause their own first and second death through intemperance, abuses, imprudence, foolish habits, pleasures, and vices (115)

43. Forms Of Contemporary Idolatry.....117

Corruption of Modern Society: Men are corrupt in thought, tastes, works, and senses—corrupt even in the spirit, which has become a nest of vermin swarming with filthy thoughts and deeds (119)

Idolatry of Thought: More idolatrous than those adoring stars are those who worship their own thought or the thought of others, amputating their noblest part (117)

Marriage and Purity: Many come to the altar with stained souls, lying to God and their companion, stealing rights from children yet unborn, committing theft and adultery (118-119)

Science's Limitations: Despite all progress, man cannot increase a single blade of grass, generate new life departing from God's laws, or halt death when God calls (117-118)

Universal Corruption: Men are unfaithful to God, country, family, spouse, children, relatives, friends—Judases selling everything for glitter of money and smile of a female serpent (119-120)

Worship of False Gods: Men love a child, husband, or relative more than God; they venerate as a god some unfortunate man who proclaims himself divine, bending conscience to please him (118)

44. The Chance To Return To Christ 121

Adoration of the Cross: Let many acts of adoration be offered to the Cross, which is the throne of power of Jesus the Savior; as the serpent raised on the cross healed Jews, so Christ raised up will set to flight what torments (122)

Eucharist as Transformation: In those who receive Him, the Bread is transformed into Life, Grace, Salvation, Light, Joy, and Wisdom; one becomes all when united with the Son of God (122)

Judas Comparison: Those who call themselves Christians while performing anti-Christian works are like Judas, consuming the Eucharist while going to take money of barter (121)

Mercy for the Weak: Christ has mercy on those who fall with a will opposed to falling and who repent; one, two, ten, or a hundred nonmalicious falls do not mortally wound Love (121)

Perfection Conquered by Degrees: Perfection is conquered by degrees, like a plant growing slowly—every day a new little root, every day a new leaf (121-122)

Sign of Christ's Appearance: When men least expect, Christ will give a sign before which they shall plummet in terror; He is that sign, and His appearance will make arms fall like dust (123-124)

45. Peace Only To Men Of Good Will 124

Fornication with Satan: To obtain true peace, it was necessary to remove fornication with Satan from among humanity; instead, men have increasingly made this their way of life (124)

Peace Only to Men of Good Will: Peace has been promised to men of good will; Christ came to bring peace, but if He is sent away and will is not good, there can be no peace—only pauses between slaughters (124-125)

Pauses in War: What men call peace are only intervals between slaughters, giving time for spirits sold to Satan to learn new doctrines of death and destruction (125)

True Peace vs. Truce: True peace is not a pause in war; it requires removing fornication with Satan, which has been preached through saints and Mary for decades without response (124)

46. The Church Of Rome At The End Of Time..... 125

Church of Rome at End Time: The Catholics will turn to the triumphant Cross after fierce struggle; Rome will speak—not the Rome of leaders, but the Rome of Christ that overcame Caesars without weapons (125-126)

Exodus Toward Light: The faithful must begin a new Exodus toward the new Earth, separating from idolaters of Satan without disdain, imitating early Christians living in world but isolated by love for God (126-127)

New Exodus Begun: Christ's beloved ones at the head, overcoming fear, must begin this new Exodus with others drawn by example of saints (126-127)

Spiritual Separation: Separate from idolaters of Satan, world, and flesh without disdain; love them with love of redeemers, placing faith in Christ as bastion (127)

World Will Know Roman Church: The whole world will then know the Roman Church, for the Gospel will resound from poles to equator, and the Word will go as a band of love (125-126)

47. The Final Confrontation127

Christ's Peaceful Kingdom Coming: The time of Christ's peaceful Kingdom will come; the good on earth will all come to Him, and the Earth reconciled with itself and God will be like a great altar (128)

God Cannot Be Accused: No one can accuse God if they are lost; He has given everything—intellect, Grace, Law, Himself as Master, His Blood—yet men have given so little (129)

Punishments as Calls of Love: Punishments are further calls of love to convince men that God exists and that other gods cannot give anything but deceitful promises and certain evil (129)

Satanic Epoch Three Times Fiercer: The Satanic epoch will be three times fiercer than the anti-Christian epoch, but brief because the whole Church will pray (128)

Spiritual Separation: Those living outside the spirit will lie in darkness; those living in the spirit will come into the retinue of the Holy Son of God (128)

Struggle of Spirit Against Spirit: A struggle of spirit against spirit—Christ's spiritual Kingdom and instruction versus Satan's war on spirits to corrupt the weakest (128)

48. Constancy In Communicating The Word.....130

Constancy in Communicating Word: Let everything fall away and retain only God, Light, Grace, God's Love; continue to be a hand which serves the Word even when it seems useless (130-131)

Dead Souls: Poor leaf carried on the wind—that's what a dead soul is; Jesus closes the door with dark lament until the terrible eternal torment (132)

False Voices: Many voices emerge from deceitful founts; the ones men listen to are the laughter of demons who mock man and turn into lying words (131)

Future in Christ's Word: The future is in Christ's Word; to avoid the present nightmare, men would have had to study this Word and guide themselves by its teachings (131)

Leave the Dead: Leave the dead where they are; if blessed, they can tell only what the Word already says; if damned, they can tell only words of their father, the king of falsehood (131)

49. The Forerunners Of Christ's Coming 132

Forerunners of Christ: The precursors of the Son of God have the same crown as their King—their throne and teaching chair are the cross and pain (134-135)

Instruments of Satan: Men make themselves instruments of Satan by performing works of iniquity; the great with great overbearance, the small with overbearance beyond their condition (132-133)

Punishment Proportional: Punishment will be proportional to wrongdoing; the wrath of God and the oppressed rises up against oppressors (133)

Remnant Gathered: For the sake of the just, God will again work the miracle of forgiveness, gathering the remnants of His people to make them understand that only in God is there salvation (134)

Victims of Charity: The world needs heroic souls, victims of charity, to be redeemed; pain saves, sacrifice redeems (135)

Wicked Repaid with Hatred: Those who are honest out of love for God are the greatest victims, for extortioners of the Law repay with hatred whoever gives love and goodness (133)

50. The Voice Of The Father 135

Dignitaries of Christ's Kingdom: The faithful servants will be dignitaries in Christ's royal palace during His Reign of love and peace, serving as luminous ministers (135)

Intellectual Likeness of the Father: Those who overcome will have the intellectual likeness of the Father and the human likeness of Jesus and Mary, possessing the Perfection that made man God's son (135-136)

Kingdom Foretold: The time will come when hosts of the just will plow the Earth to prepare it for the Word, reigning just once on Earth before the world's disappearance (136)

Possession of Earth Promised: The meek will inherit possession of the Earth, which shall become possession of the Heavens when Earth is no more (135)

Victors Over Satan: Victors over Satan, who corrupted the flesh, will possess the Universe together with God and be mirrors of God in their glorified flesh (135)

51. Loss Of Freedom Under Satanic Dominion 137

Loss of Freedom Under Satan: Thought, which God gave to man as free, is oppressed by the supergod of slime and horror; they impose cruel obligations that enslave the whole being—physical, moral, and spiritual (137)

Babylon's Destiny: Babylon, now rising to its apogee in ruling, will be succeeded one day by a holy Jerusalem; act so that the mark of Satan's forms will not be upon you, but the glorious sign of the Son of God (138)

- Forerunners of Satan:** Those whom Jesus calls the forerunners of the Evil One have wanted to emulate their master in proclaiming themselves gods and oppressing the throngs (137)
- Spiritual Enslavement:** The octopuses of the Evil One penetrate even towards spirits and, as they please, will or do not will that the spirit should turn to God or His Law (137)
- Supergods of Slime:** These supergods of slime and horror do not demand obedience to holy laws of love as God lovingly commands, but impose cruel obligations (137)

52. The Father’s Words For Christians138

- Father Celebrates the Son:** The Most Holy Father speaks, celebrating the Son who became incarnate out of Love, removing bitterness from the Father's breast and reuniting children separated from Him (139-141)
- Jesus as Perfect Example:** Jesus is gentle and perfect, the One Awaited by peoples, the Savior of the world; He does not impose, cry out, threaten, or oppress (140)
- Love All Persons of Trinity:** Do not divide the Unity by loving one Person and not the Others; the Son must not make you neglect the Father or the Holy Spirit (139)
- New People of God:** The faithful will be the new people of God, the eternal people over whom Christ shall reign, announcing His praises to the stars and planets (141)
- Spirit Illuminates Saints:** The Holy Spirit acts in the hearts of the saints and gives them lights of supernatural knowledge to see and love Mary in truth (139)
- Unity of God Not to Be Broken:** The Unity is not to be broken; if broken with a deformed love, one can no longer rise back up to Perfection without danger (139-140)

53. Faith Versus Violence142

- Charity as Shield:** Charity, which men do not want, is being poured precisely on those they disdain; those who live only for Charity love others more than themselves, coming to aid in souls and material things (211-212)
- Come Back to God:** Above individual and national interests, there is the higher interest of God which should always take precedence; if that were so, nations would not fall into errors and crimes (143)
- Haggai’s Prophecy:** When man separates from God and the supernatural to focus on himself, he diminishes happiness even in natural things; supernatural joy and peace die first (142)
- Satan’s War Against Spirits:** This is not a war of peoples but of Satan against God—one of the wars preparing for the advent of the Antichrist, whose precursors they now are (211)
- Spiritual Blood Through Victims:** True Life lasts to give time for conversion through the work of victim souls; they transfuse spiritual blood, drained by moral illnesses, which circulates in the Mystical Body (212)

World Moves Toward False Peace: The world moves toward its peace, which is not Christ's peace; His peace is of holiness and justice, while the world's is of tyranny and corruption (211)

54. Christ's Tie To Israel 148

Christ's Love for Israel: As Savior of the peoples, Jesus cannot fail to be the Savior of His people Israel; He died for them too and has the rights of a King and the love of a Creator (148)

Conversion of Israel Promised: The work has already begun; persecutors do not know they are creating the Great Day of the Lord when Christ will gather His immense flock and rebaptize the children of the flock (148-149)

Love Peace: To be able to belong to Christ, men must learn to love peace; if they do, the Earth can persecute them no longer, and supernatural curtains of Heaven shall be over them for protection (149)

Strip Away Displeasing Things: Strip yourselves of what is displeasing to God; tell the truth and serve the Truth, love it as a bride now known (149)

Truth Immortal: Truth is immortal in its divine nature; those who have mocked it and hoped to kill it have killed themselves alone (149)

55. Instructions For Christ's Vicar, The Unity And Veracity Of All Prophecy 150

Feed My Lambs: Never as in this moment must Christ repeat to the one who represents Him, "Feed my lambs"—many have become wild, but it is not entirely their fault (150)

Idol Shepherd: When in Christ's Court, among leading figures in His Church, the light reduced to a bare glimmer, the idol shepherd shall come (152-153)

One Either Believes or Does Not Believe: Christ repeats that one either believes or does not believe; His time is not measured by human measure; those who believe without demanding proofs will be blessed (153)

Prophecy's Apparent Negation: Prophecy may go through periods of repetition or apparent negation which later turn out to be only a trial sent by God for men's faith (153)

Two Rods: Christ has placed two rods in the Vicar's hand—the rod of love, and the other rod to strike when love falls like pebbles against rock (151)

Unity of Prophecy: All ancient and modern prophecies present points where they appear mistaken, for human eyes see differently; the eye of the servant sees with Christ's Eye (153)

56. Periods In The Life Of The Church, Authenticity Of God's Word, Maria As A Fount, Prayers To The Word156

Church's Periods of Obscurantism: The Church has known periods of obscurantism; when her high dignitaries acted according to the Gospel, she experienced radiant times, but woe when they worshipped political power (156-157)

Christ as Fount: Like a fountain, Christ will stand in the midst of His flock entirely reassembled and wash in Himself all base actions of the past which repentance will have begun to cancel out (158)

Christ's Wounds as Rivers: Rivers of light and grace shall emerge from Christ's Wounds—living rubies that shall be a sword for the impenitent and a caress for the little ones who love Him (158)

Idol Shepherds Consequence: When the Church contaminated herself with human passions and worshipped political power, there were times of "idol shepherds" as consequence of errors of all (157)

Spirit Poured Upon Redeemed: Christ will pour His spirit upon all the redeemed of the earth; those suffering will encounter peace, beating their breasts and calling down that Blood already shed (158)

Zechariah's Prophecy Joined to John's: The prophecy of Zechariah is joined to John's; after painful travail, the Church will give birth to saints destined to lead her into the hour preceding the last times (157)

57. Obedience To God.....162

Obedience to God's Command: The true servant of God responds to any pressure: "Can I perhaps say or do anything but what the Lord has commanded me?"—obedience to God's command is the sign of the servant of God (162)

Divine Exigencies Limitless: The divine exigencies are limitless, and all are justified by a loving purpose; to one God imposes keeping silent, to another speaking; to one isolating himself, to another becoming leader of souls (162)

Freedom to Refuse Obedience: God does not compel in such a way that one cannot refuse obedience; but the more souls are "His," the easier and dearer obedience is for them (162-163)

Servants' Faithfulness: Even at the price of danger and suffering, the servants remain faithful to God's command, copying their Master whose obedience was infinite (163)

58. The Father's Lesson On The Name Of His Son Christ's Warning And Words For His Vicar, A Vision Of Jesus And Mary, An Explanation Of The Wounds On Christ's Hands 163

Holy Name of Jesus: In the thrice holy and powerful name of Jesus is the splendor and glory of the Triune God; He is the Holy of Holies in whom is found the living, true, and perfect God (164-165)

Mary's Vision Described: A detailed vision of Mary and Jesus together—Mary's silvery white dress, Jesus' ivory white attire, their physical appearance, and the indescribable love with which they looked at one another (169-171)

Name Above All Names: There is not, was not, and shall not be a greater name than Jesus; the Triune God is in It with supreme manifestation of power and love (166)

Obedience to God's Command: The true servant of God, in face of any pressure, responds, "Can I perhaps say or do anything but what the Lord has commanded me?" (162)

Paul of Tarsus Example: Paul, once persecutor, returned to Light by divine thunderbolt and became tireless Apostle, announcing the unknown God to the Athenians (164)

Wounds of Jesus Described: Jesus describes the wounds in His palms—the left hand more wounded, nail cutting towards thumb, breaking nerves and tendons, causing atrocious agony (171-172)

59. Commentary On Colossians: The Truth Of The Gospel And Falsity Of Human Doctrines 173

Colossians Commentary: There is only one Faith which is true—Christ's; it must be fused with and become part of oneself, not just nominal attire (173)

Faith as Intrinsic Life: Faith must not be something resting upon a person at certain hours like a veil, but must be an intrinsic part, inseparable and vital, like food becoming blood and flesh (173-174)

Great Heresy of Man-God: Today a great heresy is taking place—man's gospel, church, altar, cross, and sacrifice proclaimed, not God's; the son of Satan proclaims a new faith that is a tragic parody of Christ's Faith (174)

One Cross Alone: From the time of Moses until now and until Judgment, there will be one cross—the one like Christ's, which first bore the serpent, then bore Him, and which He will bear when He appears as Judge (174)

One Gospel, One Church: There is one Gospel: Christ's; one Church: Roman Catholic; one Altar: consecrated by oil, water, wine, founded upon bones of martyrs; one Cross: Christ's (174)

Remain in Me: Remain united to Christ; in Him is justice, peace, and love. Do not seek other doctrines; live out the Gospel (175-176)

60. Commentary On Daniel, Chapter 12178

- Abomination of Desolation:** When the Church is no longer free to celebrate the perpetual Sacrifice, the abomination of desolation will be upraised over the Holy Place, just as stated by the prophets (179)
- Daniel's Prophecy:** Daniel says there will be 1290 days of trampling; blessed is he who waits and arrives at 1335—meaning blessed is he who has persevered until the end, for he will be saved (179)
- Final Resurrection:** When the number of the saved will be complete, the resurrection of the flesh will come, and the dead will rise to come to Christ the supreme Judge (178)
- Last Time of Three Years:** The last time of three years and six months will be the most tremendous time ever known by man, when Satan uses his perfect acts of craftiness to harm, ruin, and slay Christ in hearts (178-179)
- Michael's Rising:** The archangel who overcame Lucifer will rise up as a heavenly sign in the last time, when Israel is rejoined to Christ's Rome (178)
- Wise Will Comprehend:** The wise will comprehend Satan's traps through their fidelity to Grace and become snow-white, tested like fire, worthy to be chosen for Heaven (178-179)

61. Commentary On Daniel, Chapter 7179

- Daniel's Four Beasts:** The four beasts described by Daniel are the four errors which will precede the end—Atheism tearing away man's wings as eagle, rejection of Law of God, human power sold to Satan, and Revolution (180-181)
- Four Errors Preceding End:** Atheism, rejection of Charity, human power sold to Satan, and Revolution—these four horrors will give birth to the final Horror, the Antichrist (180)
- Jesus' Growth in Wisdom:** Jesus grew in wisdom, age, and grace before God and men, advancing in the perfection of His human nature while His divine nature remained unchanged (182)
- Man as Demigod Through Grace:** Man was a demigod through Grace and Faith, able to face dangers of sense and soar in atmosphere of God; Atheism tore away his wings (180)
- Perfection of Horror:** The Antichrist will be the perfection of Horror, as Christ was the perfection of Perfection, with numberless weapons symbolized by the ten horns (181-182)
- Satan as Ape of God:** Satan is the ape of God, giving wings to his child—not eagle's wings but vampire's wings, making it a nightmare for humanity to suck their blood (181)

62. The Perfect Priest As A Shepherd And The Idols To Which Priests Are Prey 184

Churches as Beacons: Churches scattered among houses ought to be like beacons and purifiers, emitting gentle, powerful light that penetrates and attracts souls (184-185)

Priests Called to Be Light: Priests are called the "light of the world"; from churches should issue forth light that forces open closed doors of hearts and brings them God (185)

Priests' Idols—Jealousy: The first idol among priests is jealousy; they criticize each other, are jealous of success, wealth, and attention, contrary to charity they should embody (187)

Priests' Idols—Heresies: Many idols take the form of different heresies in priests, incensing preferred idols in darkness, hoping men's eyes will not see (187)

Priests' Idols—Sensuality: Sensuality exists among priests; they should remember that the only female creatures to be remembered licitly with love are Mary and their mothers (187-188)

Shepherd Imagery for Priests: Priests are called shepherds, not solitaires or captains; they must remain in midst of flock, watch over it, precede it at difficulties, carry the weak, defend against wolves (186-187)

63. A Vision Of The Last Judgment..... 188

Final Resurrection Vision: A vision of the final resurrection—skeletons rising from earth and sea, recomposing into bodies, the beautiful giving off light, the ugly shrouded in darkness (189-191)

First and Second Resurrections Explained: The first resurrection when soul separates from body and appears before Christ in individual judgment; the final resurrection when flesh takes on again the weight of the spirit (192)

Death as Last Handmaiden: Death performs her last task and then ceases to exist; there will be no more Death, only eternal Life in blessedness or horror (192)

Resurrected Bodies' Appearance: Bodies of the damned shielded by their darkness, bodies of the blessed robed in their own light; animality disappears under emission of inner spirit (192-193)

Time After Judgment: When time is over and life is to be exclusively Life in the heavens, the universe will again become as at the beginning before being dissolved completely (192)

Universal Resurrection: All risen—millions of skeletons surfacing, recomposing, flesh reforming; the just singing slow, sweet chorus of blessing for God (190-191)

64. Commentary On Ezekiel And The Last Judgment193

- Charity as Central to Judgment:** The taking of fire from between cherubim to punish is not symbolic; sins against Charity are punished with fire of Charity which was rejected (194)
- Ezekiel's Vision of Punishment:** Ezekiel heard the Lord order the man dressed in linen to take burning coals and cast them upon the city to punish the blameworthy, beginning with those in sanctuary (194)
- Four Evangelists at Judgment:** At the great Judgment, the four Evangelists will be with Christ the Judge, for they consumed themselves to take the law of Charity into hearts (195)
- Judgment by Works:** Christ will judge all for the good done or failed to do; on rising again, all will be equal, poor disconnected bones, smoke recondensing into flesh (195)
- Sign of Tau:** The sign of Tau is a pollarded cross, marking subjects; Christians bear Christ's sign, humbly incomplete at its summit, as appropriate for children of royal lineage not the Firstborn (193)
- Tau Written on Spirits:** The sign of Tau is not material but written upon spirits with works; it makes souls immune to the verdict enforced by angels (193-194)

65. Commentary On Ezekiel, Chapter 47: The Importance Of Divine Grace.....196

- Divine Grace as Water:** The Water of Divine Grace, issuing from Christ's Heart, brings life, purifies sands, removes saltiness and corruption, enabling souls to bear fruits of every kind (197-198)
- Humanity as Arid Sands:** Men have become worse than arid salt sands because they have rejected Christ, the Water bringing fecundity; every form of life is impossible (196-197)
- Struggle Against Christ:** The true War is the struggle against Christ; even small, individual, interior struggles against His Law are fights against Christ, the guerrillas from which major assaults originate (197)
- Water from Christ's Heart:** The purifying water issues from Christ's Heart, opened out of love for mankind, bringing essence of divine love; in contact with it, every impurity falls (197-198)
- World Erects Dikes Against Grace:** The world erects embankments and dikes preventing Christ from pouring Himself forth; the world shoves these dikes against the Church to engulf her (197)

66. Commentary On Psalm 93199

- Accumulation of Small Sins:** Small sins—gossip, slight calumnies, minor adulteries, neglect of prayer—accumulate like grains of sand, eventually provoking catastrophes (199-201)
- Great Sinners Exist Because of Mass:** The great sinners exist because the mass is all more or less guilty of the same sins; if the great had faced a

healthy, moral people, they could not have arrived at their crimes (201-202)

Psalm 93 Commentary: Man asks why God doesn't punish the proud; but before removing splinter from brother's eye, take beam from own eye—not even the small are without sin (199)

Return to God: Come back to God; free yourselves individually from sins of lack of faith, moral disobedience, and sevenfold vice, and God will free the collectivity from its scourges (202)

Sunday Mass Neglect: Many neglect Sunday Mass for business deals, not finding ten minutes for God while spending hours on themselves (200)

67. **Commentary On Isaiah: The Father's Words On Jesus As The Light Sent Into The World.....202**

Emmanuel Prophecy: The Virgin conceived and gave birth to Emmanuel—the only sign given by God to the house of David, making it sure of its duration, which would have been eternal if people had not rejected Him (204)

Father's Words on Jesus as Light: The Father sent His Light into the world so humanity's path would be illuminated; if welcomed, the whole circle would have been illuminated by the Light of God (203-204)

Jesus' Rejection of Evil: Jesus loved Good and rejected Evil so much that He agreed to die so that Good would triumph in the world and Evil would be defeated by His divine Blood (205)

Light Rejected: Men have rejected the Light; It shone at the summit of the circle and then remained increasingly distant from those who descended by the other way (204)

Signs Refused: Men ask for a sign with impure hearts and blasphemous lips, deriding God's power; the only sign they receive is the multiple signs of the one they worship as slaves (203)

Vinegar and Gall for Christ: No more butter and honey for Christ when He reached manhood—but vinegar and gall in the final hour, preceded by metaphorical vinegar of three years of public life (205)

68. **Jesus' Mercy On The Saints In Holding Back The Father's Justice 206**

Father's Justice Held Back: The only thing Jesus can do is hold back the wrath of His Father, who is weary of crimes of a race for which His Blood has been shed to no avail (208)

Hour of Darkness: It is the hour of the power of Darkness, and men have spontaneously wanted it; the kingdom of Evil is already established (207)

Humanity's Race Toward Spiritual Death: Jesus impotently witnesses all humanity's race towards spiritual death; like an enraged bull, humanity demolishes everything—reason, morality, and faith (207)

New Crime Without Forgiveness: The profaning hand of man rises up for a new crime which does not deserve forgiveness; the Father does not want to forgive and lets men perish as they have wanted (207-208)

Spirit as Consoler: The Holy Spirit is the Consoler, nursing and sweetening the bitterness of the Word that speaks the truth, which is quite bitter (208)

Trust Despite Everything: Even if everything seems lost, trust; even if the abyss of Evil launches its demons forth, the Word and the Spirit are still working and loving to save and defend (208-209)

69. Encouragement For Christ's "Voices"209

Christ's Glory Prepared: Jesus prepared Maria to meditate on His glory; those able to remain with Him in pain must share with Him in joy (209)

Forerunners of Second Coming: Recognize the forerunners of Christ in His second coming, for the forces of the Antichrist are marching (210)

Humility Required: Constant remembrance of who Christ is and who the soul is; constant awareness of faults and Christ's perfection to have a heart washed by contrition (209)

No Fear of Christ: Have no fear of Christ; He shows Himself to elevate, not to burn to ashes; rise up, let joy of the gift give vigor (209)

Pause Before Final Battle: What many will think is a victory over the Antichrist—the peace which is now near—will be only a pause to give the Enemy time to recover for a crueller battle (210)

Voices of Jesus: Those who are the "voices" of Jesus must recognize their Good and always follow Him; let no deceitful appearance seduce them and no persecution terrify them (210)

70. The Sacrifices Maintaining The World's Existence ...210

Charity as Shield: Charity, which men do not want, is being poured precisely on those they disdain; those who live only for Charity love others more than themselves, coming to aid in souls and material things (211-212)

Satan's War Against Spirits: This is not a war of peoples but of Satan against God—one of the wars preparing for the advent of the Antichrist, whose precursors they now are (211)

Spiritual Blood Through Victims: True Life lasts to give time for conversion through the work of victim souls; they transfuse spiritual blood, drained by moral illnesses, which circulates in the Mystical Body (212)

Victim Souls Sustain World: The world's existence is maintained by victim souls; they pour spiritual blood into the Mystical Body, filtering grace to the wicked (212)

World Moves Toward False Peace: The world moves toward its peace, which is not Christ's peace; His peace is of holiness and justice, while the world's is of tyranny and corruption (211)

71. 59. The Demoniac Of Capernaum Cured In The Synagogue.213

- Demoniac Cured as Proof:** Jesus cures the possessed man Aggaeus to prove His identity to a doubting Israelite; the demon confesses Jesus as "the Holy of God" and "Lord of Heaven and Earth" (214-215)
- Dispute Over Jesus' Authority:** A sumptuously dressed Israelite challenges Jesus' authority, questioning how He can claim to be God's representative when even prophets didn't dare so much (214)
- Israel's Punishment vs. God's Patience:** The Israelite cites Maccabees to argue that God swiftly punishes Israel but seems slow with other nations; Jesus explains this is spiritual vs. temporal interpretation (213-214)
- Jesus as Expected One:** Jesus declares Himself the Expected One, the Promised One, the Saviour, born at Bethlehem of the house of David, living in Nazareth (214)
- Signs of Messiah:** Jesus points to John the Baptist as His Precursor who prepared the way and saw the heavens open with the dove and heard the voice declaring who Jesus is (214)
- Spiritual vs. Temporal Interpretation:** Jesus explains that Yahweh struck Israel temporarily because of pride, but His love and patience are greater, granting the Saviour so they may listen and be saved (213-214)

72. Commentary On Ezekiel 37:1-14216

- Ezekiel's Bones Prophecy:** Jesus applies Ezekiel's vision of dry bones to contemporary humanity—bones calcined, heavy, dead ruins sinking into fetid furrows of vices and heresies (216)
- Humanity as Machine, Beast, Corpse:** Man has become a machine working mechanically without understanding, a beast content with sleeping and eating, a corpse kept upright by sorcery of mechanics or devil (216-217)
- Infusion of Spirit Promised:** The time shall come when God will infuse the spirit into dry bones and they shall live again, making nerves rise, flesh grow, skin spread out (217)
- Spirit as Differentiating Factor:** The spirit is what differentiates man from animals; man has killed himself in his best part (216)
- Spiritual Inheritance for Future Generations:** Work to give children an inheritance of spiritual strength for the hour when the last battles of the world and Lucifer scourge Humanity (217)
- Word as Nourishment:** To the best ones not dead but reduced to skeletons for lack of spiritual food, Christ gives the nourishment of His word—substantial manna giving strength with sweetness (217)

73. 181. The Parable Of The Wheat And The Darnel218

- Darnel as Symbol:** Darnel symbolizes the bitter frivolity of the worldly spirit; other seeds scattered by Enemy include nettles, couch-grass, dodder, bearbines, hemlock, and poisonous herbs (219)

- Disciples as Fields:** Disciples are like fields chosen by the Master; they are open to all—the Enemy can sow various bad seeds in them (219)
- Nettles, Couch-grass, Didders Explained:** Nettles are stinging untameable spirits; couch-grass are parasites wearing out the master; didders twist, pierce, tear, scratch, cause mistrust and pain (219)
- Poisonous Disciples:** Criminal disciples who go as far as betraying and killing, like hemlock—beautiful but deadly, causing innocent ones to fall into trap (219-220)
- Traitors Among Disciples:** Yes, there may be traitors in the mass of disciples; Satan and his servants—men, passions, the world, the flesh—enter the fields (219-220)
- Universal Sense of Parable:** The field is the world; good seed is children of Kingdom; darnel is subjects of Evil one; harvest is end of world accomplished by angels (218)

74. Messages For M.R. And Romualdo.....221

- Faith as Balm:** Have faith; support loved ones with prayers; offer them to Christ; say "I trust in You"—the balm descending from Christ's wounds is never inactive (222)
- Mother's Pain as Salvation:** The pain of mothers is salvation for their children; Heaven is populated with children saved by their mothers (222)
- M.R.'s Suffering Son:** Maria Raffaelli's son Antonio, when delirious, is not responsible for what "the other" makes him say; Jesus does not even hear those words, looking instead with mercy (222)
- Patience in Suffering:** Don't be in a hurry; these are long matters; waiting becomes an instant up above, and then comes the joy of seeing loved ones handsome, healthy, good, and happy forever (222)
- Satan Hides in Illness:** In illnesses, Satan often hides to torture and bring people to curse the Lord (222)
- Tormented vs. Wanting to be Tormented:** One thing is to be tormented, another is to want to be tormented; the latter is a sin because it is "connivance with the will of Satan" (222)

75. For Father Migliorini223

- Dora and Maria Cases Compared:** Objections to the tumultuous Dora case and the calm, orderly Maria case serve to justify the Gospel—different manifestations met with same mistaken reasons by human wisdom (223)
- Human Wisdom Contradicts Itself:** Human wisdom, proud and incredulous, wants to justify itself but contradicts itself, unable to recognize the supernatural where it is present (223)
- Just Obey God's Will:** For the just to obey is always the will of the Lord; there is no other will in Father Migliorini's departure (224)
- Maria's Gratitude to Father Migliorini:** Maria expresses thanks for Father Migliorini's assistance since June 1942, which was the preparatory stage for the ministry to which God destined her (224-225)

Permission as Holy: Even if not an order, permission from God presented to us is holy; Mary's words "I am the handmaid of the Lord" apply to accepting what is presented (225)

Spiritual Guide Change: Jesus later wanted another spiritual guide for Maria; she trusts it will be a momentary darkening like Jesus' from Holy Thursday until Easter morning (224)

76. 596. The End Of Time Discourse.226

End of Time Discourse: Jesus foretells the destruction of the Temple and the end of the world, warning against false Christs and false prophets who will perform signs to deceive even the elect (226-228)

False Christs and Prophets: Many will come saying "I am the Christ," performing wonders assisted by Satan; they can be recognized because their wonders are joined to fear, perturbation, and falsehood (226-227)

Final Judgment Scene: The Son of Man will come on clouds with power and glory, separate the sheep from the goats, inviting the blessed to inherit the Kingdom and sending the accursed to eternal fire (230-231)

Parable of Talents: The parable of the master giving talents to servants—the faithful servants rewarded, the slothful servant punished—applies to readiness for Christ's coming (229-230)

Signs of End Times: Wars, plagues, famines, earthquakes are only the beginning of birth-pangs; the Gospel must first be preached to all nations, then the end will come (227)

Vigilance Required: Be awake because you do not know at what time your Lord will come; be vigilant and pray, always prepared (229)

77. The Holy Year And Mary's Redemption232

Assumption of Mary: The glorious Assumption of Mary into Heaven should be celebrated, giving a special character to the next Holy Year as a note of Marian triumph (232-233)

Devotion to Mary as Last Redemption: In devotion to Mary lies the secret of the last Redemption; there cannot be a second Redemption by Christ, but there can be one to save more spirits through glorious Mary (233)

Holy Year Marked by Marian Character: The Holy Year that will come must be marked by a special Marian character, celebrating the centennial of the Assumption (232)

Mary's Triumph Over Satan: Hasten the hour of Mary's triumph over Satan, the world, matter, and death; let the Church join the Angels so the dragon will be cast down and Christendom have time to fortify itself (233)

Seals Already Opened: Many of the seals have in reality already been opened; woe if they were all opened or should come to be (233)

Woman Clothed with Sun: The Woman dressed in sunlight, whose feet tread upon the moon and head crowned with stars, must be proclaimed Queen before the woman dressed in purple and scarlet (233)

78. *[To Prevent The Antichrist From Triumpling].....233*

Antichrist Prevented by Work: Christ's Word distributed among the crowd can do much more to prevent the Antichrist from triumphing than any individual sacrifice (234)

Maria's Life Offered: Maria offers her life and even renounces seeing The Work published, provided the communists don't win the General Election (234)

Satan's Poison Spreads: The Serpent vomited water from his mouth to sweep away the Woman; the wave of hatred against the teaching and militant Church advances (234)

The Work as Food for the Faithful: Christ has compassion for the people and wants to give them the Word of Life, the Food which will keep them Alive in the Faith so they will not faint (234-235)

Will of Christ vs. Maria's Offer: Jesus cannot accept Maria's offer to die before the elections because His Will is that The Work is published; it can do a thousand times ten thousand more than her sacrifice (234)

79. *[Be That Force...Like The Times In The Catacombs]..235*

Catacombs Method Needed: Return to the methods of the catacombs—priests and even Popes living among the people, earning daily bread by manual or civic work, preaching by word and example (236-237)

Christ Removed from Hearts: If we allow Christ to be removed from men's hearts, who will take His place? The Antichrist. That's the law (236)

Clergy as Force Against Avalanche: Priests and Catholics at service of Church must be the force that penetrates and breaks up the avalanche of evil before it crushes them (236)

Re-christianization Needed: To re-christianize Italy and the world, it is necessary to live the true Christian life as in earliest Christian times (237)

Salt That Lost Flavor: Pastors are blind who do not see what is around them and do not know how to protect the people from evil (237-238)

Victim Souls as Moses on Mountain: A mystic army of victim souls will help with prayers, penance and suffering—many Moses on the mountain while Joshuas battle and win on the plains (239)

80. *[Vicar Of My Christ And My Servant (Pius XII)]242*

Eternal Father's Warning to Pius XII: The Eternal Father speaks directly to Pope Pius XII, warning that Hell is coming closer; the Church no longer has that holiness which would spur God to send angels to defeat demons (242)

Sebna's Time Dominates: Sebna's time dominates—unworthy Temple pre-fects in the Temple so God's Spirit cannot dwell there with His Presence creating an invincible shield (243)

Stars Fallen from Heaven: The stars which Satan makes fall from Heaven are those killed by the Beast for giving faithful witness, those chosen to be luminaries whose light has gone out (242-243)

Too Many Idol Shepherds: Many, too many shepherds are idols as described by Baruch; too many stars of the Church are overwhelmed (243)

Vicar Must Not Be Accomplice: The Vicar must keep his will separate from theirs so as not to make himself their accomplice; he is the Supreme Head, his word second only to God's (243-244)

Warning Through Human Creature: Do not disregard this warning even if it comes through a human creature; others, predecessors listened to God's means, and if the Church is still Roman, it is because a Pope yielded to Catherine (245)

81. Special Help From Jesus, The Two Passions245

Beast Gives Deceit to Unbelievers: Those who want miracles to satisfy their foolishness and corrupt spirit turn to the Beast, who will give them deceit to lead them astray and take them to eternal death (245-246)

Inhabitants of the Earth: The Apostle John calls them "the inhabitants of the earth"—those who seek signs from the Beast rather than Truth (245-246)

Miracles for the Corrupt: Those with corrupt spirits desire miracles not for truth but for satisfaction of foolishness, and the Beast provides what they desire (245)

Truth Rejected: The more they do not desire the Truth, the more the Beast gives them deceit (246)

82. The Frustrations Of God's Work.....246

Frustration of God's Work: Jesus is pained by the hypocritical sentence "If it is the work of God, God will take care of it and make it triumph"—a challenge to Charity, Wisdom, and Justice (246)

Offensive Doubt: The statement "if it is the work of God, He must take care of it" is proof of offensive doubt present in those who say it (248)

Proofs Provided: Through Maria Valtorta, Jesus has provided all proofs—her crucifixion (bedriddenness) and lack of cultural background make it certain she could not write those pages (246-247)

Sorrow of Frustrated Will: Jesus experiences sorrow at seeing Himself, God, frustrated in His will by men, told "You must take care of it" as if He needed to perform extraordinary works to persuade them (248)

Spirit of God Present: There is no dogmatic error in the Work; if the Spirit has provided lights to render luminous what schools have illuminated, let them bless God and not say "we say something different" (247)

True Friends Must Not Repeat Statement: Jesus's true friends must never repeat that statement again; if they cannot tell the truth—"Jesus cannot triumph with the Work because men do not want this"—they should remain silent (247-248)

83. Lesson 34 [*...There Will Be A New Heaven And A New Earth...And The Suffering Of Creatures Will End*]248

- Creation Groaning in Labor:** All creation groans and suffers in the militant Church to give birth to Christ within themselves, to reach "the perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ" (250-251)
- Faith, Hope, Charity:** The three theological virtues, especially charity, help achieve the complete development of Grace, the root of Glory which needs cooperation of all intellectual and spiritual faculties (251)
- New Heaven and New Earth:** There will be a new heaven and a new earth, and the suffering of creatures will end when the day and eternal kingdom come for all children of God (249-250)
- Transformation into Children of God:** The transformation of a carnal man into a spiritual man, and into a child risen to possession of the Kingdom, is like a long and laborious pregnancy and sorrowful labor (251)
- Unreasonable Creatures and Reasonable:** The world was populated by unreasonable creatures and above them, queen, was the pair of reasonable creatures with spiritual and immortal souls (249)
- Woman's Labor Analogy:** When a woman is in labor she has sorrow, but once she has delivered the child she no longer remembers the anguish for joy that a child is born into the world (251-252)

84. Lesson 36 [*...On Judgement Day, One Will See...*].....252

- All Things Turn to Good:** All things turn to good for those who love God because God predisposes all things so they can be a means of good for His saints (252)
- Character Not Formed to Law:** It is not things in themselves that bring to evil consequences, but the character not formed to both moral and natural law (252)
- Elect Through Mysterious Operations:** On Judgment Day, many will be seen among the blessed whom men judged not elected to the Kingdom because they did not belong to the Church (253)
- God Knows All:** God knows those who are, were, or will be—those who will not leave the mysterious aids of God inert so that man can achieve his end (253)
- Love as Resemblance to Christ:** The resemblance to Christ lies in love; whoever does not live in love and practice works of love is not a brother of Christ and not His co-heir (253-254)
- Predestined to Glory:** Those predestined to glory did not remain deaf to His call, following Him with heroism along the steep path of perfection (254)

85. *Lesson 46 [...The Judgement That Will Follow The End Of The World Is The Conversion Of Israel...].255*

- Conversion of Israel Last:** One of the signs of the final coming of God is the conversion of Israel, which will be the extreme conversion of the world to God—they who were first will be last (255)
- Enoch and Elijah to Return:** Enoch and Elijah were taken by God out of the world to return at the right time to preach repentance and combat the Antichrist (255)
- First Become Last:** Adam had to wait centuries and millennia in the underworld despite expiating his sin; similarly, the Hebrew people will wait centuries before returning to be God's friend (255)
- Israel Not Inexorably Closed:** Though the Kingdom is not inexorably closed to the Hebrew people for rejecting it, centuries and millennia will pass before they can return to being friends of God (255)
- Mercy for Israel's Sake:** Not all of Israel will be reproached and excluded, thanks to the merit of its fathers—the patriarchs, prophets, and just ones; for their justice, God will use mercy (256)

86. *[Jesus' Lament and Curse Regarding The Obstinate Refusal To Support The Work's Salvific Timing and Purpose].....257*

- Curse on Those Who Oppose The Work:** Jesus curses those who, men and His servants, prevent Him from being King of Kings by blocking publication and dissemination of The Work (258-259)
- Five Blazing Rays:** From Jesus' Most Sacred Heart and His pierced Hands and Feet come five blades of burning fire, dazzling light descending on the Earth—His infinite Love (257)
- Jesus' Appearance as Rex tremendae majestatis:** Jesus appears gentle, then slowly becomes the terrifying King of terrible majesty, Jesus the scourge of the merchants and money changers (257)
- Swords from Christ's Wounds:** The flaming swords issuing from Christ's wounds are two-edged swords like those in the Apocalypse—they cut, they are flashes of lightning striking whoever evokes divine displeasure (259)
- The Work Given in Good Time:** The Work was given in good time, before the terrible deadline, to be distributed as manna and medicine so multitudes wouldn't die without faith, cursing God (257-258)
- Woe to Rebellious Servants:** Woe betide the rebellious servants who oppose the Work; peace to the faithful lambs; the Heart waits for them to change in order to forgive (260)

87. *[Churches Desecrated, Bishops And Priests Attacked... I Will Return Only At The Last Hour...]*.....280

- Churches Desecrated:** Churches desecrated, Bishops and Priests attacked—already excommunicated for being Communists, they come under another excommunication for raising hands against Priests (260)
- Evil Grows and Spreads:** Evil grows and spreads increasingly; after fleeting success, the giants with feet of clay, the prophets of lies, fall down, collapse, break up, crumble, and die (260-261)
- Jesus Would Return If Allowed:** If Jesus were allowed to, He would return to Earth and suffer His Passion again, or even more atrociously, to save them—but the Father does not allow it (261)
- Jesus' Poem for Sinners:** Jesus dictates a poem for sinners: "Poor leaf carried on the wind, that's what a dead soul is. I close the door with a dark lament until the terrible eternal torment" (261)
- Last Return as Judge:** Jesus will return only at the last hour of the world as Christ the Judge and King of Kings for the last, supreme judgment—quick like a bolt from the blue (261)
- Victim Soul Needed:** Jesus needs Maria alive as a victim soul for the redemption of sinners; everything is influenced by the way they act towards her and The Work (261)

Index.....263

Compiler's Foreword

I was interested in Heaven's commentary on the times of the end, or the "last days," of great interest to many, Christian and non-Christian alike. So, I recompiled the most telling references from the current English translations of *The Notebooks* as presented in an older English translation, the book, *The End Times As Revealed To Maria Valtorta*, now out of print, and I added more content that I found in other Writings of the Italian victim soul that Jesus Christ had chosen as His "Spokesman."

Why her, and why now? Jesus introduces us to the answers at the end of the "Gospel as Revealed..." by saying, under the heading, *The Reasons for the Work. Farewell to the Work.*:

"...

"The reasons that have induced Me to enlighten and dictate episodes and words of Mine to little John [Maria Valtorta] are, in addition to the joy of communicating an exact knowledge of Me to this loving victim-soul, manifold.

"But the moving spirit of all of them is My love for the Church, both teaching and militant, and My desire to help souls in their ascent towards perfection. The knowledge of Me helps to ascend. My Word is Life.

"..."

Maria describes the sequence of periods comprising the last days in the following complete entry from *The Little Notebooks*:¹

"1st period: the present, called the "the forerunners" of the Antichrist.

"2nd period: that of the Antichrist in person, helped by two appearances of the Beast; one violent, the other overcoming through false tenderness.

"It will be a time of terrible struggles, both human (wars etc.) and supernatural (doctrinal temptations etc.).

¹ *The Little Notebooks (LNB), Undated 3, p. 245.*

“During this time, God will try to call man back through holy punishments; holy, because they are used to make men holy.

“When these have been used up without producing results, Satan will be chained up for a time by the defeat of the Antichrist and his allies both natural (the powerful on earth) and the supernatural (the two appearances of Satan).

“3rd period: a waiting period to gather human forces and direct them to heaven.

“My Kingdom on earth.

“It will be a miracle of Grace, poured out like a saving flood.

“However, contrary to what happened with Noah, the [hearts of] most men will barricade themselves in the Fortresses left by Satan, and only those not of Satan will remain outside and be submerged, washed and enlightened by Grace.

“4th period: when the time designated for the final test of my Wisdom is over, I will let Satan come for the last time. Satan's time will be 7 times 7 crueller than that of the Antichrist. The king of evil will roam everywhere in order to gather his followers when Evil will be defeated by Good and eternally cursed [...] in his infernal kingdom as I will have [...] my own in the heavenly kingdom. [It is difficult to read this sentence and some words have been left out as they are illegible.]

“5th period: The supreme Judgment. The hour of my triumph, because it will be the moment in which my being will achieve its objective: that is, the salvation of the human race which will have remembered they are children of the Most High.”

When organizing the compilation, I relied on the aforementioned book, *The End Times As Revealed To Maria Valtorta*. It suggests a simpler time template than the one recorded by Maria, where periods four and five are combined. See the Foreword from *The End Times...* further below.

The extracts can relate to any one, or more, of the template periods. I placed the header shown below at the beginning of each quoted extract as a key disclosing the period(s) treated by the extract. Some template period discussions do not use the template's keywords at all, where the period(s) can be inferred from the context. Most of the extracts' commentary pertains to the centuries leading up to WW II, then going forward to include the character of our current times, of Christ's and the Antichrist's forerunners.

The Forerunners

Antichrist's Reign

Peace/Truce

End/Judgment

I took section headings found in the Contents, directly from the referenced books' table of contents, or if none were given, I supplied them in *[bracketed italics]*.

Most of the excerpts are quoted in their completeness to better appreciate the Gospel's spiritual context and counsel depths. I hope that these pages encourage you to immerse yourselves into Maria's complete "Work," where she is only the "Spokesman" for its Divine Author.

I have compiled the "last days" excerpts as accurately as possible, including footnotes from the original cited documents. Footnotes taken from *The End Times As Revealed To Maria Valtorta* are prefixed by "ET:" Some of the "ET:" footnotes contain citations like Q43:537, which refers to I Quaderni del 1943, p. 537 -- an Italian Notebook reference. Original, partially italicized body texts, footnotes, and non-italicized bracketed information in this book were taken as-is directly from the originals though renumbered. Whereas, I added some additional information to the body of the extracted texts employing italicized brackets, [...], and footnotes that are *entirely italicized* for identification of non-original Writings' content.

"Jesus did not grant those revelations to satisfy idle curiosity. Jesus bestowed them in these troubled days of ours to help you to persevere until your death and particular judgment.

*"At times sad, at times exalting; at times soul-searching, at times comforting; Jesus' stirring dictations to Maria Valtorta are powerful prophecies, exhortations, rebukes, and teachings to shake us up, to show us our world for what it is, to enlighten our minds about public revelation and set our hearts on fire for God."*²

Anonymous

Compiler

November 19, 2024

St. Pontianus, Pope and Martyr

² *From the back cover of The End Times As Revealed To Maria Valtorta (ET).*

Foreword

[complete excerpt from ET]

The end times' mysteriousness is no doubt aggravated by misunderstanding. Over the centuries, the Old Testament prophecies, Jesus' own teaching and the writings of His Apostles, especially St. John's Apocalypse, have remained obscure to a great extent, as legitimate Church writers and commentators did not manage to see through the veils. Meanwhile strange, biased, sometimes downright heretical opinions, spreading in many segments of Christendom, did not help to set things straight. The general outcome is one of darkness and confusion.

In the 1940s, God compassionately decided to lift some of our ignorance about the end times for two main reasons:

- the end times had already begun;
- most people were, and still are, ill-prepared, and yet a better preparation would result in the salvation of more souls.

Jesus Himself, the Word of God, willed to give an Italian woman, Maria Valtorta, "private" revelations meant for everyone. The revelations to her, of unprecedented breadth in Church history, mostly consisted of almost 700 visions that illustrated the Gospel, and about 1000. dictations on a great variety of Christian themes, on current events in the 1940s, and on the times to come. (Some of these dictations were dictated by heavenly persons other than Jesus; for more details see the section on Maria Valtorta and her writings.)

Of all topics dealt with by Our Lord, especially in the dictations, the end times are possibly the one climactic and most urgent theme. Closely tied in with it, is the theme of the particular judgment awaiting everyone upon death. Hence the utmost importance for each one of us to prepare for death. And since such preparation is more difficult in these end times, Christ is trying to wake us up so we may react and be saved and help save others.

Nothing that Jesus says to Valtorta is meant to feed idle curiosity. Although some of His statements are astounding, they always serve a rational purpose, such as reminding us of God's almightiness. At any rate, everything Jesus says to Valtorta is meant to bring us all to repentance from sin and to setting down to work. Christ wants workers, friends, co-workers in the work of atone-

ment to save souls. But to shake us up. He deemed it fitting to give us an outline of history from the 1940s to the end of the world, a precise chronology consisting of four major periods:

- the period of the forerunners of the Antichrist, already begun by 1943;
- the period of the Antichrist;
- the period of peace, a relatively short truce actually, not at all a literal millennium; during this truce a powerful evangelization, assisted by mighty supernatural manifestations, will bring about the conversion to Catholicism of all people of good will;
- the Satanic period, consisting in Satan's last war and persecution against the Church; this ends with Christ's second coming when Christ crushes Satan.

Then the last judgment takes place and the world as we know it comes to an end. Eternity goes on.

To shake us up from our complacency and lethargy, Christ has given us through Maria Valtorta the clearest and most complete picture of the end times ever penned, including chilling descriptions of the person of the Antichrist. To remove false hopes, Christ dispels errors such as millenarianism (the mistaken belief that He would physically reign on earth for a thousand years of peace). To prevent our being tempted to give in to hopelessness or terror, Christ constantly reassures us of His love for those who love Him, of His infinite willingness to forgive those who turn to Him, of His power to save those who entreat Him no matter how bad the times are.

Just as there is no room in the end times for idle curiosity, complacency, or yet again terror, there is no room either for anger or frustration. We must be energetic, yes, to pray and act to lessen the havoc about to be wreaked by the Antichrist; but our zeal must always stay within the perimeter of Christ's peace in our hearts. This is possible even in our times, the end times; Christ's inward peace is possible even during the inhuman times of the Antichrist looming over us.

Maria Valtorta And Her Writings

[complete excerpt from ET]

Maria Valtorta, one of the greatest Marian female mystics, was born in Caserta (near Naples) in 1897 and remained the only child of a military man and a school teacher. After moving many times, the family in 1924 finally settled in Viareggio, a Mediterranean port near Pisa.

By 1934 Maria was permanently bed-ridden, seriously disabled as the final outcome of a violent assault fourteen years earlier, when a young delinquent hit her hard in the lower back with an iron bar. Maria lost her father in 1935 and her mother in 1943. She spent the rest of her life in the family home until she died in 1961.

While on the surface her bed-ridden years seemed commonplace, her spiritual life grew powerful. In late 1942, her spiritual director, seeking to know her better, asked her to write her autobiography. Soon after she was done in 1943, she unexpectedly began to receive private revelations from Heaven. Her director told her to put everything down in writing. Little did they know how much she would write from the spring of 1943 until late 1951:

- about 800 dictations from Jesus: deep, substantial *revelations* which, taken as a whole, are unique among all known private revelations in the history of the Church.
- around 300 *revelations* by the Holy Spirit, by God the Father, by the Virgin Mary or by Maria's guardian angel;
- a series of almost 700 *visions* of Jesus' earthly life with Mary, the Apostles and many contemporaries of His. Most of these took place in three years only (1944-1947) and filled nearly 10,000 hand-written pages in large scribblers.

all that Maria kept up a plentiful correspondence with many priests, sisters, and lay persons.

By late 1950, the revelations to her were mostly finished; all of her writings pertaining to them had reached a grand total of 142 scribblers containing 16,420 manuscript pages. She now entered the last mystical stage of her life until she died on October 12, 1961.

By 1984, except for her abundant correspondence, all her writings had been published in the original Italian:

- 1956-1959, *Il Poema dell'Uomo Dio*, first edition, four large books containing the 700 visions of Christ's life on earth;
- 1960-1967, *Il Poema dell'Uomo Dio*, second edition, ten volumes;
- 1969, *Autobiografia*, 445p., written in 1943;
- 1972, *Libro di Azaria*, 449p., containing the revelations by her guardian angel;
- 1976, *I Quaderni del 1943*, 808p., containing part one of the many dictations, apparitions, and visions to her on sundry topics;
- 1977, *Lezioni sull'Epistola di Paolo ai Romani*, 315p., containing a series of dictations by the Holy Spirit commenting on the Epistle of St. Paul to the Romans;
- 1980, *I Quaderni del 1944*, 878p., containing part two of the many dictations, apparitions and miscellaneous visions to her;
- 1984, *I Quaderni dal 1945 al 1950*, 664p., containing part three of the dictations and apparitions and various visions;
- 1993-?, *L'Evangelo come mi e stato rivelato*, which is the reedition under a new name of *Il poema dell'Uomo-Dio*. So far only the first few volumes have been republished.

As of 1994, the following have been translated and published in English:

- 1986-1990, *The Poem of the Man-God*, five large books, 4228p., containing the 700 visions of Christ's life;
- 1991, *Autobiography*, 442p.;
- 1993, *The Book of Azariah*, 334p., the revelations of her guardian angel;
- 1994, *The End Times as revealed to Maria Valtorta*, the present book, containing only texts drawn from her miscellaneous dictations, apparitions, and visions.

Context

[complete excerpt from ET]

What are the end times about?

Essentially, they are the time for Divine Justice to settle everything concerning Planet Earth.

Let us start at the end. The end times end with the last judgment. On this occasion, Christ will publicly demonstrate His mercy and justice by taking all His loyal friends to Heaven everlasting and by consigning all His enemies to never-ending hell. It will be the most spectacular event in the entire history of earth.

In a way, however, the last judgment is only the making public of the sentences already passed "at the hour of our death." Hence we can see the dire gravity of the particular judgment of each and every individual. As the last judgment closes the end times, so the particular judgment closes the earth-bound life of each and every one of us.

In turn an individual's success at the particular judgment hinges on whether he managed, with the Savior's help, to use well the personal freedom given him by God during his lifetime. In turn this freedom is given him to make a choice: to love God and neighbor and self, or to pamper the self to the detriment of God and neighbor. Such freedom is necessary. God wants to love His creatures and be loved by them, but He does not force love on anyone and expects human love for Him to be manifested freely through free will, which is everyone's greatest power. Through it, one must keep God's commandments. By obeying them, one passes the one-time life-test. By breaking them, one fails forever.

Thus we know when the end times come to an end and what happens then: at the last judgment, the Kingdom of God closes its doors behind the Elect who passed their test, and leaves forever outside the Rejected who failed theirs.

But do we know when the end times begin... or have begun? And do we know what happens then? Those are questions to which, unaided, humanity could never have hoped to find an answer. But Jesus has given the answers to a certain mystic for the common good of all mankind. And here is the context of His telling.

It is difficult enough at any time to win with the help of Christ the Savior a good account before His tribunal at the particular judgment. It is even harder nowadays because for quite a number of years the Church, by and large, has failed to pass on Christ's teachings in a life-giving way. Such was Jesus'

assessment already in the 1940s, as expressed to that certain mystic. And to remedy the situation. He made a special, authoritative intervention in 1943-1951, precisely through that certain mystic, Maria Valtorta. Indeed, to compensate for the lack of proper teaching from the Catholic pulpits in the mid-20th century, Jesus inaugurated a new method of teaching the Catholic Faith and thus of spreading the Faith. Jesus thus presented the Church with new supernatural tools, namely His Revelations to Maria Valtorta. These consist of almost 700 visions of episodes of His Life on Earth, some previously known and others not. His Revelations to her also consist of about 800 dictations on a great many topics pertaining to the Church's Life and the salvation of as many people as possible.

Now as part of His dictations to her, Christ specifically dealt quite at length with the end times. That is where He told her that the end times had already begun by 1943. And He went on making very specific explanations and prophecies about the end times, covering all aspects of the happenings as they started in the 1940s and shall follow one another until the end of time, like dominoes toppling one another until the end of the line.

In the entire history of the Catholic Church, there is nothing that can compare with these revelations that come from the very mouth of Jesus Christ. *Prophets* prophesied about the end times vaguely. But the *Prophet of prophets*, Jesus Christ, in the mid-20th century, prophesied about the end times with astonishing precision and unimaginable descriptions, as well as with most profound and clear explanations of the cause of so much horror to be witnessed by humanity from 1943 until the Last Judgment.

Thus we are in the end times. And this has an overwhelmingly important implication. There is no time to waste before joining the most sublime task there can be: helping to save as many souls as we can. For many are on their way to damnation -- Jesus Himself says that "the majority" are. And they cannot work on their own at their own salvation. They need help. Your help and mine.

What Jesus has to teach is serious. It is Divine Truth. And only Truth can save human beings, whose greatest and most despicable enemy can be none other than Satan, the Father of Lies and the Killer of Believers in God.

And it is good to bear in mind that the goal of God's Plan is His glory through the sanctification of a certain number of His human creatures who are then brought into Heaven for eternity to share in His Love. When that happens. Earth will have reached the end of its existence, history, and purpose. In the meantime, we are in the end times, described in the pages of this book.

Leo A. Brodeur, M.A., LesL., Ph.D., H.Sc.D.
President of the Maria Valtorta Research Center
Sherbrooke, QC, Canada

The Last Days

The Forerunners

Antichrist's Reign

Peace/Truce

End/Judgment

Good Friday; The First Dictation By Jesus On Co-Redemption³

The Morning of Good Friday⁴

Jesus says:

“The first time my Father, to purify the world, send a lavacre of water;⁵ the second, He sent a lavacre of blood⁶ -- and what Blood! Neither the first nor the second lavacre has availed to make men sons and daughters of God. Now the Father is weary, and to make the human race perish He lets the punishments of hell be unleashed, for men have preferred hell to Heaven, and their dominator -- Lucifer -- tortures them to spur them to curse Us so as to render them his sons and daughters completely.

³ NB43, April 23, 1943, p. 21

⁴ This is the first dictation received by Maria Valtorta. Marta Diciotti, who lived with the writer for many years, states that it took place around midday on April 23, 1943, Good Friday, and that Maria was left surprised, confided this fact to her, and asked her to go and bring Father Migliorini. Marta left the house, resorting to a ploy so as not to arouse the curiosity of Maria's mother, who was a very authoritarian woman and not inclined towards religious matters. Father Migliorini came at once and remained in intimate conversation with the infirm writer.

⁵ ET: Genesis, chapters 6-9.

⁶ ET: Hebrews 9:11-14.

“I would come a second time to die, to save them from an even more atrocious death... But my Father does not allow me to... My Love would permit it; Justice does not. It knows that it would be useless. I will thus come only at the final hour. But woe to those who will see me in that hour after having chosen Lucifer as their lord! There will be no need for weapons in the hands of my angels to win the battle against the antichrists. My look will suffice.

“Oh, if men even now were capable of turning to Me, who am salvation! I desire nothing but this and I weep because I see nothing is able to make them lift up their heads to Heaven, from which I am extending my arms towards them.

“Suffer, Maria, and tell the good to suffer to substitute for my second martyrdom, which the Father does not want Me to carry out. To every creature practicing self-immolation it is granted to save some souls. Some -- and it is not surprising that those granted to each little redeemer are few if it is remembered that I, the Divine Redeemer, on Calvary, in the hour of immolation, was able to save the thief,⁷ Longinus⁸ and very, very few others out of the thousands of persons present at my death... ”

A reflection on a discourse which is reported to me where it is stated that my prayers are relied on heavily [to obtain favors], for it has been recognized that what I have asked for has come true.

It doesn't cause me any pride, but a deeper gratitude to God, who is so good as to allow me to be able to obtain the happiness of other hearts. But to these hearts I want to *say* -- *and I will say* -- that it is not through my merit that this occurs. All could arrive at the same capacity *if they wanted to*. There is no method or special study to arrive at this power of entreaty. What matters is to make one's heart a Bethlehem manger in which to receive the infant Jesus and make oneself a cross to bear Jesus the Redeemer. When we bear Him that way -- indissolubly -- we become nothing but a complement to Him, and He alone is the real protagonist of all things. The secret to obtaining all the graces which our fellow man attributes to our nonexistent merits is exclusively this annihilation of ours in Christ, so complete as to dissolve our human personality and oblige Jesus to act alone in every event. All we do is take to Him the voices of individuals joined to a kiss of love. He does the rest.

⁷ ET: Luke 23:39-43.

⁸ ET: Longinus is the traditional name of the Roman soldier who pierced Jesus' side with a lance (John 19:34).

The Penance Of The Co-Redeemers⁹

Jesus says:

"To be saved, O poor men trembling with fear, it would suffice for you -- as true sons and daughters and not bastards whose Father I am in name only; while the real father is the other -- to be able to snatch a spark of my Mercy from my Heart. *And my only wish would be to have it snatched from Me.*

"I remain with my chest open so that all of you may reach my Heart more easily. I have expanded the lance wound in my Heart so that you may enter it. And it is of no help. I have made your numberless offenses act as a sacrificer's knife so as to open it wider and wider, *for Love is able to do this.* Even evil makes it become good, while you make use of all the good I have given you -- I have given you even Myself, who am the Supreme Good -- in such an obscene way that it becomes for you an instrument of evil.

"I remain with my Heart open, dripping blood, as tears drip from my eyes. And blood and tears fall *futilely* upon the earth. The earth is more benevolent than you are to its Creator. It opens its sand to receive the Blood of its God. And you, on the other hand, close your hearts to Me, *the only chalice where it would like to descend to find love and give joy and peace.*

"I look at my flock... Mine? No longer mine. You were my sheep, and you went out of my pastures... Outside you found the Evil One, who seduced you, and *you no longer remembered that at the price of my Blood* I had gathered you and saved you from the wolves and the mercenaries that wanted to kill you. *I died for you,¹⁰ to give you Life and full Life, as I have it in the Father. And you preferred death. You have placed yourselves under the sign of the Evil One, and he has turned you into wild goats. I no longer have a flock. The Shepherd is weeping.*

"I have only a few faithful lambs left, ready to offer their neck to the sacrificer's blade to mix their blood -- not innocent, but loving -- with my most innocent Blood, and *fill the chalice which shall be uplifted on the last day, for the last Mass, before you are called to the tremendous Judgment.* Because of *that* Blood and those bloods, in the final hour, I shall be able to reap my last harvest among the last to be saved. All the others -- shall serve as fodder for the demons' repose and dead branches in the eternal fire.

⁹ NB43, June 1, 1943, p. 4

¹⁰ ET: John 10:15.

“My lambs shall be with Me. In a place chosen by Me for their blessed repose after so much struggle. Their place is different from that of the saved. For the generous there is a special place. Not among the martyrs and not among the saved. *They are less than the former and much more than the latter* and stand in the middle, between the two arrays.

“Persevere, you that love Me. That place is worth all present fatigue, for it is the area of the co-redeemers, at the head of whom is Mary, my Mother.”

Jesus further says:

“They believe penance is something useless, out-of-date, a peaceful obsession; *There is nothing but penance and love which has weight in the eyes of God to block events and divert them.*

“You need love more than bread. But you toil to obtain bread for yourselves, robbing the piece from each other like hungry dogs, and in reality you are not very different from them, ready as you are to tear each other to pieces for a handful of earth or a fume of pride. Whereas to acquire and possess love *you do nothing.* You take no care about it.

“But do you know, O unfortunates, what you are doing in neglecting love? *You are losing God, his help on earth, the vision of Him in heaven.* What do I have to do to make you understand this if my scourges are not enough, if my acts of goodness are of no use? How must I have the Paraclete descend, in what form, in order for Him to assault and save you? If the globe of fire brought by the swift wind were to descend, for a new Pentecost, upon each of you -- not dividing into little flames, which were enough, then, over the poor fishermen, coarse and ignorant, but lovers of Me -- if it descended in full force upon each of you, *it would not suffice all the same to set you aflame with God. You would first have to clear your souls of your false gods, and you do not want to do so, for you prefer them to Me, the true God.*

“You are lost, unless a miracle is accomplished. Turn around and pray to Love.”

The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment
-----------------	--------------------	-------------	--------------

The Enduring Sign Of The Gospel¹¹

Jesus says:

“Many ask me for a sign. What sign? A sign of the hour or a sign of my power?”

¹¹ NB43, June 3,¹¹ 1943, p. 52

“You already have the sign of the hour. I repeat,^{12 13} *I have not come to change the Law.*¹⁴ It is you that have changed it. *And I do not change my Word. I said what I said. All that had to happen,* from the moment I spoke, a Man among men, until the moment I come, God the Son of God, to judge men, *is contained in my Gospel.*

“It is you, fools with your heads full of a thousand useless noises and perverse thoughts, that no longer understand what I said. *Are you not perhaps salted with fire,* with that fire which shall salt my enemies¹⁵ eternally? This fire now burning you and descending upon you to destroy you and lead you more and more to blasphemy and heresy *is nothing but a foretaste of what the fire will be which I am talking about,* destined for the scandalous who are not converted. *And you people belong to this group.* You are concerned only about the body and unjust riches, and you trample on consciences and altars, and profane everything you touch, and *you kill Me in yourselves a second time.*

“These are the gifts Lucifer -- under whose sign you have placed yourselves -- is able to give you. The Beast breathes fire out of his mouth after having submerged you in the evil of corruption. These are his gifts. He can give you nothing else. *Whereas I had given you, together with Myself, all the treasures of grace.*

“Do you want a sign of my power? But I have been giving you this sign for twenty centuries! What good has it been? I have opened upon you the torrents of my graces and from Heaven I have brought them down onto the earth in a thousand and ten thousand miracles. I have cured your sick, subdued your wars, made your affairs prosper, responded to your doubts -- concerning matters of faith as well -- for I know your weakness, which does not believe if it does not see; I have come to repeat my doctrine; I have sent my Mother so that with her tenderness She would bend you to penance and love. What good has it been?

“You have treated Me like an idiot, exploiting my power and my patience, convinced that, after having worked the miracle, I would no longer remember. No, sons and daughters of my pain. *Everything is recorded in the great book of my Intelligence, and ink is not used to write therein, but the kindled coal of Love. And everything is remembered.*

“You have exploited the coming of my Mother for human purposes; you have made it the object of wrangling and commerce. *Don't you know that Mary is my Temple, and my Temple is a house of prayer and not a den of*

¹² ET: Jesus said so to Maria Valtorta on June 2, 1943 (Q46:17), in a text not quoted in this book because it is not directly related to the End Times.

¹³ See the dictation of June 2.

¹⁴ ET: See Matthew 5:17.

¹⁵ ET: Mark 9:47-48.

*thieves?*¹⁶ Her words -- so affectionate, so imploring, so tearful, for you that have killed her Son, and you aren't even able to make such sacrifice bear fruit - - have sounded for you like useless ditties. You have continued along your way of perdition.

"You have treated my messengers -- the souls that, living as you should *all* live, have become my criers to repeat once more the word of my Heart -- like "madmen" and "obsessed people," and have sometimes killed them, always tortured them. I, too, was called "mad and obsessed"¹⁷ by the adulterous and homicidal generation of my mortal time.

"The sign! *You have the sign and it is of no use to give you back my Paternity. No other sign shall be given you.* Seek it in my word and in your consciences -- that is, if you can still manage to find it alive under the heap of lusts, adulteries, fornications, thefts, murders, envies, blasphemies, and acts of pride by which you have stoned it to death.

"And the Ascension. Before ascending I blessed my Mother and my disciples.¹⁸ I had no others to bless because the others had rejected and cursed Me. Now, too, I bless my disciples because the others do not want me and curse over my blessing."

The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment

Jesus' Postponement Of Judgment, Entreaty To Our Lady Of Sorrows¹⁹

Noon

Jesus says:

"All of you would like Me to come and display Myself to terrorize and annihilate the blameworthy. O wretched ones! You don't know what you are asking for!²⁰

"Unfortunately, I will come. I say, 'Unfortunately' because *my coming will be one of Judgment, and tremendous judgment.*²¹ If I were to come to save you, I would not speak like this and would not seek to put off the times of my coming, but, on the contrary, would anxiously rush to save you still. *But my*

¹⁶ ET: Matthew 21:12-13; Mark 11:15-17; Luke 19:45-46; John 2:14-17.

¹⁷ ET: Matthew 12:22-32; Mark 3:22-30; Luke 11:14-20.

¹⁸ ET: Luke 24:50-51.

¹⁹ *NB43, June 5, 1943, p. 56*

²⁰ In the dictation of June 3.

²¹ ET: Matthew 25:31-46.

second advent will be an advent of severe, inexorable, general Judgment, and for most of you it will be a judgment of condemnation.

“You do not know what you are asking for. But even if I showed Myself, where is there in hearts -- and especially in those mainly to blame for the present catastrophes -- that residue of faith and respect which would make them bend down, with their faces to the ground, to ask Me for mercy and forgiveness? No, sons and daughters who ask the Father for vengeance when He is the Father of forgiveness! Even if my Face flared out in your skies and my Voice, which made the worlds, thundered from east to west, things would not change. But a new blasphemous chorus of insults, a new tumult of affronts would merely be hurled against my Person.

“I repeat: *I could work a miracle, and I would do so if I knew that you would afterwards repent and become better.* You, the major wrongdoers, who bring the small ones to despair and ask for vengeance, and you, the minor wrongdoers, who ask for vengeance. But neither you major culprits nor you minor ones would repent, and you would not become better after the miracle. Indeed, in a fury of blameworthy joy, you would trample on the bodies of the punished, at once deserving censure in my sight, and get on top of them so as to oppress, in turn, from that throne founded on a punishment.

“You would like this. For Me to strike in order for you, in turn, to strike. *I am God and I see in men’s hearts,* and I thus do not listen to you in this regard. I don’t want you all to be damned. *Those mainly to blame are already judged.* But I am attempting to save you. *And this hour, for you, is the sieve of salvation.* Those who already have the devil’s darnel in them will fall into the power of the Prince of the devils, whereas those who have in their hearts the wheat germinating the eternal Bread will spring up into eternal life in Me.”

An Entreaty Addressed to Our Lady of Sorrows²²

Mary, who have taken us as your children at the foot of the Cross; Mary, who are our Mother and the Mother of our God and Brother Jesus, listen to the voice of your children.

It is this: we drag ourselves to the foot of the Cross, where your Son is agonizing and where You, too, are agonizing, with your Heart torn apart -- O Mother seeing your Child die. Look at us, Mary. We are all sprinkled with the Blood of your Son. He died for us, to give us Life and Peace in this world and the other. And we turn to You -- who were the foundation stone of our redemption -- to receive life, salvation, and peace, which we have forfeited through our way of living opposed and rebellious to the doctrine of your Son.

²² *This entreaty is retained in the extract to illustrate one soul’s response to the foregoing.*

Yes, we know we have deserved the scourge which is now striking us. We humbly acknowledge it so as to resemble You, who were the Most Humble One, as well as the Purest One. But, O Mother, in addition to being pure, You are merciful. So have mercy on us, Mary, who brought into the world Mercy itself.

Save us, save us, O Mary, from the enemy's rage!

Save our churches and our homes, the churches and the homes of this city,²³ which recognizes You as its Queen and Patroness.

Save our men, those men whom You, Star of the Sea, so often saved from mishaps at sea.

Save all of us, bowing at your feet; save those whom infirmity keeps from being here with us, but who are present with their souls and their suffering.

Also save those who are absent by their obstinate will, the wayward children, the greatest unfortunates, for they have lost the Light, the Way, and the Life in losing your Son, authentic Truth.

And in order to penetrate with our prayer into your merciful Heart, O Mary, here we are, stripping ourselves of rancor, of the spirit of revenge, of the thirst to be cruel as others are with us. In this hour we remember that we are all created by the Father, that we are all brethren of the Son, that we are all loved by the Spirit. In this hour we remember the prayer of your Jesus, a Martyr for our sake -- "Father, forgive them" -- and we repeat it for all, over all, so as to be forgiven, in turn, by God and saved by You.

Hail, Mary! From your pierced Heart send down upon us the grace of salvation for this city, for our country, for the whole world, which is dying amidst the ruins after having lost sight of Heaven.

Holy Mary, pray for us. And if the will of God should have to be fulfilled in us by the shedding of blood, be at our side at the hour of death to take us with You, Mary,²⁴ to see You and thank You, in the midst of the eternal splendors of God. Amen.

The Forerunners

Antichrist's Reign

Peace/Truce

End/Judgment

Constant Vigilance To Preserve God's Gift, The World's Rejection Of Grace, A Night Of Expiatory Affliction²⁵

²³ Viareggio. See August 15.

²⁴ The prayer ended here. The writer later erased "Mary" and added the words which follow, specifying, in a pencil annotation, that there were "added words," except for "Amen."

²⁵ NB43, June 7, 1943 and Copied Today, the 14th, p. 61

First of all, I express my thanks here for your charitable thought in bringing me a copy of the Entreaty and for being good enough to accept my slip of paper so benevolently.²⁶ It is not, however, “my” entreaty. The only thing that is mine is the labor of writing it down. The thought is not mine. I am not so elevated as to be able to pull out of my heart such superhuman thoughts of forgiveness.

I told you yesterday that, while writing them and feeling them to be correct, I had to make a real moral effort to accept them. As you must have observed, on reading the notes concerning my life, I really do not possess the character of Job at all. As Maria Valtorta, I am very human in all that humanity brings with it -- in terms of oversensitiveness, pride, passions, and so on and so forth -- and, in order to enable Maria of the Cross to live, I must burn myself up at every instant so as to be reborn from my human ashes, a mystical phoenix, in a new form, and certainly more acceptable to the good Lord.

When the “voice” says to me,²⁷ “You are nothing; by yourself you would never be capable of accomplishing anything,” I am thoroughly convinced of the fact. I have no illusions about my carnality and my embryonic spiritual nature. I know that the former is as mad as a colt in the springtime and the latter is so embryonic that it is barely a faint sketch. I thus comfort my weakness and curb my matter with the Cross of Christ. Only when clinging to Him, Crucified, can I keep my soul standing straight and only by hammering down my flesh with nails that are firmly riveted and extremely mortifying can I keep it in its place, subdued, powerless to accomplish its whims.

Let us therefore not say “my entreaty.” It belongs to Another. I should not appropriate what is not mine. I would grow proud over it, lying to myself, to the world, and to God. If those words have been useful -- and they could not fail to be, for they came from realms of light, and what light! -- let us give thanks to the Lord for it, and that’s all.

There are two things that most of all keep me attentive, with my ears open and my eyes vigilant to watch for the slightest movement of the Enemy of souls, who slinks, creeps in, and whistles his seductive song so slyly to hypnotize us and place us at his mercy. On the one hand, there are the tendencies of the flesh, so arrogant in spite of all the hair shirts; on the other, the -- swellings of pride, which always tries to puff up... I instinctively feel that the former and the latter die three days after we do and that only the goodness of God and great, very great will on our part -- a tireless, prompt, watchful will -- can render them innocuous and sterilize them in the face of each new wave of their corrupting germs. And I also feel that if I let myself be clutched by the coils of sense or by those of haughtiness, the present state of grace would suddenly cease, before,

²⁶ She is addressing Father Migliorini. The “Entreaty” is dated June 5.

²⁷ In the dictation of May 28.

long before what is wanted by my Jesus, who does not stop holding me in his arms and whispering to me words of life.

Consider whether I would like to lose this blessedness through my own fault! It is that which keeps me from feeling the sting of human events assailing me, and the twofold sting of the memories crowding in. Everything skims over me; everything rushes over me like water, like a wave, like a breaker, but as long as the present blessedness lasts, I am like a block of crystal over which everything passes without leaving a trace, unable to penetrate.

The time will come when Jesus remains silent and lets me go. Never mind! What about it? Should I complain? No. I will certainly suffer, but I will accept the new trial, continuing to love Him, even if He leaves me alone. If He does, He will well know the reason why. And I shall certainly have more merit, in loving Him then, than I do now.

It's not so hard to be loving now, when He is so perceptibly loving! Unless he possesses the heart of Judas, anyone who sees himself loved loves. But the highest love is the one that is able to go on loving when it seems we are no longer loved. When this is done with men, we gain no advantage -- or quite rarely. But when one acts like this with the good Lord, then one can be certain that afterwards an even more intense period of love will come, for God always rewards after having tested us, if we have managed to be faithful.

Jesus says:

“I will go on speaking to you about grace,²⁸ which gives the life of the spirit.

“When God created the first man, in addition to the life of matter, until then inanimate, He infused into him the life of the spirit as well. He could not otherwise have said that He had made you in his image and likeness.

“None of you can image how perfect the first creature was. Only We, in the eternal present which is our eternity, can see the perfection of the regal work of our creative Intelligence. The seed of Adam, if Adam had been able to remain a *king* as We had made him, with power over all things and depending on God alone -- the dependence of a most beloved son -- would have been a seed of perpetual perfection. But there was a *defeated one* who was watching to take revenge.

“You, Maria, who say that from your heart thoughts of forgiveness could not emerge *spontaneously* because your human nature leads you to the spirit of vengeance and only out of regard for Me are you able to forgive -- have you ever considered that it was the spirit of revenge that ruined you, the children of Adam, and sent Me, the Son of God, to the cross?

²⁸ Mentioned in the dictation of June 6.

“Lucifer -- and He was the most beautiful of my beautiful creatures -- from the abyss into which he had fallen, eternally ugly after the blasphemous revolt against his Creator, was thirsty for revenge. To the first sin of conceit he thus added an endless series of crimes avenging himself for ages and ages. And the first act of vengeance was upon my creatures, Adam and Eve. On the perfection of my creation his poisoned tooth left the mark of its bestiality; communicating to you his very own lust for lasciviousness, vengeance, and haughtiness. And since then your spirit has been dueling in you against the poisons of the hellish bite.

“On some very rare occasions the spirit wins out over flesh and blood and gives earth and Heaven a new saint. Sometimes the spirit lives with difficulty, with slumps of lethargy in which it is as if dead and you live and act as creatures devoid of light, of my Light. At other times it is literally killed by the creature, who voluntarily forfeits the throne of a child of God and becomes worse than a beast -- turning into a demon, the child of a demon.

“In truth I tell you that over two thirds of the human race belong to this category, which lives under the sign of the Beast. For this category I died in vain.

“The law of those marked by the Beast is antithetical to my Law. In the former, the flesh dominates and generates works of flesh. In the latter, the spirit dominates and generates works of spirit. When the spirit dominates, the kingdom of God is there. When the flesh dominates, the kingdom of Satan is there.

“The infinite Mercy animating the Triad has given your spirit all the aid to remain the ruler. It has given the sacrament removing the sign of the Beast on your flesh as children of Adam and impressing my Sign. It has given my Word of Life; it has given Me, Master and Redeemer; it has given my Blood in the Eucharist and on the Cross; it has given the Paraclete: the Spirit of truth.

“Whoever is able to remain in the Spirit generates works of the spirit. From the creature possessed by the Spirit there flow charity, gentleness, purity, science, and every good work joined to great humility. From the others there emerge, like hissing snakes, vices, deceits, acts of lust, and crimes, for their heart is a nest of hellish snakes.

“But where are those who are able to tend towards the life of the spirit and make themselves worthy to welcome in themselves the vital inpouring of the Consoler, who comes with all his gifts, but wants a prompt spirit, desirous of Him, for this throne? No, the world does not want this Spirit, who makes you good. The world wants power at any price, wealth at any price, the satisfaction of sense at any price, all the joys of the earth at any price, and rejects and curses the Holy Spirit and impugns his Truth and overdresses in prophetic robes, speaking words not emerging from within the Most Holy Trinity, but from the cave of Satan.

“And this is not and shall not be forgiven. Ever. And you see that it is not forgiven. God withdraws into the height of his Heavens because man rejects his love and lives for and in the flesh. These are the causes of your ruin and of our silence. From the depths there emerge the tentacles of Satan; on earth man proclaims himself to be a god and curses the true God; on high Heaven closes. And this is indeed mercy, for in closing it holds back the thunderbolts you deserve.

“A new Pentecost would encounter hearts harder and fouler than a boulder that had sunk into a pool of mud. Remain, therefore, in the mud you have wanted, waiting for a command, which admits no rebellion, to pull you out of it and separate the children of the spirit from the children of the flesh.”

And now, good Jesus, let me speak.²⁹ You have said so many things today that I can’t even copy them all.³⁰ And in the first hours I was so tired and suffering that I labored to follow your sweet voice. Afterwards it went better. But now pain is gripping me. It is an hour of Gethsemane.

Who am I suffering for? What soul is it that needs this agony of mine to be healed, to hope, to go back to You? I will never know on earth, but I am convinced that it exists and that I must drink this bitterness of mine for an experi-

²⁹ *Maria’s heart-felt response to Jesus’ dictation should be ours living in these times.*

³⁰ This statement, along with other similar ones we shall encounter, seems to contrast with what has always been asserted -- the assumption that Maria Valtorta wrote directly in the notebooks, straight off, without rereading or correcting.

Marta Diciotti, when questioned by us, specified that Maria received an initial group of notebooks from Father Migliorini in order to write the memoirs of her life. Once the *Autobiography* was finished, Maria wanted to return, along with the seven notebooks used in that manner, those that had not been used as well. But the priest wanted her to keep them. In them, shortly thereafter, Maria began to write the dictations, and Father Migliorini had to start supplying her with other notebooks, which she used, sometimes writing even on the fly-leaves, or on scraps of paper that she later added among the notebook pages. Since she always had to remain in bed, she would write by holding a board over her knees, which she had herself carefully lined with cloth, adding an internal pocket where she kept the notebook during pauses.

Marta Diciotti, like other witnesses, is unable to recall whether Maria Valtorta also wrote on just anything she happened to have and later copied into the notebook (see June 21, for example). But she assumes Maria may sometimes have used that method, perhaps at the outset, when she might have been caught by surprise by the “voice” ordering her to Write, or when she did not foresee the scope of her mission as a writer.

We add that one sometimes gets the impression that the writer, when using the term “copy,” meant “to write after having listened,” almost as if she were recalling a previously received dictation (for instance, see the annotation alongside the date June 8; the beginning of the dictation dated June 11; and June 15). Interesting explanations of the way the dictations were received are supplied by Maria Valtorta herself in the texts dated November 3 and November 4.

atory purpose. I do so willingly even if tears run down my cheeks. But let me weep on your Heart, for it is sweet to love thereupon and to suffer.

All forms of sadness come in waves. You know them all, without my listing them for You, and both You and I also know what is concealed behind this black screen seeking to enfold me. I close my eyes in order not to see it. I act like children afraid of the dark. And tonight I am just like a poor girl alone in an unlit place. Every corner is a hiding place for shadows taking on frightening shapes. If I close my eyes very tight, after staring at You fixedly as one looks at the sun, nothing is left on the background of my retina but your Image; if I cling to You every so tightly, I am no longer aware of the solitude around me, from which so many dangers may arise for me. I feel your arms around me, and even if I cry, I am no longer afraid.

Take my tears tonight. I have only this to give You on this night of affliction. I don't even say to You, "Take this affliction away from me;" I say only, "Thy will be done, but help me, Jesus."

Yes, help me, good Master. Don't let me go. All the pain You want, Lord, but always be close by. I know, I believe that this moral torment is not without a good purpose; I know, I hope that it is not useless; I know that if I suffer in peace, on your Heart peace will remain in me, and the devil's acrimony will be unable to disturb it. I thus say to You, "Here I am, for the sake of your love, to do your Will..."

No later than this morning I said my present blessedness keeps me from feeling the sting of human events. Tonight, however, I have felt the bite of the needs of the hour. And I have suffered so much for this reason. If I had suffered alone, it would have been a spasmodic suffering. But, well knowing that no human creature could console me, I turned to You in faith. You want these acts of loving faith to compensate You for all the acts of lovelessness which negate. And you immediately reward the generous soul by giving it consolation.

Now I have learned. And I at once come to take refuge in You; I am not satisfied with praying to You; I press my daring further and come into your arms. You are my God, but You are also my Brother and Spouse; therefore, in addition to praying to You, I can also embrace You so as not to feel so alone in the face of a future which is sad for all, but for me laden with even more painful uncertainties.

Hold me this way throughout this very sad month; hold me this way until death. Even if You do not speak, it is enough for You to let me remain upon your Heart. Remember your agony, Lord, and be the comforting Angel for your tiny host...

Explanation Of The Different Effects Of The Eucharist³¹

Jesus says:

“If my Flesh is really food and my Blood is really drink, why are your souls starving to death? Why don't you grow in the life of grace?

“There are many for whom it is as if my churches did not have a tabernacle. They are the ones who have repudiated or forgotten Me. But there are also many who feed on Me. And yet they do not Progress. Whereas in others, with every union with Me as Eucharist, there is an increase in grace. I will explain to you the reasons for these differences.

“There are the perfect, who seek Me only because *they know that my joy should be received in men's hearts and that they have no greater joy than this one, in becoming one with Me.* In these the Eucharistic encounter becomes fusion, and the ardor issuing forth from Me and given off by them is so intense that, like two metals in a crucible, we become one. Of course, the more perfect the fusion is, the more the creature takes on my imprint, my properties, my beauty. Those you call ‘Saints’ -- that is, the perfect who have understood who I am -- are thus able to unite themselves to Me.

“But into *all* the souls who come to Me *with a true impetus and a pure heart* I bring unspeakable graces and transfuse my grace, so that they proceed on the way of Life, and even if they fail to reach a resounding sanctity, recognized by the world, they always reach eternal life, for whoever is in Me has eternal life.

“For *all* the souls who are able to come to Me with the ardor of the former and the trust of the latter and who give Me all that is in their power to give Me -- that is, *all* the love they are capable of -- I am ready to work prodigious miracles in order to unite Myself to them. The most beautiful heaven for Me is in the hearts of the creatures who love Me. For them, if the rage of Satan were to destroy all the churches, I would be capable of descending from the Heavens in the form of the Eucharist. My angels would bear Me to the souls hungry for Me, living Bread descending from Heaven.

“Besides, it's nothing new. When faith was still a flame of living love, I was capable of going to seraphic souls buried in hermitages or in walled-up cells. Cathedrals are not necessary to contain Me. *A heart that love consecrates is enough for Me.* Even the most enormous and splendid cathedral is always too

³¹ NB43, June 10, 1943, p. 71

narrow and poor for Me, God, who fill all that is with Myself.³² A human work is subject to the limitations of the human, and I am infinite. Whereas your hearts are not narrow and poor for Me if charity sets them aflame. And the most beautiful cathedral is that of your souls inhabited by God.

“God is in you when you are in grace. And it is your hearts that God wants to make into an altar for Himself. In the early times of my Church there were no cathedrals, but I had a heart worthy of Myself in every Christian heart.

“Then there are the ones who come to Me only when incited by need or spurred by fear. Then they come to knock at the Tabernacle, which opens, always granting comfort, and often, if it is useful, the grace requested. But I would like man to come to Me not only to ask, but also to give.

“Then there are the ones who approach the Table, where I become food, out of habit. In these the fruits of the Sacrament last for that short while during which the Species last and then vanish. As they do not include any impetus in coming to Me, they do not progress in the life of the spirit, which is essentially a life of charity. I am Charity and bring charity, but my charity comes to languish in these lukewarm souls that nothing is able to heat up more.




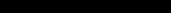
“Another group is that of the Pharisees. There are some even now -- it is a couch grass that doesn't die out. They act ardent, but are colder than death. Always just like the ones who put Me to death, placing themselves clearly on display; swollen with pride, full of falsehood, sure of possessing perfection, without mercy; except for themselves, convinced they are an example for the world. They are instead the ones who scandalize the little ones and separate them from Me, for their lives are the antithesis of what they should be, and their piety involves form, but not substance and, as soon as they leave the altar, turns into hardness towards their brothers and sisters. These eat their condemnation, for I forgive many things, knowing your weakness, but I do not forgive a lack of charity, hypocrisy, and pride. I flee from these hearts as quickly as possible.

³² St. Francis of Assisi, the Seraphic Father: *‘He found himself wandering about the outskirts of his home town of Assisi in the hills of Umbria – breathtaking vistas at every turn, but he seemed to hardly notice. Until he came upon San Damiano, a little church in need of a good bit of repair. He entered and knelt down underneath a large wooden crucifix painted in the Byzantine style of an icon. The open eyes of Jesus on the cross seemed to lock him in a stare that was both intimidating and beckoning at the same time. He couldn’t look away as feelings of doubt and fear, guilt and desire welled up within him. “Lord, what do you want me to do?” he asked. “Show me what you want me to do with my life.” And the Lord answered! A voice as clear as the day responded: “Francis, go and rebuild my church which, as you see, is falling down.” That was all he heard. That was all he needed to hear. It took a bit longer, however, to realize that Jesus wasn’t asking him to physically rebuild San Damiano as well as a few other rundown churches near Assisi. He did that, of course, but it gradually dawned on him that his vocation was to rebuild the church, the human institution that was perilously close to falling apart.’*

“On considering these groups, it is easy to understand why the Eucharist has not yet made the world a Heaven, as it should have done. It is you that obstruct this advent of love, which would save you as individuals and as a society. If you really fed on Me with your heart, with your soul, with your mind, with your will, with your strength, your intellect -- in short, with all your faculties -- hatreds would collapse, and, with hatreds, wars; there would no longer be cases of fraud, of calumny; or disorderly passions creating adulteries and, along with them, murders, the abandonment and suppression of the innocent. Mutual forgiveness would be not on your lips, but in the hearts of all, and you would be forgiven by my Father.

“You would live as angels, spending your days worshipping Me in yourselves and invoking Me for the next coming. My constant Presence in your thought would keep you far from sin, which always begins with thought’s intrigue, which later translates into action. But from the heart made into a tabernacle there would emerge only supernatural thoughts, and the earth would be sanctified thereby.

“The earth would become an altar, an enormous altar ready to receive the second coming of the Christ, Redeemer of the world.”

			
The Forerunners	Antichrist’s Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment

The Stigmatization Of Faithful Souls, The Need To Pray That There May Be Sufficient True Priests³³

After Communion

Jesus says:

“First listen to what I say to you and then, out of obedience to Father,³⁴ you shall copy the lesson on the consecrated.

“Maria, do you know why things are enlightened for you which are not at all reserved for you *alone*? Because you were not content with following Jesus as far as the Cenacle, but, following behind your Spouse in pain, you also entered the torture chamber. Great generosity, great charity, and great faithfulness are needed to do this, and I know how to reward these three greats.

“When I was arrested, apostles and disciples, who had been able to follow Me, swearing fidelity to Me until the breaking of the bread, fled. Only two followed Me. John, the loving one, and Peter, the impulsive one. But Peter, like all impulsive people, broke his impetus in the face of the first crag of hard-

³³ NB43, June 14, 1943, p. 81

³⁴ Father Migliorini.

ship and fear and stopped at the gate. John, all love, defied everything and everyone and went in.

“There was more courage in John in that instant than in all the rest of his life. Afterwards, during his long apostolate, He was confirmed by the Holy Spirit and helped, in the early years, by my Mother, Teacher of fortitude and apostolate. In addition, He had been confirmed in faith by my Resurrection, by the first miracles, and by seeing my doctrine spread more and more.

“But that night He was *alone*. Against him he had a furious crowd; Satan was puffing out his *doubts* to carry away the others, especially those faithful, into the doubt which is the first step in denial. Against him he had the cowardice of his flesh, which felt the danger for the Master and which felt the same danger overflowing upon his followers.

“But John, love and purity, remained and entered behind his Master, his Spouse, his King. The King of pain, the Spouse of pain, the Master of pain.

“As long as a soul does not agree to be admitted into the ‘secret of pain’ which I, the Christ, tasted to the utmost, it cannot claim to know my doctrine in depth or receive illuminations exceeding the small illuminations granted to all.

“From my Brow crowned with thorns, from my pierced hands, from my perforated feet, and from my rent chest I emit rays of special light. But they go to those who cleave to my Wounds and my pain and find pain and wounds to be more beautiful than every other created thing.

“Stigmatization is not always bloody. But every soul in love with Me to the point of following Me into torture and the death that is life bears my stigmata in its heart, in its mind. My rays are weapons that wound and lights that illuminate. They are grace that enters and vivifies; they are grace that instructs and elevates.

“By my benignity I give to all, but I give infinitely to whoever gives himself to Me totally, And believe that in truth if the works of the just are written in the great Book which will be opened on the last day, the works of my loving ones reaching the point of holocaust, the works of the voluntary victims, in my likeness, for the redemption of their brothers and sisters, are written in my Heart and shall never be erased, forever and ever.

“Moreover, the fact that you cannot explain how the phenomenon occurs of seeing certain special things, reserved for you alone, and *clearly illuminated*, is only natural. Don’t even try to explain. You would say many words and you would say nothing. They are things that are accepted and not explained, not even to oneself They are accepted with the simplicity of a child, with the simplicity of a dove.

“What the good Jesus tells one to give is given to one’s neighbor, and the rest is kept to oneself, as precious daisies enclosed in one’s heart, in an effort to merit many others with a life entirely immersed in charity, faithfulness, generosity, and purity.”

*Heard on June 10 and Copied Today, the 14th*³⁵

Jesus says:

“Pray, offer, and suffer *a great deal* for my priests. A lot of salt has become insipid, and souls suffer on this account, losing the savor of Me and my Doctrine.

“I have been telling you this for some time, but you do not want to hear this. And you do not want to write this. You draw back. I understand why. But others before you have spoken of it, by my inspiration, and they were saints. It is useless to want to close one’s eyes and ears so as not to see and not to hear. The truth cries out, even in silence. It cries out with deeds, which are the mightiest of words.

“Why don’t you repeat the prayer of Mary Magdalene de’ Pazzi? At one time you always said it. Why don’t you offer *part* of your daily sufferings for *all* of the Priesthood. You pray and suffer for my Vicar. That’s fine. You pray and suffer for some consecrated men and women who entreat you or towards whom you have a special duty of gratitude. That’s fine. But it is not enough. And what do you do for the others? You have established an intention to suffer for the clergy on Wednesday. It is not enough. It is necessary for you to pray *every* day for my priests and offer part of your sufferings for this motive. Never grow weary of praying for them, who are the ones most responsible for the spiritual life of Catholics.

“If it suffices for a layman to do the work of ten so as not to cause scandal, my priests must do that of a hundred, a thousand. They should be like their Master in purity, charity, detachment from the things of the world, humility, and generosity. Instead, the same slackening of Christian life which is in the laity is in my priests and, in general, in all the persons consecrated by special vows. But I will speak to you about them later.³⁶

“I am now speaking to you about priests, about those having the sublime honor of perpetuating my Sacrifice from the altar, of touching Me, of repeating my Gospel.

“They ought to be flames. They are instead smoke. They do wearily what they must do. They do not love one another and do not love you as shepherds who must be ready to give their entire selves, even to the point of sacrificing their lives, for their sheep. They come to my altar with their hearts full of earthly concerns. They consecrate Me with their minds elsewhere, and not even my Communion sets aflame in their spirits that charity which ought to be alive in all, but which in my priests ought to be extremely lively.

³⁵ See June 7.

³⁶ In the dictation of June 15.

“When I think of the deacons and the priests of the Church in the catacombs and compare them to those of today, I feel infinite compassion for you, throngs who are left without, or with too little, food of my Word.

“Those deacons and priests had a whole malevolent society against them; they had the public authorities against them. Those deacons and priests had to carry out their ministry in the midst of a thousand hardships; the slightest act of imprudence could cause them to fall into the hands of tyrants and lead to death by torture. And yet how much faithfulness, love, chastity, and heroism existed in them! They consolidated the nascent Church with their blood and their love and made each of their hearts an altar.

“Now they shine in the heavenly Jerusalem like as many eternal altars upon which I, the Lamb, repose, taking delight in them, my intrepid confessors, the pure who were able to wash away the filth of paganism which had saturated them for years and years before their conversion to the Faith and which sprayed its slime even after their conversion, like an ocean of mire against indestructible cliffs.

“They had cleansed themselves in my Blood and had come to Me in white stoles covered with the ornament of their generous blood and their impetuous charity. They had no external robes or material signs of their priestly militancy. But they were Priests in spirit.

“Now there is the exterior of the robe, but their hearts are no longer mine.

“I have mercy on you, flocks without shepherds. This is why I still hold back my lightning bolts: because I have mercy. I know that much of what you are comes from not being supported.

“*There are too few real priests* who reach the breaking point to lavish themselves on their children! Never as now has it been necessary to ask the Master of the harvest to send *true* workers to his harvest, which is falling in ruins because the number of *true tireless* workers -- upon whom my gaze rests with infinite, grateful blessings and love -- is not sufficient.

“If only I could say to all my Priests, ‘Come, good and faithful servants -- enter into the joy of your Lord!’

“Pray for the secular and conventual clergy.

“The day there were no more truly priestly priests in the world, the world would end in a horror that words cannot describe. The time of the ‘abomination of desolation’³⁷ would come. But with such a terrible violence that it would be a hell brought onto the earth.

“Pray and tell others to pray that all the salt will not become tasteless in all except in One, in the last Martyr who will be present for the last Mass, for

³⁷ ET: Daniel 9:27; 11:31; 12:11; Matthew 24:15; Mark 13:14.

until the last day my militant Church will exist and the Sacrifice will be carried out.

“The more *true* priests there are in the world when the times are fulfilled, the shorter and less cruel the time of the Antichrist and the final convulsions of the human race will be. For ‘the just’ about whom I speak when I preach the end of the world are the true Priests, those truly consecrated in the convents scattered over the earth, the victim souls, an unknown array of martyrs that only my eye knows, while the world does not see them, and those who act with *true* purity of faith. But these latter are -- even though unaware of it themselves -- consecrated and victims.”

The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment

The Battle Between Angels And Demons, Eucharistic Union With Christ As Seen In Mary³⁸

I would like to explain a little by way of introduction.

I was praying. It was 12 noon, and I kept on praying, for in these six hours of the morning I had been interrupted so often that I had been unable to finish my morning prayers. The last interruption, a visit by an anguished young mother. In short, it was noon, and I had not been able to concentrate in peace for ten minutes in a row.

While I practiced patience by the bushel, to comfort myself I thought of the words heard quite late last night, and I promised myself again I would copy them down³⁹ to give some sweetness to my heart. For they are words of a very lofty tenderness. My soul was left perfumed by them. But here I have to stop praying to write what I am copying now, which seems to me to be a reply to one of your questions expressed in a letter, a question I was no longer thinking about.

And now that I have introduced this preface, I shall go forward, first copying today's words and then the ones last night.

Jesus says:

“Some days ago Father⁴⁰ wrote that he was perplexed about the true source of the spiritual scourge, ‘for a kingdom divided within itself is no longer

³⁸ NB43, June 19, 1943, p. 96

³⁹ See June 7.

⁴⁰ Father Migliorini.

a kingdom.’⁴¹ I will show Father that *this can be, for the division is purely apparent.*

“Lucifer, in his manifestations, has always sought to imitate God. Just as God has given every nation its protecting angel, Lucifer has given it its demon. But as the different angels of the Nations obey a single God, so the different demons of the nations obey a single Lucifer.

“The order given by Lucifer in the present episode to the different demons *is not* different according to the country. *It is a single order for all. By which one understands that the kingdom of Satan is not divided and thus endures.*

“This order may be enunciated as follows: ‘Sow horror, despair, and errors so that the peoples will separate themselves from God, cursing Him.’

“The demons obey and sow horror and despair, extinguish faith, strangle hope, and destroy charity. Over the ruins they sow hatred, lust, and atheism. *They sow hell. And they succeed, for they find the ground already favorable.*

“My angels also fight to defend the country I have assigned to them. But my angels *do not find favorable ground.* Hence they are left in a losing position with respect to the enemies of hell. To win, my angels should be helped by souls living in and for Good. *Living in Me.* They find some. *But there are too few* in comparison to those that do not believe, do not love, do not forgive, and are unable to suffer.

“It is appropriate to repeat, ‘Satan has asked to sift you.’⁴² *And from the sifting it turns out that corruption is as in the times of the flood, aggravated by the fact that you have had the Christ and his Church, whereas in the times of Noah that was not the case.*

“I previously stated⁴³ and repeat,⁴⁴ ‘This is a struggle between Heaven and hell.’ You are nothing but a deceitful screen. *Behind Your ranks angels and demons battle. Behind your pretexts lies the true reason: Satan’s battle against Christ.*

“*This is one of the first selections of humanity, which is approaching its final hour, to separate the harvest of the elect from the harvest of the reprobate.* But, unfortunately, the harvest of the elect is small in comparison to the other.

“*When Christ comes to defeat the perpetual adversary in his Prophet, He will find few marked, in their spirits, by the Cross.*”⁴⁵

⁴¹ ET: Matthew 12:25; Mark 3:24; Luke 11:17.

⁴² ET: Luke 22:31.

⁴³ ET: Jesus said so to Maria Valtorta on June 4, 1943 (Q43:24-25), in a text not quoted in this book for the same reason as in note 6 [footnote 16 here in].

⁴⁴ In the dictation of June 4.

⁴⁵ ET: See Ezechiel 9:4 & Apocalypse 7:3.

And this is the other passage of last night.

Jesus says:

“To obtain real fruits from the Eucharist, it must not be considered as an episode repeated at more or less distant points in time, but must be made the basic thought in life.

“To live thinking of Me-as-Eucharist, who hasten to come or have come into you, making the encounter a continuous present which lasts as long as your lives. Not to separate oneself in spirit from Me, to act in the ray issuing forth from the Eucharist, never to go outside its orbit, like planets revolving around the sun and living by its splendor.

“Here, too, I propose Mary as a model for you. Her union with Me must be the model for your union with Me. The life of Mary, my Mother, was entirely Eucharistic. The life of Maria, the little victim, must be entirely Eucharistic.

“If Eucharist means communion, Mary lived Eucharistically nearly all her life.⁴⁶ *For I was in my Mother before being in the world as a man. Nor, when I was no longer a man in the world, did I cease to be in Her.* We have never separated since the moment when obedience was sanctified up to the height of God and I became flesh in her womb, so pure that the angels are less pure in comparison, so holy that no ciborium receiving Me has such holiness.

“Only in the breast of God is there a perfection of holiness greater than that of Mary. After the Triune God, She is the Holy of Holies.

“If it were granted to you mortals to see the beauty of Mary as it is, you would remain enraptured and sanctified by it. There is no comparison in the universe that serves to tell you what my Mother is. Be holy, and you will see Her.

“And if to see God is the joy of the blessed, to see Mary is the joy of all Paradise. For in Her not only do the angelical choirs and the hosts of Saints take delight, but the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit contemplate Her as the most beautiful work of their Trinity of love.

“The two of us have never separated. She aspired to Me with all the strength of her virginal, immaculate heart awaiting the promised Messiah. *The purest communion of desire* which attracted Me from the depths of Heaven. More lively communion from the time of the blessed annunciation until the hour of death on the Cross.

“Our spirits were always united by love. Most intense communion of love and immense pain during my martyrdom and in the days of my burial. *Eucharistic communion* after the glorious Resurrection and Ascension until the

⁴⁶ The concept is again taken up and explained in the dictation of July 2.

Assumption, which was eternal union of the most pure Mother with her Divine Son.

“Mary was the perfect Eucharistic soul. She was able to entertain her God with ardent love, superangelical purity, and continuous worship. How could I separate from that heart that was living by Me? I remained even after the consummation of the species.

“The words spoken to my Mother in the thirty-three years in which I was her son on earth are nothing in comparison to the conversations which I-as-Eucharist had with Her-as-Ciborium. But those words are too divine and too pure for the mind of man to be able to know and for man’s lips to repeat. In the Temple of Jerusalem only the Priest went into the Holy of Holies, where the Ark of the Lord was. But in the Temple of the Heavenly Jerusalem only I, God, go in and know the secrets of the Most Holy Ark that is Mary, my Mother.

“Strive to imitate Mary. And, since it is something too arduous, ask Mary to help you. What is impossible for man is possible for God -- extremely possible, moreover, if asked for in Mary, with Mary, and through Mary.”

The Forerunners Antichrist’s Reign Peace/Truce End/Judgment
Maria’s “Little Horeb,” The Blessed Death Of The Innocent⁴⁷

...⁴⁸

Jesus further states today:

“Today, too, which is the feast of my divine Body, Satan has struck Me in my Churches and in my sons and daughters. I, the Host of Peace, do not pass triumphally through your lands, on carpets of flowers, amid songs of hosanna. I fall among the ruins, into the hellish din of hatred against Charity,⁴⁹ unleashed in its full force.

“The flowers of today, Corpus Christi of the time of wrath, are my slain children. And blessed, among them, are those who fall innocently, whose death without rancor becomes as beautiful as a martyrdom. My Blood is not seen amidst the blood of the slain. I remain with my whiteness as a Host. It is the blood of the others that splashes Me, as it is the cruelty of those subject to the Enemy that wounds Me and, with Me, wounds those who are hosts like Me.

⁴⁷ NB43, June 24, 1943, p. 110

⁴⁸ The two preceding sections regarding “Little Horeb” are omitted.

⁴⁹ ET: Here Jesus is referring to the World-War-II destruction of churches, which scattered Consecrated Hosts amidst the wreckage. Jesus told Maria Valtorta about that type of desecration earlier (Q43:24), in a text not quoted in this book for the same reason as in note 6 [16 herein].

From the greatest among you -- upright as if on a mystical cross between the temple and the sky, and wounded, spat upon, pierced, flagellated, like his Lord, by the lie sold to the Enemy -- to the smallest child with his throat cut, like an innocent lamb. *But these hosts are not immolated to no avail. In them there is no stain of hatred. They are the victims. Eternally blessed in being victims!*

“On my dearest children, *the true children*, my sign remains. *I have marked you all, you that love Me and that I love. More than the tiara crowning him, that sign is divinely indicative on the forehead of my current Peter,⁵⁰ on the Pontiff of Peace in whom there is no ferment of hatred. More than any halo, that sign shines on the heads of the victims who fall with Me under the weapons of Satan and who are the forerunners of the second coming of Christ.*

“And may the angels of the praying churches that are stricken, worshipping the destroyed Hosts, themselves gather in the innocent souls, whose weeping will be consoled in Heaven.”

The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment
-----------------	--------------------	-------------	--------------

The Persistence Of Temptation, A Comparison Of The Trinity To Light⁵¹

Jesus says:

“It should not cause astonishment that a soul experiences temptations. Indeed, the more the creature has advanced on my Way, the more violent temptation is.

“Satan is envious and cunning. He therefore unfolds his intelligence where more effort is needed to snatch a soul away from Heaven. There is no need to tempt a man of the world who lives for the flesh. Satan knows that he is already working on his own to kill his soul and lets him act. But a soul that wants to be God's attracts all of his spite.

“But souls must not tremble. They must not lose heart. *To be tempted is not an evil. It is an evil to yield to temptation.*

“There are big temptations. In the face of them upright souls place themselves at once in a state of defense. *But there are little temptations which can make you fall without your realizing.* They are the Enemy's refined weapons. He uses them when he sees the soul is wary and alert regarding the big ones. He then overlooks the major instruments and resorts to these, so subtle that they enter you from anywhere.

“Why do I allow this? Where would the merit be if there were no struggle? Could you call yourselves *mine* if you did not drink from my chalice?

⁵⁰ ET: Pius XII, pope from 1939 to 1958.

⁵¹ NB43, July 1, 1943, p. 127

“What do you think? That my chalice was only that of pain? No, creatures who love Me. Christ -- He tells you so to give you courage -- experienced temptation before you.

“Do you think it was only the one in the desert? No. Then Satan was defeated by major means opposed to his major attempts. But in truth I tell you that I, the Christ, was tempted on other occasions, The Gospel does not say so. But, as my Beloved Disciple states, ‘If all the miracles worked by Jesus were to be narrated, the earth would not suffice to hold the books.’

“Reflect, dear disciples. How often must Satan have tempted the Son of Man to persuade Him to desist from his evangelization? What do you know of the exhaustion of the flesh wearied in continual wandering about, and of the exhaustion of the soul, *which saw and felt itself to be surrounded by enemies and by souls that followed Him out of curiosity or the hope of human gain?* How often, in times of solitude, the Tempter encircled Me with prostration! And in the night of Gethsemane, can’t you imagine the refinement with which he tried to win the last battle between the Savior of the human race and hell?

“It is not granted to the human mind to know and penetrate into the secret of that struggle between the divine and the demoniac, Only I, who have lived through it, am familiar with it, and I thus tell you that *I am wherever anyone suffering for the sake of Good is, I am wherever a follower of Mine is. I am wherever a little Christ is, I am wherever sacrifice is consummated.*

“And I tell you, souls that expiate for everyone, I tell you: *Fear not. I am with you until the end.* I, the Christ, have overcome the world, death,, and the devil at the price of my Blood. *But I give you, victim souls, my Blood against the venom of Lucifer.*”

Jesus says:

“To know the mystery of God’s nature is not granted to your very limited intellectual capacities, to your embryonic spirituality. But the mystery becomes more knowable for the spiritual, amidst the mass of the so-called spiritual. The mystery is revealed with greater clarity to the lovers of the Son, to those who are *truly marked* by my Blood, because my Blood is Knowledge, and my Predilection is a School.

“Today⁵² is a great feast in Heaven because all Heaven is today singing the Sanctus to the Lamb whose Blood was shed for the Redemption of man. You are one of the few, too few, creatures who venerate my Blood as it should be venerated; since it was shed that blood has been speaking with words of eternal life and supersensible knowledge. If my Blood were more loved and venerated more invoked and believed in, much of the evil which leads you into the abyss would be dispelled.

⁵² July 1, Feast of the Most Precious Blood.

“This Blood spoke when it was not yet represented by the Mosaic lamb, behind the veil of the prophetic words under the sign of the preserving *Tau*; it spoke, after it was shed, through the mouths of the Apostles; it cries out its power in the Apocalypse; it invites from the mouths of the mystics with its calling. But it is not loved. It is not remembered. It is not invoked. It is not venerated. My Church has so many feasts. But a most solemn feast for my Blood is lacking. *And salvation is in my Blood!*

“Today; the feast of my Blood, I shall clarify a mystery for you. Say, ‘Glory be to the Father and to the Son and to the Holy Spirit’ for it is about Us that I want to speak. Figures have been necessary for your human dullness to conceive the Father and the Spirit, incorporeal beings of infinite beauty; whom you, however, do not conceive, with your human senses. To the point that you do not readily turn to Them, with *all* the fullness of thought, to invoke Them as you invoke Me, whom you conceive of as the God-Man. You thus do not understand even distantly the incomparable mystery of our Trinity.

“To conceive of God comparisons to created beings must not be made. God is not to be compared. *He is*. In being there is everything. But being has no body, and *the eternal Being has no body*.

“Look: God is light. This is the only thing that can still represent God without being antithetical to his spiritual Essence. The light exists, and yet it is incorporeal. You see it, but you cannot touch it. It exists.

“*Our Trinity is light*. An unbounded light. *The Source of Itself, living by itself and acting in Itself. The universe’s greatness does not equal its Infinity*. Its essence fills the Heavens, glides over Creation, and holds sway over the infernal caverns. It does not penetrate you -- that would be the end of Hell -- but it overwhelms them with its glowing, which is beatific in Heaven, comforting on earth, and terrifying in Hell. *Everything is threefold in Us. Forms, effects, and powers*.

“*God is light*. A vast, majestic, and peaceful light is given by the Father. *An infinite circle which has embraced all Creation since the moment when ‘Let there be light’⁵³ was said until forever and ever, for God, who existed eternally, has been embracing the Creation since it existed and will continue to embrace all that -- in the final form, the eternal one, after the Judgment -- will remain of Creation*. He will embrace those who are eternal with Him in Heaven.

“Within the eternal circle of the Father there is a second circle, begotten by the Father, *working differently and yet not working in contrary fashion, for the Essence is one*. It is the Son. His light, more vibrant, not only gives life to bodies, *but gives Life to souls* that had lost it *by means of his Sacrifice*. It is a flood of powerful, gentle rays which *nourish your humanity and instruct your mind*.

⁵³ ET: Genesis 1:3.

“Within the second circle, produced by the two *workings* of the first circles, there is a third circle with even more vibrant, inflamed light. It is the Holy Spirit. *He is the Love produced by the relations of the Father with the Son, the intermediary between the Two, and a consequence of the Two, the wonder of wonders.*

“Thought created the Word, and Thought and the Word love one another. Love is the Paraclete. *He acts upon your spirit, your soul, and your flesh. For He consecrates the whole temple of your person, created by the Father and redeemed by the Son, created in the image and likeness of the Triune God.* The Holy Spirit is the chrism upon the creation of your person, made by the Father; He is grace to benefit from the Sacrifice of the Son; He is Knowledge and Light to understand the Word of God. A more concentrated Light, not because it is limited in comparison to the others, *but because it is the spirit of the spirit of God,* and because, in its condensation, it is most powerful, as it is most powerful in its effects.

“That is why I said, ‘When the Paraclete comes, He will instruct you.’ Not even I, who am the Father’s Thought that has become the Word, can make you understand what the Holy Spirit can make you understand with a single flash.

“If every knee must bend before the Son, *before the Paraclete every spirit must bend, for the Spirit gives life to the spirit.* It is Love that created the Universe, taught the first Servants of God, spurred the Father to give the Commandments, enlightened the Prophets, conceived the Redeemer with Mary, placed Me on the Cross, sustained the Martyrs, governed the Church, and works wonders of grace.

“A white fire, unbearable for human sight and nature, He concentrates in Himself the Father and the Son and is the incomprehensible Gem, who cannot be gazed upon, of our eternal Beauty. Fixed in the abyss of Heaven, He draws to Himself all the spirits of my triumphant Church and breathes into Himself those who are able to live by the spirit in the militant Church.

“Our Trinity, our threefold and single nature is set in a single splendor in that point from which all that is is generated in an eternal being.

“Say, ‘Glory be to the Father and to the Son and to the Holy Spirit.’”

He further states:

“On saying ‘ten just men,’ I did not intend to suggest that the Place where there are ten just men will be saved. But it may be understood without error that if ten *just and generous* souls gather together in prayer, *with a holy purpose,* to request mercy for a place, *I Will not reject their prayer.* Didn’t I say that I will hear the prayers offered by several persons in my Name? My words and my promises are unailing.

“But will the persons now gathering together to pray for this purpose be constant in faith, sacrifice, spiritual purity, and purity of intention? If there are some and they are as they should *be -- true priests* (those who pray for their brothers and sisters and immolate themselves are priests) -- *I will bless them* and grant what is asked for in my Name.”

...⁵⁴

The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment

The Two Kinds Of Spiritual Infirmities And “Possession” By God⁵⁵

Jesus says:

“I told you yesterday that there are types of infirmities which are out of the ordinary -- that is, willed by spiritual forces. Both God and Satan -- one acting from the abyss of Heaven, the other acting from the abyss of Hell -- strike certain creatures for different reasons and for different purposes.

“But, given the differing and opposed sources, one infirmity -- that which comes from God -- brings with it light and love for creatures that are martyrs of their God, drawing them from the sources of an immeasurable Light and an immeasurable Love. The other, proceeding from the stagnant abyss where Satan reigns, envelops People in darkness and torment.

“I said ‘*creatures that are martyrs*’ of their God. Indeed. The soul that has abandoned itself to its God completely becomes his martyr, God Himself here acts as the sacrificer; nor is the martyrdom of the creature abandoned to Love less bloody -- even if blood is not materially shed -- than that of the one who is immolated by an executioner. For not only flesh and blood, but intellect, soul, and spirit are tortured in a felicitous martyrdom whose end, after spiritual crucifixion -- which stigmatizes every capacity of being, in the flesh, blood, intellect, soul, and spirit, impressing my glorious seal -- is the inflamed embrace with the Fire Himself, with burning Charity, sinking into the blazing Unity which is our Trinity, complete knowledge of what God is, and possessing, and being possessed eternally by, God.

“Yes. There are two forms of spiritual infirmity, and there are two forms of spiritual possession. If someone who is grasped, tortured, crushed, and mastered by Satan is called ‘possessed,’ why, with even greater reason, can’t the one who is embraced, elevated, shaped, and mastered by God be called ‘possessed?’

⁵⁴ *Maria's subsequent comments regarding the indescribable beauty of the vision are omitted.*

⁵⁵ *NB43, July 3, 1943, p. 135*

“A beatific, sublime, joyful possession! The soul has only to abandon itself, in love, to the Love surrounding, embracing, penetrating, and transporting it, giving it new senses and knowledge unknown to mortals. It is to plunge into the abyss of God -- an abyss of Light, Knowledge, Charity, and all virtue. It is to plunge into the abyss of Peace.

“The soul emerges from it, in those rare instants in which it emerges - - increasingly rare, the more the soul is lost in God -- perfumed by the Essence of its God, and no stench of Earth or Hell can act upon its spirit, imbued with the divine aroma.

“The soul ‘possessed’ by God takes on his likeness to such an extent that even the external and material form of its being undergoes modifications. God shines from its gaze, from its words, from its smile, and from the new majesty of its expression, so that anyone coming into contact with it says, ‘There’s something not of this earth here.’

“The soul ‘possessed’ by God is a precious sealed vessel from which it exhales the aroma filling it. *Sealed because love consecrates it and possession makes it the property of One alone, and only the Alone opens and closes that seal affixed upon the spirit which has given itself to Him. It exhales* because God’s aroma is so powerful that it not only fills the inside of the vessel, but the matter imbibes it so that the spiritual scent spreads out from it and passes among the crowds, purifying them of the odor of flesh and blood.

“If creatures knew what ‘the possession’ of God is, they would all want to be ‘possessed.’ *But to know it one must complete the first step, the first act of generosity, of renunciation,* and then persevere in that act. The rest follows, for, as an electric wave emitted by pole A is attracted by the stronger pole Z, so the soul which has placed itself in the same way in the orbit of God is attracted by Him, from whatever point in the orbit it finds itself in.

“For I am the Alfa and the Omega,⁵⁶ and I embrace all that is. Only an opposing human will, which places one under the seal of the Beast, turns away my action, since I have made you free and do not do violence to your will. If, then, your will is flesh and blood that is, Satan -- my Will cannot act, for my Will is Spirit and acts on your spirit, and the spirit dies where matter reigns.

“One must be reborn in the spirit to be able to enter into God’s orbit and overcome the flesh and its master, Mammon. Then ‘possession’ takes place. A foretaste of Paradise on earth, the soul’s happy ascent to Heaven in death, the fullness of Paradise in my Kingdom, where those who are ‘mine’ will be with Me forever, light in Light, peace in Peace, joy in Joy; glory in Glory.”

⁵⁶ ET: Apocalypse 1:8; 21:6; 22:13.

The Choice Peter Had As Head, A Vision Of The Beast⁵⁷

Jesus says:

“And write, then. In what is supernatural, one must never be afraid. The one who dictates to you knows what is being said, and the one who reads you understands because I have also put him in a position to understand. So set aside all human reconsiderations. Remember that you are my spokesman; you must thus say what I tell you without reflecting in human terms on the impression that others may get from it.

“Therefore: The reasons for which I made Peter the head of the Church instead of making my Beloved One the head are varied and all just. Now don't go weighing Peter's love and John's on a scale to derive the reason for the choice from that. Your weights and your measures have no validity in Heaven. They were two different loves, as their temperaments, ages, and ways of loving were different. Different and equally aimed at the same goal -- Myself -- and equally dear to Me. So eliminate from this the objections and conjectures on love.

“Peter was the most mature of the apostles, already respected as a leader by other fishermen who later became apostles; as I stated,⁵⁸ he was familiar with life in all its facets of light and shadow and was endowed with strength of character, boldness, and an impulsiveness which was needed in those circumstances. By his painful experience, he was familiar with the weakness of an hour and *was able to understand the weaknesses of others in the hours of doubt and danger.*

“I have already stated this. *He was not the one who loved Me most. He was one who loved Me with all his capacity for loving, as, moreover, all of the others among the twelve did, including Judas, until he lent an ear to the seducer.*

“In the Church, which was to be formed among so many struggles and deceits, there was a need for someone who, by virtue of his age, authority, experience, and impetus, would be able to impose himself on others. And who was like Peter in these four gifts needed to form my Church?

“John was the youngest. With the soul of a flower, he did not know the evil in life. He was a lily with its bud still closed over the whiteness of its interior. He opened in the hour when my gaze descended into his heart, and he could no longer see anything but Me. He was a child with the heart of a hero and a dove. *Peter was the support for my Heart, which saw the present and the future,*

⁵⁷ NB43, July 20, 1943, p. 179

⁵⁸ In the dictation of July 19.

but John was the comfort. How much comfort just from his sweet smile, his pure glance, and his infrequent, but always so loving, words! To be close to John was for Me like resting near a fresh well, shadowed by plants on a carpet of flowers. He exuded peace.

“But, for the sake of prudence and justice, could I impose him on the others, who were older? One must bear in mind that they were men, destined to perfection, but still men. That is why my Intelligence chose Peter -- an adult, familiar with spiritual indigence, impulsive, and authoritarian -- over John -- meek, idealistic, young, and innocent.

“Peter was ‘practice,’ *practical genius*. John was ‘poetry;’ *poetic genius*. But when times are hard, not only the pens of poets are needed, but iron fists to grip the tiller tightly.

“To make up for it, I gave my Beloved One the vision of the times to come after having given him my most confidential secrets and my Mother. I could say that John, in the temporal order, is the last, and, in terms of the future, the first of the *great* prophets. For he closes the cycle begun by Moses regarding the Lamb that by his immolation saves the world, and he lifts up the veil covering over the last day.

“But believe that in Heaven my splendor crowns the brows of Peter and John with the same light, and it would be good for you not to make human comparisons regarding beings who are superhuman.”

Jesus further states:

“Consider my Splendor and my Beauty in comparison to the black monstrosity of the Beast.

“Don’t be afraid to look, even if it is a repellent spectacle. You are in my, arms. He cannot approach and harm you. Do you see him? He doesn’t even look at you. He already has so many quarries to follow after.

“Now do you feel you deserve to leave Me to follow him? And yet the World follows him and leaves Me for him

“See how gluttoned and throbbing he is. It is the hour of his feast. But also see how he seeks the shadow to act. He hates the Light -- he was called ‘Light-bearer!’ Do you see how he hypnotizes those who are not marked by my Blood? *He heaps up his efforts because he knows that this is his hour and that my hour is approaching when he will be eternally defeated.*

“His infernal cunning and Satanic intelligence are a continuous action of Evil -- in opposition to our Triune action of Good -- to increase his prey. *But cunning and intelligence would not prevail if my Blood were in men, along with their honest will. Man lacks too many things to have weapons to set against the Beast, and the latter knows this and acts openly, without even concealing himself with deceitful appearances.*

“May his repellent ugliness spur you towards ever-greater diligence and ever-greater penance. For yourself and for your unfortunate brothers and sisters, whose souls are blind or seduced and who do not see, or, on seeing him, run to meet the Evil One, provided they can get from him help for an hour to be paid for with an eternity of damnation.”

...⁵⁹

			
The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment

The Increase Of Sin And Pride And Jesus' Saving Efforts⁶⁰

Jesus says:

“I have already told you that what is stated in the ancient books bears reference to the present.^{61 62} It is as if a series of mirrors were to repeat a spectacle seen further back by bringing it ever forward.

“*The world repeats itself in its errors and acts of repentance -- with this difference, though: the errors have been increasingly perfected in the race's evolution towards so-called civilization, while the acts of repentance have become increasingly embryonic. Why? Because, with the world's passing from childhood to greater maturity, the world's malice and pride have grown.*

“Now you are at the culmination of the world's age and have also reached the culmination of malice and pride.

“Do not think, though, that you still have as long to live as you have lived. You are at the culmination, and that ought to mean you have just as long to live. But it shall not be so. The world's parabola descending towards the end will not be so long as the ascending one. *It will be a plunge into the end. Precisely malice and pride make you plunge. Two weights which drag you into the chasm of the end, to the tremendous judgment. Pride and malice, in addition to dragging you into the descending parabola, obfuscate your spirits to such a point that they make you increasingly unable to halt the descent by sincere repentance.*

“But if you have proceeded like this -- going backwards in Goodness and moving headlong towards Evil -- I, the Eternal, have remained immobile in my exact measure of Good and Evil. Since the day there was light -- and with it

⁵⁹ Maria's explanation of her disgust and impulse to shriek at the sight of the Beast is omitted.

⁶⁰ NB43, July 21, 1943, p. 183

⁶¹ As in the Text of May 31

⁶² ET: Jesus said so to Maria Valtorta on May 31, 1943 (Q43:14), in a text not quoted in this book for the same reason as usual.

the world began⁶³ -- what *is Good and what is Evil has been established by the Mind that does not err*. And human strength, small human strength, cannot remove or corrode that eternal code written by the finger of God on inviolable pages which are not of this earth.

“The only change, since the instant at which my Will created the world and man, lies in this: before you had to govern and guide yourselves by the tablets of the Law and the word of the Prophets; afterwards you had Me, Word and Redeemer, to explain the Law to you, give you my instruction and my Blood, bring you by my coming the Spirit who does not leave shadows, and then support you over the centuries with the Sacraments and sacramentals.

“But what have you made of my coming? A new weight of sins that you will have to answer for.

“Shall we look together at the ancient pages where the explanations of the current hour are found? You have felt them like a goad; but I will show them to you better.

“What is promised to whoever observes the Law? Prosperity, abundance, peace, power, health and numerous descendants, and the triumph over one’s enemies, since the Lord would be on the cutting edge of the swords of his servants against those who would like to raise their hands against the sons and daughters of the Most High. What is threatened for whoever transgresses it? Famine, indigence, wars, defeats, pestilences, abandonment on God’s part, and the oppression of enemies by which the former children of the Most High will become like persecuted, frightened herds destined to be massacred.⁶⁴

“You complain about the hour you are living through. But do you find it to be unjust? Does its severity seem too harsh to you? No. It is just and less harsh than you deserve.

“I have saved you and saved you again in a thousand ways. I have forgiven you and forgiven you again for seven thousand crimes twice over. I came precisely to give you Life and Light. *I, the Light of the world,*⁶⁵ *came into the midst of your darkness to bring you the Word and the Light*. I no longer spoke amidst whirlwinds and fire through the mouth of the Prophets. No. I came -- I, personally. I broke my bread with you, shared my bed with you, sweat with you in labor, consumed Myself in evangelizing you, died for you, dissipated every doubt concerning the Law with my Word, dissipated every doubt concerning my Nature with my Resurrection, and left you Myself so that I would be your spiritual Food, able to give you Life, and you have given Me death.⁶⁶

⁶³ ET: Genesis 1:3-5.

⁶⁴ ET: Such blessings and curses are found in Leviticus 26; Deuteronomy 7:11-16; 11:26-28; and Deuteronomy, chapter 28.

⁶⁵ ET: John 8:12.

⁶⁶ ET: John 1:9-11.

“I have given you the Word and the Love and the Blood of God, and you have closed your ears to the Word and your souls to the Love and have cursed my Blood.

“I have replaced the ancient Tabernacle, where there were two stone tablets written by a Prophet’s finger and some manna,⁶⁷ with the new Tabernacle, in which there is the true Bread come down from Heaven and my Heart, where there is written the Pact of love which you, not I, violate.

“You can no longer say, ‘We don’t know what God is like.’ I took on Flesh so that you would have a Flesh to love, since it was not enough for your dullness to love a spirit.

“Well then? What have you done? What have you *done more and more?* You have turned your backs on God, on his altar, on his Person; You have not wanted God, the Triune God, the true God.

“You have wanted gods. And your present gods are more opprobrious than the gods of the ancients or the fetishes of the idolaters. Yes -- than the fetishes of the idolaters. In those there still lies hidden respect for the image of God, as their mentality and ignorance are able to conceive it. *And in truth, in truth I tell you that the natural idolaters will be judged much less severely than you, idolaters of malice, sold to the worst idolatry: self-idolatry.*

“Yes you have created for yourselves gods of flesh -- and corrupt flesh -- and before them you have been capable of singing hosannas and bowing your heads and bending your backs, which you have been unable to bend before God. You have disdained, repudiated, derided and broken my Law; but, like slaves and animals domesticated by the tamer, you have accepted and obeyed the deceitful law given you by poor men perverted even more than you whose destiny is such that it makes all of heaven tremble with horror.

“Idolaters, idolaters, pagans, sold to the flesh, money, power, and Satan, who is the master of these three accursed realms of flesh, money, and power!

“But why, why, O people of mine, have you gone out of the Kingdom I gave you; why have you fled your King of Perfection and Love and preferred the chains and barbarity of the Kingdom of Satan and the Prince of Evil and Death? Is this the way you pay back the Most High, who is your Father and Savior? And are you astonished if fire issues forth from the earth and fire rains down from the sky to burn to ashes the arrogant and betraying race that has denied God and welcomed Satan and his ministers?

“No Satan has no need to work, to labor, to gulp you down! *I must labor* to see about attracting you still, since, if you have denied your origin, I remember that I am your Father and Savior. Until the final hour, when you will

⁶⁷ ET: Hebrews 9:1-5.

be gathered together for the inexorable selection, I will not deny my unfortunate children and still try to save them.

“This punishment,⁶⁸ O Maria, this one is not undeserved. It is just. It is serious because your sins are most serious. But it is not meted out, no, out of wickedness by a God who is all goodness. Your God would give Himself to spare you it, if He knew that this would benefit you. But He must, *He must let you punish yourselves for your acts of madness, for your commerce with the Beast.*

“A thousand and ten thousand will be lost in every corner of *the* earth. But, in the agony strangling you, someone will hear the Voice of God resound and raise his face from darkness towards the Light. *That one person who returns will justify the scourge, for -- know this and consider what an obligation you have to conserve it -- the price and the value of a soul is such that the treasures of the earth do not suffice to buy it. The Blood of a God is needed. Mine.*”

▬▬▬▬▬▬	▬▬▬▬▬▬		
The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment

Priests As “Stars” In Christ’s Firmament, Final Persecutions Of The Church By The Beast⁶⁹

Jesus says:

“When the time comes, many stars will be shaken from the coils of Lucifer,⁷⁰ who, in order to win, needs to diminish the lights of souls.

“This can happen because not only lay people, but also ecclesiastics have lost and are increasingly losing the firmness of faith, charity, strength, purity, and detachment from the seductions of the world needed to remain in the orbit of God’s light.

“Do you understand who the stars I am speaking about are? They are the ones I have described as salt of the earth and light of the world: my ministers.⁷¹

“Satan’s piercing malice studies the way to extinguish these luminaries, that are lights reflecting my Light for the multitudes, by shaking them. If, with all the light the priestly Church is still emitting, souls are sinking deeper and deeper into darkness the kind of darkness which will crush the multitudes when many stars fade out in my sky is obvious.

⁶⁸ ET: World War II.

⁶⁹ NB43, July 23, 1943, p. 191

⁷⁰ ET: Apocalypse 12:3-4.

⁷¹ ET: Matthew 5:13-16; Mark 9:50; Luke 14:34-35.

“Satan knows this and sows his seeds to prepare the weakness of the priesthood, so as to be able to overwhelm it easily in sins, not so much of sense as of thought. In mental chaos it will be easy for him to provoke spiritual chaos. In spiritual chaos the weak, faced with the flood of persecutions, will commit the sin of cowardice, denying the faith.

“The Church will not die because I will be with her. But she will experience hours of darkness and horror similar to those of my Passion, multiplied over time because it must be that way.

“The Church must suffer what her Creator suffered, before dying to rise again in an eternal form. The Church must suffer much longer because the Church, in her members, is not perfect, like her Creator, and if I suffered for hours, she must suffer for weeks and weeks of hours.

“As she arose persecuted and nourished by supernatural power in the early times and in her best children, exactly the same will happen to her when the last times come, during which she will exist, subsist, and resist the Satanic tide and the battles of the Antichrist with her best children. A painful, but just selection.

“It is logical that, in a world where so many spiritual lights will be extinguished, there will be manifestly established the short-lived, but tremendous reign of the Antichrist, generated by Satan just as Christ was generated by the Father. Christ, the Son of the Father, generated by Love with Purity. The Antichrist, the son of Satan, generated by Hatred with the threefold Impurity.

“Like olives between the wheels of the oil press, the children of Christ will be persecuted, squashed, and crunched by the voracious Beast. But not swallowed, for the Blood will not allow them to be corrupted in spirit. Like the first ones, the last will be cut down like sheaves of ears of grain in the final persecution, and the earth will drink in their blood. But eternally blessed for their perseverance are those who die faithful to the Lord.”

You told me that to understand John his epistles and the Apocalypse had to be read. I took up a Bible and opened it at random, where the writings of the Beloved Disciple are. It opened for me at chapter twelve. The Master explains it to me this way.

I notice that some days ago Jesus used a similar phrase to comment on the spiritual maternity of Mary, which is thought to be concealed in the woman clothed in sunlight. But Jesus is not speaking about Mary today. He is speaking about the militant Church in the last times. I will read the Apocalypse carefully, hoping, in Jesus, that He will be my light to understand it.

Merciful Intercession To Save Others⁷²

Jesus says:⁷³

"I have already told you that all the evil which is oppressing you now is a result of the abandonment of my Law by individuals and society. The lack of faith, the lack of charity, and the lack of every virtue have one single origin: *the deserting of my militia, the Christian militia.*

"As if from a trunk with poisonous roots, certain tendencies, vices, and passions worse than human -- demoniacal -- have sprung forth. The plant of Christian life is dead in almost all hearts; in many it vegetates with difficulty; in a few it is still flowering, nourished by the juice of Life, adorned with sturdy branches.

"Nor is there reason to hope that things will change. Indeed, they will always head in the worst direction, for, as a forest invaded by parasitic plants and harmful insects is increasingly stripped of leafy branches and fruits and eventually dies, the same is happening to current society, increasingly burned, suffocated, and corroded by a thousand vicious tendencies and a thousand sins.

"The main ones: hatred, lust, overbearance, deceit. The first ones: the negation of God, doctrines adverse to mine, exaggerated self-worship, egotism, and still others.

"My Word cannot descend -- a seed and water of Life and true life -- into souls. They are too occupied by other things. *Most Christians have rejected Christ because they have placed themselves, or power, money, and flesh in Christ's place. Those who are less at fault are always at fault, for they lack true mercy towards their fellows.* Who is there who does not curse and blaspheme nowadays?

"But do not curse and blaspheme, daughter that I love. *Leave to your God the task of punishing. Love and have mercy, towards all. Even for the those first to blame.*

"They are unfortunates! They are unfortunates! They have ruined all the good they had by welcoming all Satan's evil. They have exchanged an eternity of glory for an hour of earthly glory. *They have sold their souls to Satan for*

⁷² NB43, July 24, 1943, p. 193

⁷³ This selection does not address explicitly the last days. However, the following two selections of July 26 and 28 do and refer back to this dictation, which emphasizes the only Christian response to the evil and evil doers of the last days that pleases God. Prayers for mercy and acts of love are our only weapons, that snatch souls from the clutches of the Beast.

thirty pieces of silver. They cause Me disgust and pity. Yes, pity as well, for I am the God of mercy and feel pity for my deviant sons and daughters.

“Help Me to save them from the final sin. How I would like to be able to forgive them! You, daughter that I love -- forgive. *From your heart, which possesses Me and my Word, let nothing emerge but words of peace and forgiveness.* I know it is hard for your humanity. *But, above it, is the spirit, and the spirit is the kingdom of the Lord.* Now, how can you have the Lord in yourselves if your spirits do not have the same passions as their King?”

“And my passions, like my words, are holy, merciful, and good. They all have the seal of Love, *of true Love, which is never so entirely love as when it immolates itself for brothers and sisters and forgives them.*”

He further states:

“I don’t like those who cry out, ‘Death to them!’ after having cried, ‘Hosanna!’

“If those against whom the cry of condemnation is hurled had given you the booty and the well-being -- appropriated unjustly -- which I could not allow them to give you so as not to lead you and them towards perfect pride, you would acclaim them. You would not consider that others would suffer instead of you and that they, like you, are my sons and daughters.

“Leave it to Me to judge, punish, and reward. For yourselves seek only to merit my reward. And be consistent and honest.

“It is inconsistency, dishonesty, and cowardice to be pitiless towards the defeated -- whatever their defeat may be, whether it be just as a punishment or painful as the result of undeserved circumstances.

“It is inconsistency because it is not aimed at man, but at man’s action, action, I repeat, that you would have approved, even though not good, if it had provided you with gain.

“And, for the same reason, dishonesty: *all of you -- remember this carefully -- are in part to blame for the present hour. Those least of all to blame, because they have not committed the sin of worshipping a man and have not followed him against the Law, are to blame for not having prayed day and night for him. The great need the prayer of the small to remain great in Goodness.*

“Finally, *it is cowardice because to be pitiless towards those who are no longer powerful,* but, rather, are the most unfortunate of all hated by the world, stricken by God, *is a sin equal to those oppressing the weak.*

“These things, inconceivable for the mass, are always the juice of my Law. *And the fact that my Law is followed superficially, and not substantially,*

is proven by the way the masses rise up against those who have not given you what your selfishness expected.”⁷⁴

The Forerunners

Antichrist's Reign

Peace/Truce

End/Judgment

To Forgive Much So As To Be Forgiven Much⁷⁵

Jesus says:

“I am the Father’s Voice moved by Love. Like a river I flow over the world and come to seek you, one by one, to permeate you with Myself. Like a tireless shepherd I run after my little sheep, calling them with a loving voice, and when I succeed in gathering many of them together, I forget every labor in the joy of having you around Me. I use all the arts of love to attract you to my saving love. Nor would I find it hard -- I repeat⁷⁶ -- to offer the Passion again -- and even more bitter in its torture -- if that were of use to gather all of you into my sheepfold.

“But outside of it seduction hisses, and many of my children go out to follow it. Too many! I will never stop saying that this is my sorrow. When these hours come in which even the best stain their better selves with the ferment of hatred, I suffer greatly. For I would like you to be penetrated by Me to the point of never descending to the malice of hatred towards anyone. Hatred is your ruin, and You make it your doctrine, poor children who are no longer familiar with the sweet herbs of forgiveness.

“Whoever loves and forgives much will be forgiven much. Much, even all, if your forgiveness is absolute.

“Don’t you think you need God’s forgiveness? Yes. In truth I tell You that you all need to be forgiven seventy times seven and that Your God stands with forgiveness for you in his divine hands, waiting for you to deserve it by your mercy, for God wants your good. I tell you that I am the Father’s Voice and speak in his name. I tell you that I am the one to whom all judgment is submitted, by the Father.

⁷⁴ On a typed copy the text continues with the following passage in parentheses, at the end of which the writer specifies, with a pencil annotation, that it is a *Note by Father Migliorini*: “The preceding dictation was hard to apply the day it was given, July 24, 1943. On the 26th the news became known that Mussolini had handed his resignation to the King, and what happened and threatened to happen on that same day of disapproval for the man who had fallen into decline not only amply justifies the Lord’s recommendations, but makes it credible that He was really the one who dictated what was written.”

⁷⁵ NB43, July 26, 1943, p. 197

⁷⁶ As in the previous dictation of July 24.

“It is stated, ‘There is more rejoicing in heaven over one sinner who is converted than over ten just persons who remain in the Lord.’ But I tell you that there will be threefold, tenfold rejoicing in heaven over one of my children who is able to forgive as I was able *and that such forgiveness brings God’s blessing upon the earth. And only I know how much blessing you need to avert the impending punishments.*”

The Forerunners Antichrist’s Reign Peace/Truce End/Judgment
Prayer And Suffering To Avert The “Ultimate Sin”⁷⁷

Jesus says:

“Not long ago I told you to help Me to save those guilty of the ultimate sin. But you did not understand what I meant. You have prayed.

“This is enough for Me, since, in truth, it is necessary only for Me to understand *everything*. But for you, my sons and daughters, absolute revelation is not necessary. *All I tell you is a gift you are not entitled to, a spontaneous gift of the Father to his dearest ones* for it is dear to my Heart to tell you things in confidence, to take you by the hand and introduce you into the secret of the King. But you must not demand it. It is very beautiful to be the confidants of a God, but it is also very beautiful and holy to be little children entirely and blindly abandoning themselves to the Father who acts on his own, and the children let themselves be led, without wanting to know where the Father is leading them.

“Be sure, O children. I guide you along ways of Goodness. Your Father wants only your good.

“Both confidants and the confident are needed for the joy of my Heart, and it is, moreover, supreme perfection to be ‘confidants/confident.’ *Then you are disciples, now capable of acting in the name of the Master, and children letting themselves be led by the Father.* You are then my comfort and my gladness.

“In a world like yours it is so hard for Me to find disciple souls! And it is even harder to find, even in children, childlike souls! The breath of the Beast has corrupted you so much that it has slain the simplicity; trust, and innocence in which I found rest, even in the souls of children.

“I said nothing to you yesterday, Maria, and you were bewildered like someone who has lost the way. But I am not only your Master -- I am your Physician, and a physician not only of the spirit, but also of your flesh. Yesterday I saw that you were too tired, and I kept silence saving many words for you

⁷⁷ NB43, July 28, 1943, p. 199

for today. I don't want my little mouthpiece to be broken in an effort superior to her strength. I am speaking today for yesterday and today.

"You have prayed, offered, and suffered according to my desire to impede the commission of the ultimate sin. And you have succeeded, though you thought one thing and in reality *'the ultimate sin'* was something else. I had inspired in the best souls many desires to pray and suffer for this end because there was a need for *very, very great* effort to overcome the danger. *And there is still a need for very, very great* effort to bring the matter to a close *without forms of degeneration worse than the first evil.*

"Yesterday, the only sign of my being with you to be a Light and Voice for you was my guiding your hand in opening the Book to the pages which at a distance of centuries speak of the present. We shall read them together, I shall comment on them for you. But you have understood since yesterday that 'today' was present in them.

"A great evil has been prevented, Maria, a great evil. I have had mercy on you, the people having Christian Rome as your heart. *However, now more than ever it is necessary to pray and suffer greatly, Maria, and have others pray, and suffer, if possible -- but that is more difficult for there are very few heroes in suffering -- so that the 'great evil' overcome will not sprout up, like a malignant plant, into a thousand small evils which would eventually form an accursed forest where you would all perish with unimaginable horror.*

"I have had mercy on you. But *woe to you if you, O my people, should respond to this mercy wrested from Justice, through the entreaty of the prayers by Me, my Mother, the Protectors, and the victims with actions causing you to forfeit my grace. Woe to you if the single great 'self-idolatry' should be succeeded by the small, numerous forms of 'self-idolatry!'*

"*God is One alone, and I am God, and there is no other God apart from Me. This should be remembered. God is patient, but, in his infinite patience, He is not blameworthy towards Himself. And He would be blameworthy if He pushed his patience in not intervening to say, 'Enough,' to the point of indifference regarding respect for Himself.*

"Because of a fallen idol do not raise up many little idols all adorned with the same Satanic signs of lust, haughtiness, deceit, overbearance, and the like.

"*If you are good, I will save you to the very depths. I promise you and it is the promise of a God. And, in my Intelligence, for which nothing is hidden -- even the most secret of crimes, even the most insignificant of human acts -- I do not require a whole people to be perfect. I know that if I were to reward you when you had all reached Goodness, I would never reward you, but it is my intention that, if it is inevitable that someone should sin, the mass should be such as to impose on its Leaders a conduct worthy of my reward. For -- always re-*

member this⁷⁸ -- the *Leaders commit Sins, but it is the mass which, by its lesser sins, brings the Leaders to the great Sin.*

“And that’s enough for now, soul of mine. We shall later read Isaiah together, and, as in the synagogue and the Temple, I shall comment on him for you.”

			
The Forerunners	Antichrist’s Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment

Commentary On Isaiah: Deceitful Use Of Power⁷⁹

Jesus says:

“One must be able to read the Book not with one’s eyes but with one’s spirit. Then the supernatural Knowledge which inspired it is illuminated with the light of Truth. But to obtain this one must have a spirit united to my Spirit. Then it is my Spirit that leads You.

“Now, look: in the pages of Isaiah let us take the words of the chapters read together,⁸⁰ like tesseras in a mosaic, and line them up with supernatural vision. They will prove to be clearer for you. Begin with the ones I have pointed out to you for the blameworthy.

“Even if compassion is shown to the wicked one he will not learn justice; he will do evil things in the land of the saints and will not see the glory of the Lord.⁸¹

“Therefore, listen to the word of the Lord, O mockers, the leaders of my people that is in Jerusalem, You have said, “We have made an alliance with death; we have formed a pact with hell, when the scourges pass by, they will not come upon us, for we have placed our hopes in deceit and by deceit we are protected.”⁸²

““Your alliance with death shall be destroyed; your pact with hell shall no longer exist; when the scourge tempestuously passes, it shall sweep you away with it. And only the exhaustion will make you learn the lesson.”⁸³

“So, then, do not mock, so that your chains will not be tighter.”⁸⁴

⁷⁸ As mentioned in the dictation of July 24.

⁷⁹ NB43, July 29, 1943, p. 201

⁸⁰ ET: Here Valtorta left a small space in which she later penciled in: “Ch.26-33.”

⁸¹ ET: Isaiah 26:10.

⁸² ET: Isaiah 28:14-15.

⁸³ ET: Isaiah 28:18-19.

⁸⁴ ET: Isaiah 28:22.

“Woe to you that hide yourselves in your hearts to conceal their designs from the Lord! They do their works in darkness and say, “Who sees us? Who recognizes us?” This thought of yours is perverse.⁸⁵

“Woe to you, children that desert and conceive designs, but without Me, and weave a cloth which is not according to my spirit and pile up sin upon sin.⁸⁶

“Therefore, this is what the Holy One of Israel says: “Since you have disdained this word and have hoped in slander and turmoil and grounded yourselves on these things, this iniquity shall be for you like a ruinous, imperceptible breach in a high wall which suddenly, when no one imagines, brings about a collapse and breaks into a thousand pieces.”⁸⁷

“Woe to those who go down into Egypt to seek help and hope in horses and trust in chariots, for they are numerous, and in cavalrymen who are exceedingly vigorous, and have not placed their trust in the Holy One. They have not sought the Lord.⁸⁸

“Egypt is man and not God; its horses are flesh and not spirit. The Lord will stretch out his hand, and whoever offers help will collapse; whoever is helped will fall, and they will all be destroyed together.⁸⁹

“Woe to you; sacker! Won’t you be sacked, too? Woe to you, mocker! Won’t you be mocked, too? When you have finished sacking, you will be sacked; when, weary, you finish mocking, you will be mocked.⁹⁰

“Before speaking about topics and God’s promises, let us comment on this passage.

“The heart of man, which the prophet calls wicked, is a mixture of pride, overbearance, and rebelliousness. *The threefold lust is in it* the throne on which the Evil One sits to fill that heart, which has repudiated God and his justice, with demoniacal thoughts. From this heart nothing but iniquity can emerge, for its King is the Spirit of Evil, who grants ephemeral triumphs paid for later by everlasting ruin. The wicked man, who reigns under the sign of the Beast, passes like a torrent of pain and corruption in the land of the saints -- and Rome is a land of saints -- dragging the lesser wicked into evil and tormenting the children of the Lord.

“It is just that the Lord should conceal his glory before the wicked, in this dwelling and the other. The wicked man will see my glory twice, *and he will want not to see it*, for it will be terrible for him: at his death and on the last

⁸⁵ ET: Isaiah 29:15-16.

⁸⁶ ET: Isaiah 30:1.

⁸⁷ ET: Isaiah 30:12-14.

⁸⁸ ET: Isaiah 31:1.

⁸⁹ ET: Isaiah 31:3.

⁹⁰ ET: Isaiah 33:1.

day. Then I will ask him, ‘What did you do with my people? With my gifts?’ And it will be a question which splits him, like an arrow from a bow, in the depths from which one does not emerge.

“My second earthly Jerusalem is Rome. A beloved land where I have wanted my Church to be and which, since it is the center of the world, should be treated like a shining relic by whoever is its leader. And, instead, how have the new mockers of God behaved? Allying themselves with the crime which produces death, wedding their souls to Satan, and believing that they can save themselves from the scourges to which they subjected others by such sacrilegious prostitution.

“No. *The lie does not save.* The Father of Truth tells you so. The lord of the lie ensnares you in it and when he gets the chance he turns it against you to make you perish. *I am the one who saves, and there is no one except Me.*

“You will be stripped of your false armor precisely in the hour when my punishment strikes you, for Satan acts that way. Nor can he act otherwise, for he cannot give you lasting fruits. I alone give Protection which knows no end, and when I appear, to save or to damn, Satan flees, leaving you alone, O foolish children of sin.

“You will understand who God is and who Lucifer is only in the grip of torture. A terrible lesson! And the more you sin the more ferocious the grip will be, *for there is a limit even to my limitless but intelligent, Goodness.* Remember this.

“*Nothing of what man schemes in the shadow, even in that secret shadow of the heart, is hidden from the Lord.* And if your poor brothers and sisters see nothing but the outside and can be deceived by your hypocrisy, I see everything and act as your actions deserve, and, like a wall undermined by a little breach, your edifice based on sin, will collapse when no one -- neither you, that consider yourselves sure of the alliance with the Father of the Lie, nor the people that fears you, believing you to be invincible -- imagines.

“Woe, woe, woe to you that lead my people to believe that I protect your evil-doing. Woe to you that lead my children towards distrust in my Justice! You will also answer for this, *for scandal falls back upon the one creating it. And what greater scandal than to lead the little ones to believe that God unjustly protects the great who sin?*

“How many souls you have wrested from Me, O workers of iniquity! But *they will still be daughters of my Mercy. You will not, you to whom I had given all to draw you to Myself and make you instruments of Good and who have forgotten everything and subordinated Me to Satan.*

“Woe to you that form alliances from which only evil can come to my people: evil for the flesh and evil for the spirit, and you know it is evil, and you do it all the same, using power badly, provided your persons triumph on the earth. And what is your person? *A handful of clay conserving a shape as long*


as Mercy keeps it wet with heavenly dew and, once dry, crumbling like sifted clay and scattering.


“Your alliances, a real union of the precursors of the Antichrist, have no basis and lack the power for victory. Like you yourselves, they will crumble, and only a memory of horror in the flesh, in the homes, and in the souls of my poor children will be left of them.


“When God thunders, what are numerous horses and vigorous cavalrymen? Chaff which the wind disperses in all directions. It is I who give strength to armies. But it is necessary for the armies to be moved for a just reason and not out of cruelty and pride.


“Every sin will be punished, and every mockery will be punished by God, for God, the Lord says, will never be mocked, and it is not licit to oppress the lesser ones.

“However, observe one thing, Maria. Respect for the Law on the part of the lesser ones, too, is needed so that you will always have your God with you.”


The Forerunners


Antichrist's Reign


Peace/Truce


End/Judgment

Commentary On Isaiah: The Church As The Earthly Jerusalem⁹¹

Jesus says:

“Let us look today at how much reflection there is on the lesser ones. I state, through the mouth of Isaiah, having the humble speak or speaking to them:

“Without You, Lord, our God, they have made us slaves of the masters; grant that only for your sake we may recall your Name. Whoever dies lives again; the giants do not rise anew: for this reason You visited them, exterminated them, and made every memory of them disappear.

“Go, my people, enter into your rooms, close your doors behind you, and hide for a brief instant, until the indignation has passed. Behold, the Lord will go out of his dwelling and visit the iniquity of those who are against Him on the earth.

“On that day the Lord will visit the Leviathan, the agile serpent, the Leviathan, the twisting serpent, with his unbending sword, large and strong.

“With barbarous words, in a foreign tongue, the Lord will speak to this people, to whom I have said, “Here is my rest; refresh the weary; this is my relief.” But they did not want to listen to Me.

“And the Lord said, “Because this people approaches Me with its mouth and honors Me with its lips, but its heart is far from Me and they offer

⁹¹ NB43, July 30, 1943, p. 204

Me worship with human precepts and teachings -- for this reason I will again excite this people's admiration with a great stupendous prodigy: the wisdom of the wise shall perish."

"'Because the oppressor has disappeared, the mocker is annihilated, and those who plotted evil are exterminated' who made men sin by their words, who laid snares for whoever reproached them and without reason withdrew from the just one. For this reason the Lord says, "Jacob shall not be confused; there will be no blush on his face now, but when he sees his children, the work of his hands in his breast, he shall glorify my Name. And those who wandered in spirit shall learn knowledge, and the backbiters shall learn the law."

"'On that day each shall cast aside his idols of gold and silver, which your hands made for you so as to sin, and Asher shall fall by a sword which is not of man, and the sword which is not of man shall devour him, and he shall flee, not before the sword, and his Youth shall pay the tribute.'

"The prime cause of evil: *to be left without God. You have not wanted to have God for a Master, and a benign Master and you have thus had masters who have degraded your freedom as men to the mortification of slaves.* They have lent, sold, and recovered you like slaves, like slaves sent to death, laughing and growing fat on your pain.

"*The world is dying because it no longer has God for a Master; you, in particular, are dying because you have not wanted God as a fatherly Master. May God will that you should turn to Him now!*

"*In his Name is salvation. Life is Life in his Name, and death is resurrection. He who lives in the Lord never dies. It is the giants -- that is, those who raise their power as flesh and blood proudly against Heaven -- that draw down the divine thunderbolt and collapse, never to rise again. They have had everything on earth, since for them only the law of flesh and blood was alive. The eternal, luminous kingdom of the spirit is thus at an end. At an end, starting from this earth, where they have killed it by their own hand, and at an end there, where there is no temporal limit, where dead souls do not enter.*

"When the hour of indignation strikes in Heaven, and Justice descends to deliver its blow, *take Charity and Prudence as your norm. Withdraw, instead of cackling like cockerels that see the kite; withdraw instead of backbiting, for judgment is up to God alone, and pray to the Lord. Charity and Prudence to obtain the victory of Good over Evil and the triumph of Peace in nations, institutions, and hearts.*

"God has no need of your advice to punish. He knows when and how He should use the sword to slay the eternally rising one, the Monster seducing you, opposed to the Divine One Rising Again, who has saved you and saves you by his Blood, to whom the world's great and small too often are unable to give heed, deaf to my aggrieved prayers that refuge be given *to the one weary with Love*, to your Jesus, who suffers with a perfect love, always rejected.

“Oh, if only you would come to Me with your hearts, children so tenderly loved by your God, Father and Brother! *You would wrest all from my Love if you came to Me with your love!* All, for it is a supreme pain for Me not to be able to cover you with gifts in this life and the other. Even the worship you offer Me has lost much of my sign and taken on human forms more in keeping with your way of acting, weighed down by human heaviness.

“Come back to the Lord, children, to the Source from which Life springs forth. The passage of centuries does not burden it with old age, for Time is an instant, compared to my Eternity. Wash your souls in the Source; immerse your spirits therein, that they may *see*. That they may see God and the prodigies I work to excite your admiration, so that your minds will be stripped of the knowledge of the wise, a fallacious knowledge, and learn Knowledge from Me, who am the Wisdom of God.

“And yet you see, O dear sons and daughters, what your God is able to do for you. I have seen the affliction of my chosen people, that which you experience, because it is already upon you, and *that which you would have experienced*, already prepared in the shadow, and I have made provision.

“But woe to you as well if the lesson should be of no use. How could I always come running, make provision, and forgive? How, if you, too, should become oppressors? How, if you, too, should become mockers? How, if you, too, should drift apart from the Just One advising you for your own good and lay your snares against Him? He is the bearer of my Word, he and his ministers. And in my Word there is true Knowledge and the true Law which yield Good.

“Make the Face of your Jesus and his *true* disciples be tinged with joy. And that Face and those faces will take on that color when they see you triumph over all the idolatries of sense, money, and pride which have always tormented you.

“You understand who the ‘Ashers’ are by yourself. But I say to all. *Act so as not to deserve, as they did, the sword which is not of man.* No. Be good. Your God does not want to show you the punishing sword, but He wants to open to you the arms capable only of loving and blessing and say to you, ‘Come, O sons and daughters, and rest in the Peace of your Father.’”

Jesus says:

“And now, after the black tesseras and the purple ones, the golden tesseras in Isaiah’s mosaic.

“The Lord says, “Behold, I shall place a stone as the foundation of Zion a chosen stone, a cornerstone, precious, grounded on the foundations; let whoever believes not be in haste.”

““Whoever proceeds in justice and tells the truth, whoever hates gain deriving from calumny and shakes every gift out of his hands, and whoever covers his ears so as not to hear talk of blood and closes his eyes so as not to see

evil shall dwell in a wonderful place; the fortresses in the cliffs shall be his lofty dwelling.”

“Turn your gaze towards Zion; your eyes shall see Jerusalem, the dwelling of abundance, a tent which can never be transferred; its pegs shall never be removed, and none of its ropes shall be broken.

““After becoming inebriated in the heavens, my sword shall suddenly plunge down upon the people condemned to destruction by my judgment... ” Demons... shall be found there [in its devastated land].

“Diligently search in the book of the Lord and read: not one of these things is lacking, and one is not without the other, for what comes out of my mouth is ordered by Him, and his spirit draws things together.’

“The chosen stone, a cornerstone and a precious stone, with a secure foundation upon which the eternal Zion rises up, is *my Church and the Morality coming from my Law*, of which the Church is the teaching chair. It is vain to try to put another law in its place. *None is so safe and just as this one, for this one is dictated by a divine mind.*

“But in hearts as well I place a cornerstone upon which your spiritual, individual Zion must be based and from which your spirit must hurl itself onto the ascent leading to Me, into the supernatural kingdom for which I created you and which is not closed to you until the moment of death, *but whose doors of light are always open for you.*

“*Blessed are those able to live in the spirit. Their earthly life is a fore-taste of loving blessedness with Me.* They are the ones that proceed in Justice and Truth, who do not seek wealth acquired badly by fraud and usury; by deceit and calumny; they are the ones not thirsty for vengeance or hungry for vice, clean in thought, heart, and hands.

“For them the dwellings in my Father’s Kingdom are kept, and beginning in this life the Lord’s grace encircles them like a fortress on cliffs. They are the ‘secure.’ Only their will, if it becomes perverted, can break this security of theirs, whose cornerstones are the Will of God and their will, the Word of God and their obedience to the Law.

“The Jerusalem about which Isaiah speaks is my Church here below, the antechamber of the heavenly Jerusalem. *In her there is an abundance, not of human wealth, but of divine treasures of Forgiveness and Knowledge*, as there are divine treasures of blessedness in the heavenly Jerusalem.

“No human force can devastate my Church like a whirlwind to the point of destroying her. I shall be with her, to act as a peg and a rope. When the time comes for the earth to cease to be, my Church, *which cannot perish because it is cemented by the Blood of a God and of his saints*, will be transported by the angels into Heaven.

“A people, Isaiah says, shall be struck by the sword of Justice. *But there will be many more, for the world has fornicated with the devil in many parts.*


And still others are on the point of sinning, in spite of all I have done to keep them on the way of Life. Pray, pray, pray a lot to prevent new condemnations, originated by new fornications.


“The demons -- oh! The demons are already in the place where I shall punish. *It is the demons, installed as masters in hearts, that lead the nations to death.* And there are peoples in which only a few hearts are not the dwelling-place of demons: legions of legions of devils move whole nations like puppets. And how can I reign where hearts have become the dwelling of the sons and daughters of Lucifer?


“The prophetic word has other applications, but I have wanted to show it to you in reference to the hour you are living through. And not tell you more so as not to demoralize you more.

“Pray. Your God will open the doors for you before you experience the maximum horror. For the time being, enter into the dwelling of his Heart and *give Me your love to appease my Justice. In truth I tell you, that to die of love is the bloodiest of deaths because one suffers not from one thing alone, but from the things of all creation. One suffers for the sake of God and for one’s neighbor.* It is the death of your Jesus, for -- know this -- the most fitting word on my death is not ‘scourges,’ ‘tortures,’ or ‘cross.’ It is ‘love.’

“It is love that sacrificed the Son of God. Love for you. May it be love that sacrifices the new redeemers.”


The Forerunners


Antichrist’s Reign


Peace/Truce

End/Judgment

Faith And The Incredulity Of Rationalism⁹²

Jesus says:

“Be certain. Whoever has Me has everything. You are no longer hungry, and you are no longer thirsty, according to my promise because you believe in Me. I am not talking about the hunger and thirst of the poor body. I am talking about the hunger and thirst of your hearts, your souls, and your spirits. Only the thought that you have Me near consoles, sustains, and nourishes you entirely.

“No, I do not grow weary of being with you. *Jesus never wearies of being near his poor sons and daughters, who, without Him, are so unhappy.* See whether I ever get tired of remaining in the churches to wait for you, enclosed in a little bread to take on a form visible to your material heaviness.

“The souls my Father has given to Me are like the sweetest treasure I have. Can you doubt that I treat what has been given to Me by my Father with loving respect?

⁹² NB43, August 2,⁹² 1943, p. 213

“I came down from Heaven, where I was blessed in the sublime divinity of my Essence, to fulfill this desire of the Father to save the human race created by Him. I, the Infinite, circumscribed in a little flesh; I, the Powerful one, degraded, in the role of an obscure man; ‘the Master of the Universe, poor, in a little town like any other; I, Unblemished, the Most Pure, accused of all the moral and spiritual sins as a rebel against human authority, subverter of peoples, violator of the divine law, and blasphemer of God; I suffered all and accomplished all to make the Father’s desire a reality.

“No, I do not grow weary of being with you. I await you. When your hour comes, you shall rise with Me to eternal life, for this is reserved for whoever believes in Me. I have already told you⁹³ that whoever believes, really believes, is saved. For Faith brings with it the other virtues and causes the virtues and the Law to be practiced.”

Also on August 2⁹⁴

Jesus says:

“Tell Father,⁹⁵ who is asking for a sign to persuade his brothers in religion of certain truths which cannot be denied, that I am giving him the same reply given to the rich man, Epulo: ‘If they do not listen to Moses and the Prophets, they will not listen even to someone risen from the dead.’

“If they do not heed the voice of their conscience, inspired by Me, which cries out its incontrovertible and truthful warnings, if they smother under incredulity even that residue of sensibility which remains in them, how do you want them to be able to hear other things? If they do not bow their heads before the reality affecting them and do not remember, understand, or accept anything, how do you want them to believe in a sign?

“They deny even Me, though they say they don’t deny Me; they are the ‘learned,’ and they have smothered the beautiful, holy, simple, pure capacity to believe under the stones and bricks of their science, too imbued with earth to be able to grasp what is not earth.

“Ah, Maria! How much pain your Jesus feels! I see what I sowed at the price of my dying.

“But not even if I appeared would they believe Me. They would set in motion all the tools of science to weigh, list, and analyze the wonder of my appearance and rattle off all the reasonings of their culture, disturbing prophets and saints so as to cite -- in reverse and in the way they find most comfortable - the reasons why I, the King and Lord of Creation, cannot appear.

⁹³ In the dictations of July 18 and July 22.

⁹⁴ An annotation follows identical to that mentioned in note 112 [78 *herein*].

⁹⁵ Father Migliorini.

“Now, too, as twenty centuries ago, the simple and sons and daughters would follow Me and believe in Me. *The simple*, because they have the same heart -- virgins as regards rationalism and distrust and mental pride -- as sons and daughters. No. I would not find those able to believe within my Church -- that is, in the great army of my ministers I would find *some* souls that have been able to preserve the highest virginity: *‘that of the spirit.’*”

“O holy virginity of the spirit! How precious, dear, and beloved you are to my Heart, which blesses you and is particularly fond of you! O holy virginity of the spirit that preserve the snow-whiteness of Baptism for the souls possessing you, that preserve the ardor of Confirmation for the souls preserving you, that maintain the nourishment of Communion for the souls abandoning themselves to you, that are the soul’s Marriage to her Jesus, Master and Friend, that are the Priesthood consecrating her to Truth, that are the Oil cleansing her in the final hour to prepare for entry into the dwelling I have prepared for you! Holy virginity of the spirit that are light to see, sound to understand -- how few are able to preserve you!

“See, soul of mine. *There are few things which I condemn as severely as this element of rationalism, which deflowers and desecrates and kills Faith - - I say ‘Faith’ with a capital letter to express true, absolute, regal Faith. I condemn it as my hired assassin. It is that very thing which kills Me in hearts and which has prepared and prepares very sad times for the Church and the world.*

“I have cursed other things.⁹⁶ *But I will curse none as I do this.* It has been the seed from which many other poisonous doctrines have come. It has been the treacherous element opening the doors to the enemy. *It has in fact opened the doors to Satan, who has never reigned so much as since rationalism has reigned.*

“But it is said, ‘When the Son of Man comes, He will not find faith in hearts.’⁹⁷ *Rationalism thus does its work. I will do mine.*

“*Blessed are those who, as they close the door to sin and the passions, are able to close the doors of the secret temple in the face of the science which negates, and live, alone with the Only One who is All*

“*In truth I tell you that I will clasp to my heart the unfortunate one who has committed a human crime and repents of it, provided he has always admitted that I can do all, but I will adopt a face of Justice for those who, on the basis of doctrinaire human science, deny the supernatural in the manifestations which the Father would like Me to give.*

“Someone born deaf cannot hear, can he? Someone whose ear drums are broken accidentally cannot hear, can he? Only I could restore hearing to

⁹⁶ ET: For instance, Matthew 21:18-22; Mark 11:12-14 & 20-25.

⁹⁷ ET: Luke 18:8.

them with a touch of my hands. But how can I give hearing to a deaf spirit if this spirit does not let itself be touched by Me?

“In regard to Father’s question on the final adversary, *let us leave the Horror enveloped in the shadow of mystery*. It is of no use to you to know certain things. *Be good, and that’s enough. Give your goodness beforehand, at once, for the purpose of abbreviating the duration of the monstrous reign over the race of Adam.*

“In regard to the time..., 1000... 2000... 3000 *are forms to provide a reference for your limited mentality. The bestial sovereignty of the son of the Enemy -- ‘the son not of a carnal will,’⁹⁸ but of the will of a soul that has reached the summit and the depth of identification with Satan -- will be so cruel that every minute will be a day, every day will be a year, and every year will be a century for those living at that time. But for God every century is a thousandth of a second, since eternity is a being in time whose extent is limitless. That horror will be so enormous that the darkness of the darkest night would be midday sun in comparison for the sons and daughters of men immersed therein.*

“*His name could be ‘Negation.’ For he will deny God, deny Life, deny all. All, all, all.*

Do you think you are at that point? Oh, poor people! What you are living through is like distant rumblings of thunder. *Then there will be a burst of lightning over your heads.*

“*Be good. My Mercy is upon you.*”

In the evening on the same day of August 2, Jesus reappears in pain, in the clothing of blood -- He who crushed Himself to become a life-giving liquid for us.

He is very sad. He says only one thing to me: “I am suffering so much!” But He says it to me precisely by moving his lips. It is not as on other occasions, when I see Him sad or smiling, but always with his mouth closed, even if his words strike my spirit. Now he actually moves his lips and says, “I am suffering so much!” And the accent is so sad, so prostrate, that it strikes me like a sword.

What is my Jesus suffering from in particular tonight? Who struck Him, making Him bleed and weep? What can I do for Him to make Him smile? I understand a serious sin -- I don’t know by whom or where -- has been committed this evening. And I understand nothing else.

Today I have been able to pray little, absorbed by the duties of hospitality. But charity towards pilgrims is still prayer, isn’t it? I thus do not think that He is suffering on my account, and this keeps me serene.

⁹⁸ ET: John 1:13. “The Enemy’s son,” in other words Satan’s son.

Commentary On Revelation: The Spiritually Alive And The Spiritually Dead⁹⁹

Jesus says:

“This wrath of the nations is the premonitory sign of my wrath, for so it must happen.¹⁰⁰ A painful hour, poor sons and daughters of mine who undergo it, but it is inevitable that it should exist because everything must be fulfilled, of Good and Evil, on Earth before my hour comes. Then I will say, ‘Enough’ and come as a Judge and King to take up the kingdom of earth as well and judge the sins and merits of man.

“When in the book of John you read the words ‘the hour for judging the dead,’ you think it refers to those who have already passed on, perhaps centuries ago, to other spheres of a mystery which will become known only when one is introduced into it. Yes. Death means the transmigration of the soul to other zones different from the earth. But there is a vaster sense in the words of John: the dead he speaks of may also be alive, according to the flesh, but in reality, in the eyes of whoever sees, be among the Dead.

“They are the thoroughly Dead, for there will be no resurrection for them. Dead to God, eternally they will never have the good of possessing Life - that is God -- for God is eternal Life.

“In the same way, with a meaning vaster than can be conveyed by mere words, the prophets, servants, and saints John speaks about under those three titles *include in veiled fashion all the creatures who have succeeded in living in the spirit.*

“How many humble old women, poor sons and daughters, simple men without learning, and illiterate women unknown to the masses are concealed and comprehended in the words ‘prophets, servants and saints.’ If they were pointed out to the world, it would laugh at them. But in truth, in truth I tell you that *one of these poor ones, according to the flesh, is more of a prophet, servant, and saint of mine than a proud person of learning, someone who is greatly vain, or a minister of mine himself in whom what makes people saints in my eyes is lacking: to be able to live according to my Word and do my Will with constant faith, charity, and hope.*

“My smile for my blessed ones in the hour of my coming as King and Judge will ignite a sun seven times brighter than the ordinary sun, and my heav-


⁹⁹ NB43, August 5, 1943, p. 219

¹⁰⁰ “The opening words refer to World War II raging in Italy.” From the selection header (ET).

ens will shine by it, while the angelic choirs sing the praises of Me and my servants, whose virtues making them my sons and daughters in that hour will be proclaimed by Me, over against the foolish, blind world.

“But for those who are not such, and especially for those who by their action have led the earth and the weak of the earth to perdition, my glance will be a thunderbolt plummeting into the abyss, for it is inevitable that Evil should exist, but eternally cursed are those who become servants and administrators of Evil.”

(This is Jesus’ commentary for me on Revelation 11:17-18.)


The Forerunners Antichrist’s Reign Peace/Truce End/Judgment

The Final State Of The Wicked¹⁰¹

Jesus says:

“You read in the Book: ‘He [the wicked man] will be led to the tomb and keep watch with the throng of the dead: pleasing to the gravel of Hell, he will draw all men after him and an innumerable crowd before him.’¹⁰²

“All mankind is sinful. One single creature did not savor, I won’t say ‘the bitter taste,’ but ‘the bitter smell’ of sin. And that was Mary, my very sweet Mother, She who did not cause Me to miss the Paradise I had left to become Flesh in your midst and redeem your flesh, for in Mary I found the eternal whiteness and shining love which are in Heaven -- in Her, the Father, who caressed Her as the Perfect One among creatures; in Her, the Holy Spirit, who penetrated Her with his fire to make the Virgin the Mother; around Her, the angelic cohorts worshipping the Trinity in a creature.

“The breast of Mary! The heart of Mary! The mind most enraptured in God cannot descend to the very depth or rise up to the summit of these two perfections of purity and love. I illuminate them for you; I illuminate them for the dearest ones among the dear. But only when you are where Knowledge is perfect will you understand Mary.

“All humanity is sinful. But there is the sinner who is just a sinner, and there is the wicked one -- that is, the one who takes sin to a demoniacal perfection. For, in Evil, the Devil is able to reach perfection, and his most loyal disciples are not less than their master.

“I told you previously: ‘Lucifer strives to imitate God, in evil, of course. He takes on the forms, shall we say, of life and death which the Son of

¹⁰¹ NB43, August 7, 1943, p. 222

¹⁰² ET: Job 21:32-33.

God had. The devil poses as Christ and, like Christ, has apostles and disciples. *Among them he will select the perfect one to make him the Antichrist. For the time being we are in the period preparatory to the precursors of the latter.* ' I have already told you this.¹⁰³

"The wicked one will be led to the tomb. That is only natural. Lucifer can give every assistance to his favored ones, his faithful, his slaves, but not immunity from Death, *for only I am Life and only I have overcome Death.* Therefore, when the totality of the evil committed by the wicked one is fulfilled, I give the order to Death to take possession of that flesh. That flesh thus experiences the horror of the tomb. And for the wicked one it will be a real tomb.

"For the good, the redeemed, and the forgiven it is not such, for they believe and know on the basis of faith. It is a place where mortal garb returns to its nature as dust, *discharging the spirit in expectation of that hour when what was created will be re-formed to enter glory or damnation* with the perfection of creation which God created for *man -- that is, with the union of a spirit to flesh.* An immortal spirit, like God, its Creator and Father, and mortal flesh, as formed from an earthly animal, king of the earth, heir of Heaven, but too often preferring the earth to Heaven and existing as an animal, not in being endowed with a 'soul,' but in living no less -- and sometimes more -- brutally than real animals do.

"Souls, when separated from bodies, have three dwellings. And they will have them until there remain only two, after the Judgment which shall not err. The blessed immediately rejoice in eternal rest. The suffering actively accomplish their expiation, thinking of the hour of their liberation in God. The damned toss and turn in anger over the good lost. No, the more wicked they have been, the less they find rest in their terrible torture.

"But the Wicked One, he who by his wickedness has drawn others into wickedness and pushed others into sin (these are the men and the crowds of which the Book speaks), will be like an unsleeping tower in a stormy sea. Before him, the throng of those slain (in their souls) by him; before him, the keen memory of so many homicides of souls committed by him; *and remorse, which has given no Peace to those who kill, since the day Cain shed his brother's blood*¹⁰⁴ *will scourge him much more atrociously than the infernal scourges.*

"He will keep watch over his Crime, which hurled itself against God in God's creatures and, like a raging beast, brought slaughter into souls. It is tremendous to have the proof of the misdeed before oneself! A punishment added to the punishments! Measureless horror, as the sins of the Wicked One among sinners are measureless.

¹⁰³ ET: In the dictation of June 19, 1943 (ET: 7-8).

¹⁰⁴ ET: Genesis 4:8.

“But, now, Maria, for the consolation of your heart, which sinks before the gashes of another world, where Love does not reign, but the Sternness of God, relieve your spirit by listening to these words entirely for you and for souls like you.

“Do you know what the souls given to Love mean for Me? My Paradise on earth. It is you that bring a little slice of heaven into this poor world, and on that little slice the Son of God sets his feet to come to find his delights among the sons and daughters of the Father.

“Open your heart to your Jesus. And give Me your heart. Give it entirely to Me. I want it. As the Physician and Friend of the spirit and the flesh, as the Spouse and God who has chosen you because of your faith and your bold sentiment of love.”

	The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment
---	-----------------	--------------------	-------------	--------------

Charity And Effective Prayer¹⁰⁵

Jesus says:

“Your writings should be used in the following way.

“The part which is yours will have the usual informative value for the curiosity of man, who always wants to probe into the secrets of souls.

“The part which mine, and which should be separated from yours, will have formative value, for the voice of the Gospel is found therein, and this voice always has value for spiritual formation, in whatever manner it comes to you. Even when the manner -- or manners -- in which it has come within the reach of souls no longer belongs to this earth, it remains what it is and does not lose its value.

“I was reluctant to give the new formula of prayer for today because I know that it is heard even less than the one in June. The request then was that the bombs spare houses and people in Viareggio, and this was an understandable subject for human obtuseness and fear. Today something higher and more universal is being requested and -- it is painful to observe -- something not universally desired, not desired even by the whole of the little cluster of Viareggio.

“War means the ruin of many, but also gain for many, and *when faced with his own gain, man neglects the collective gain. You love one another so little that each of you lives locked into his own selfishness and armed with prickles for his neighbor.* Therefore, if the first prayer was not very clearly heard by the spirit, but only by the flesh, which trembled with fear for itself and its possessing houses, *this prayer is stated with the spirit even deaf.*

¹⁰⁵ NB43, August 15, 1943, p. 240





“That is not the way one obtains what one asks for. The truce will come for the arms, because it must come, but it will be only a truce. And a truce is one thing, while peace is quite another. Peace means external and internal concord, sought and willed by spiritual sight and affection.

“If you were able to come to Me, with your lips and soul cleansed and inflamed with real charity, I would give you this peace. I would give it to you over and against all the obstacles set in place by Evil to impede it, for I am the eternal Victor. But even among the not very many people who will pray for this today in the churches, just a few, a few will satisfy the requisites which make prayer powerful. It is a painful and terrible truth, but it is of no benefit to conceal it, for the harm it represents remains, even if hidden.

“Poor men -- how bad you are! If I were to thunder this truth from the heavens, man would be left offended by it, like the Pharisees when I denounced them, uncovering their hidden vices.

“But it is as I say. *Holy, true peace is not desired by all. You are so obtuse and besmeared with wicked tendencies that you don't even manage to hear the tone of the truth which One who is more than you discloses to you. But that is the truth -- there cannot be another truth, for there is one alone.*

“We are always dealing with that same theme: 'If there were ten just men...'¹⁰⁶ ¹⁰⁷ But there are so few just men as opposed to the mass of the unjust. Satan has an immense number of children and servants. The Son of God has an insignificant number of *true* children and *true* servants. And the cause of your ruin lies in this imbalance.”

 The Forerunners	 Antichrist's Reign	 Peace/Truce	 End/Judgment
--	---	--	---

Christ As The Firstborn And His Spiritual Kingdom, The Spiritual Course Of Mankind After The Fall. The Progressive Spiritualization Of All True Christians. Christ's "New Evangelization"¹⁰⁸

Jesus says:

“I am the 'Firstborn from among the dead,'¹⁰⁹ in the human and divine orders.

“Firstborn in the human order because I am the son, on my mother's side, of Adam; *I am the first one begotten*, of the lineage of Adam, *to have been born as all the children of those created by my Father should have been born.*

¹⁰⁶ See June 11.

¹⁰⁷ ET: Genesis 8:32.

¹⁰⁸ NB43, August 16, 1943, p. 241

¹⁰⁹ ET: Colossians 1:18; see also Apocalypse 1:5.

“Do not close your eyes. Mary was born by the will of God without stain, *and this preservation was willed justly to prepare my coming. But without a special will, Mary, born of a man and a woman joined together according to the law of nature, would not have been different from all the other creatures proceeding from the contaminated root of Adam.* She would have been a great ‘just person,’ like many men and women in ancient times, but nothing more. *Grace, Life of the soul, would have been slain in Her by original sin.*

“*It is I who have overcome death and Death, I who have called back to Life the dead in Limbo.* They were sleeping. Like Lazarus, *whose resurrection*¹¹⁰ *veils this truer one.* I called them. And they rose again. I, born of a woman who was the daughter of Adam, but without the original stain -- that is, as all the children of Adam should have been -- *am thus the Firstborn, in the natural order, of Adam, born alive in the midst of those begotten dead of Adam.*

“I am the ‘Firstborn’ in the divine order *because I am the Son of the Father, the Begotten One,* not created by Him.

“To beget means to produce a life. To create means to form. I can create a new flower. The artist can create a new work. But only a father and a mother can generate a life.

“I am, then, the ‘Firstborn’ *because, born of God, I am at the head of all those born (according to the grace) of God.*

“When by my Death I violently shook the gates of the hereafter and drew those sleeping out to the first resurrection, *I also opened the sluices of the mystical lakes in whose washing the sign which kills is cleansed away, the Death of the spirit dies, the real Death, and the Life of the spirit is born, real Life.*

“Finally, I am the ‘Firstborn’ from among the dead because my Flesh entered Heaven *first,* which at the ultimate Resurrection the flesh of the saints will enter *whose spirits in Light await the glorification of their complete self, as is only right, for they sanctified themselves by overcoming the flesh and martyrizing it to carry it to victory, as is only right, for the disciples are like the Master, by the Master’s loving will, and I, your Master, entered Glory with my Flesh, which was martyred for the glory of God.*

“Later on I shall speak to you about the two resurrections, always viewed by you in human terms, when they should be viewed with spiritual sight.

“*This Primogeniture of mine, divine and human, gives Me, as a consequence, sovereign rights, for the firstborn son of a king is always the one who inherits the crown.* And what king is more of a King than my Father?

“*An eternal King,* whose kingdom has neither beginning nor end and against whom no enemy has power. *A single King* without rivals who raises Me, in begetting Me, to his identical sovereignty, for I am One with the Father, consubstantial with Him, inseparable from Him, a living, active, perfect part of

¹¹⁰ ET: John 11:1-44.

Him. *A holy, holy, holy King* of such Perfection that it is not imaginable for a human mind. It flashes out in Heaven, on the earth, and over the abysses and pervades all that is -- the glorious holiness of my Father, holiness which We adore, for it is the holiness by which we are begotten and from which we proceed.

“Glory, glory, glory be to the Father, Maria, glory forever, for from Him comes every good, *and I, your Savior, am the first Good.*

“My kingdom is not of this earth, according to what it means to reign on earth. But it is a Kingdom *of the earth.* For I shall have a kingdom on the earth. *A visible, real Kingdom, not just a spiritual one, as it now is, and for a few. The time will come when I shall be the sole and true King of this earth, which I have bought with my Blood, of which I have been created King by the Father, with all power over it.* When will I come? What does the hour amount to, as compared to eternity? And what will the hour matter to you when you are in eternity?

“I shall come. *I shall not have new flesh because I already have a perfect flesh. I shall evangelize, not as I evangelized, but with a new Power, for then the good will be not humanly good, as the disciples at my first coming were, but they will be spiritually good, and the wicked will be spiritually wicked, Satanically wicked, perfectly wicked. The form will thus be consonant with the circumstances,* for if I were to use the form I used twenty centuries ago, it would be obsolete -- for the perfect, in terms of goodness, *and it would mean giving the Satanic ones a chance to cause an offense which it is not permitted to cause to the glorified Word.* Like a finely-knit net, *I shall pull behind my Light those who have reached spiritual subtleness but those weighed down through the union of their flesh with Satan, the spiritually Dead, whom the soul’s corruption keeps sunk in the slime, will not enter into my Light and will finish becoming corrupted in the union of Evil with Darkness.*

“For the time being I am preparing the future time by using particularly the Word that descends from the heavens to the souls ready to receive it. I make you into radio-telephone operators intent on hearing the teaching which is perfect and which I have already given *and do not change, for the Truth is One,* but it has been forgotten or deformed, *excessively forgotten and excessively deformed, for it was useful to forget it or deform it.*

“*I am doing this because I have mercy on Humanity, which is dying without the bread of the spirit.* As I have given Myself as bread for your souls, *so I now offer my Word as bread for your spirits.* And I repeat, ‘Blessed are those who hear the word of God and observe it.’”¹¹¹

In the Evening

¹¹¹ ET: Luke 11:28.

Jesus says:

“I said that my new coming will have a new form and power consonant with the circumstances, and I explained to you what men will be like then. *The time of the spirit must come.*

“Man has set out from deep darkness and an enormous weight of slime, after having lost the divine Light *by his own will*, obeying the Enemy’s seduction, whose real being is concealed in the fruit which teaches Good and Evil -- that is, which has disclosed to man what God, for man’s own good, had hidden from matter, the mind, and the heart. You would have been so pure, so peaceful, so honest, and so devout if you had not bitten into the threefold concupiscence which is sweet to the mouth, but bitter to the spirit -- more than the vinegar and gall which were brought to Me on the Cross!¹¹²

“Having plunged from his paradisiacal dwelling on the earth, oppressed by the revelation of his flesh, profaned by lust, tortured by remorse at having caused his own suffering, anguished at the conviction that he had prompted the punitive wrath of God the Creator, man was nothing but a poor animal being wherein all the lower forces struggled and rose up.

“I have already called your attention¹¹³ to the difference between the precepts given to Moses and my own -- necessary precepts, in their irritating crudeness, to put a brake on the tendencies of man, a piece of flesh barely infused with psychological movement given by a soul that was mortally wounded and had fainted into a spiritual coma. The memory of the lost Light, living on in the depths of the soul, spurred his steps towards the light.¹¹⁴ A very hard road because matter weighs more than the spirit and drags it down. From time to time the goodness of the Eternal gave mankind ‘beacons’ for the tempestuous crossing towards the true Light. The patriarchs and prophets -- these are the beacons of mankind in search of the port of Light.

“Then the One whom John, the Beloved, calls ‘the true Light that enlightens every man’¹¹⁵ came.

“I came as Light of the world and Word of the Father and I brought Peace back to you with the Father, the embrace making people become children of the Most High once again.

“It is I who have relit the languishing life of your spirits.

“It is I who have taught you the need to be born in the spirit.

¹¹² ET: Matthew 27:48; Mark 15:36; Luke 23:36; John 19:29.

¹¹³ ET: In the July 9, 1943 dictation (Q43:117), a text not quoted in this Book.

¹¹⁴ ET: Alternative translation: “led their *forbears* towards the light.” The Italian original is uncertain (‘passi’ or ‘padri’).

¹¹⁵ ET: John 1:9.

“It is I who have gathered in my Person all the Light, Wisdom, and Love of the Trinity and have brought it to you.

“It is I who by my sacrifice have refastened the chain, in the place where it had broken, joining you once again to the Father and to the Spirit of Truth.

“It is I who, making my scaffold into a lever, have raised up your spirits, lying in the mire, and given them a powerful push to proceed towards the Light of God, towards Myself, who await you in Heaven.

“But few in the world over the centuries have benefited from it for the world has always preferred the darkness to the Light. By my atrocious death I obtained the coming of the perfect Spirit for you; but, over the centuries, mankind has increasingly rejected it, as it has rejected Me, as it has rejected the Father.

“Like a liqueur which is filtered, it has happened that what is heavy has sunk to the bottom and the clear parts have remained floating. In the course of the centuries, so has it happened with man. Those who have wanted to remain flesh and blood have sunk lower and lower, while those -- the aristocracy of my flock -- who have wanted to live in the spirit have become increasingly spiritual. In the middle are the nameless lukewarm. These are two opposing movements of the mass. One part -- unfortunately, the largest part -- increasingly absorbs Satan and sinks below the level of the beasts. The other part -- small -- increasingly absorbs Christ, feeding on his Word, which has not been silent for twenty centuries, and becomes more and more capable of comprehending the Spirit.

“When I use special means it is to accelerate -- for the times are moving faster -- the fullness of the teaching of the Word and the fullness of the spiritual formation of the true disciples, of the true subjects of King Jesus Christ. Not the King of the Jews, as a weak man who thought he was strong with a poor power said and wrote,¹¹⁶ but the King of the World before the judgment of the world.

“Man, proceeding towards the final hour, must reach spirituality. But, understand Me. God is spirit; Satan is spirit. The former is the Spirit of Perfection. The latter is the spirit of sin. In the mass, split in two by its own will, which God respects, each portion follows the part chosen. The children of the Most High and my brothers and sisters choose God’s part and out of love for Us spiritualize the flesh. The servants of Satan and children of the Beast, Lucifer’s portion and out of slavery willed by themselves -- slay the spirit under carnality and make their spirits a corrupt and repugnant flesh and blood.

“When I reign over and in the spirits who have reached that maturity which now belongs to individuals and will then belong to the entire mass of true Christians, I shall address this portion alone, perfecting it with the ultimate

¹¹⁶ ET: Mark 15:26; John 19:19.

teaching, with a new evangelization, not different in the meaning, which cannot change, but in the power; which they will then understand and which today they would not understand. The proof is that I must choose special creatures who are worthy of so much because of their own efforts or who have been rendered worthy through a miracle of love.

“Twenty centuries ago I spoke to everyone. When the time comes, I shall speak to these alone, convinced of the uselessness speaking to the others. You have only one thing that’s good: the good will of love. But it is that which suffices for Me. Upon it I set my teaching chair as a Master to make the little soul into a pedestal, to say, say again, and still again the words of love and of an invitation to Love, which guides and saves.

“I shall come with my glorified Flesh.

“I got your curiosity going by saying this. You wouldn’t be a woman if you weren’t curious. But I say what I deem useful to say for your good and not what would nourish your useless curiosity. If being the Master is dear to Me, I am able to choose from the midst of Truth those truths which it is useful for you to know, and that’s all.

“So be content to know that it is right and fitting in the Kingdom of the spirit, whose subjects will have spiritualized their flesh, for the King to be He who robed his perfect Spirit in flesh to redeem all flesh and sanctify it and sanctified his own with a twofold sanctity, because it was innocent flesh, perfectly innocent, and flesh immolated in the sacrifice of love.

“I shall come, with my glorified Flesh, to gather together creatures for the final battle against the Enemy. I shall judge in my shining robe of glorified Flesh the bodies of those coming to life again for the last judgment. I shall return to Heaven forever, after having condemned to eternal death the flesh that did not want to become spirit. And I shall go back as the resplendent King of a resplendent people wherein the work of the Father and of the Son and of the Spirit will be glorified by the creation of the perfect human body, as the Father made it in Adam, beautiful with indescribable beauty, by the redemption of Adam’s seed through the work of the Son, and by the sanctification worked by the Spirit.”

The Forerunners Antichrist’s Reign Peace/Truce End/Judgment

They Shall Look Upon The One They Have Pierced¹¹⁷

Jesus says:

¹¹⁷ NB43, August 17, 1943, p. 247

“When I have it said by the mouth of the Beloved that ‘even those who pierced Me’ will see Me,¹¹⁸ I do not intend to refer to those who pierced Me twenty centuries ago.

“When I come, the time of the triumph of my Kingdom will have come. I have explained to you¹¹⁹ what my Kingdom and its subjects will be like. It will be the time of the testimony of the spirit, *the divine part enclosed in you which gives you the image and likeness of God*. As it is such, the spiritual parts will be the ones under consideration before the decision of judgment which separates the accursed from the blessed.¹²⁰ And among the accursed *will be those who with their sacrilegious spirit, which has sought the Beast, worshipped the Beast, and prostituted itself with the Beast, have, over the centuries, pierced the divine spirit of the Son of God after having pierced the flesh of the Son of Man in the founders of the accursed succession.*

“*The Son of Man*. Have you ever reflected that in this term lies the truth explained yesterday? *By my human lineage, I am the (firstborn) Son of Adam.*

“The multitude of those piercing Me is as numerous as the sand on the shore of the sea. Its grains cannot be counted.

“*All the crimes, all the sins committed against Me -- now untouchable as regards human suffering, but still sensitive to the offenses committed against my Spirit -- are registered in the books recording men’s deeds.*

“*All the betrayals after my benefits, all the disavowals, all the denials, and the sins against the Truth, brought by Me, all the sins against the Holy Spirit, who spoke through my mouth and came through Me to illuminate the words of the Word -- all these piercings, committed over the centuries, by the race which I wanted to save, though knowing it to be so disinclined towards Goodness, will be present within the spirits brought together, who, in the dazzling Light of my flashing, will recognize what they did with their stubborn will to contest what was said and done by One who could not lie or perform works which were not useful according to the divine law of love.*

“*The deniers of Love are those who have pierced Me and, along with Me, have struck Him who has begotten Me and Him who proceeds from our love as Father and Son. All judgment is entrusted to the Son, but the Son will also pronounce judgment on all the sins committed against the Father and the Spirit.*

“*The bearer of Life, the eternal Living One and the eternal Immolated One, whom the world wanted dead, slain as one slays the delinquent who does harm -- whereas I was the Holy One who forgave, the Good One who did good,*

¹¹⁸ ET: See John 19:37. Notice that whereas Modernists falsely claim that the Evangelists put words into Jesus' mouth, here we see Jesus saying exactly the opposite: *He* put words into His Beloved's mouth.

¹¹⁹ ET: In the dictation of August 16, 1943 (ET:29-30).

¹²⁰ ET: Matthew 25:31-46.

the Powerful One who healed, the Wise One who instructed -- is *He who will open the gates to true Death and enclose therein both the bodies and the souls of those who have pierced Him. The bearer of the Life which is lived in Heaven will close the gates of Hell upon the untouchable number of the accursed, who have preferred Death to Life.*

“I shall do so, because I, Jesus Christ, the Son of God, your Savior and Lord, the eternal Judge, hold the keys to Death and Hell.”

The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment

The Victors Over The Beast¹²¹

Jesus says:

“I shall continue to explain to you the passages which I deem appropriate.

“It is said, ‘I shall have the victor feed on the tree of life...’¹²² And this thought has been applied to Me.

“Yes, I am the tree of eternal life, and I give Myself to you as food in the Eucharist, and *the sight of Me* will be the joyful food of the victors in the other life. But there is another meaning which many do not know precisely because many who comment on Me are not ‘victors.’

“Who is a victor? What is needed to be one? Works resounding with heroism? No. Those who are victorious would then be too few in number. *The victors are those who in themselves gain victory over the Beast, who would like to get the better of them.* In truth, between atrocious, but brief martyrdom, with the help of supernatural and natural factors, and a secret, obscure, and continuous struggle, *the latter*, on the scales of God, is of greater weight, or at least of a weight of a different kind, *but precious.*

“*No tyrant is a greater tyrant than the flesh and the Devil. And those who are able to gain victory over the flesh and the Devil and make the flesh a spirit and the devil a vanquished foe are ‘the victors.’*

“*But to be such people must have given themselves totally to Love. Totally: those who love with all their strength reserve nothing for themselves, and, in not keeping anything for themselves, they keep nothing for the flesh and the devil.* They give everything to their God, and God gives everything to those who love Him.

¹²¹ NB43, August 18, 1943, p. 249

¹²² ET: Apocalypse 2:7.

“He gives them his Word. This is what He gives the victors to eat beginning on this earth, nor could He give them anything greater. He gives Me, the Father’s Word, to be the food of the spirit consecrated to heaven.

“My Word descends to nourish the souls given entirely to their Lord God. My Word comes to be the priest and guide for you, that seek the true guide and see so many weak guides for the throngs perishing without a true guide. You that have understood the Truth know that this alone is necessary: to live by my Word, believe in my Word, and walk according to my Word.

“What would you think of someone wanting to live on sweets, liqueurs, and smoke? You say that person will die because that isn’t the food one needs to live healthily. The same holds for those who weary themselves with a thousand superficial things and do not take into account that which is the core of the whole life of the soul: my Word.

“Why don’t the Mass, the Eucharist, and Confession sanctify you as ought to happen? Because to you they are purely formal acts; you don’t make them fruitful through attention to my Word. Even worse: by lukewarmness, hypocrisy, and more or less serious sin you choke off my Word, which I hurl from the heights of Heaven as a summons and light for you.

“You do not love Me -- that’s all there is to it. To love doesn’t mean a superficial visit of worldly courtesy from time to time. To love means to live with one’s soul united, fused to a single fire which nourishes another soul. Then, in fusion, understanding also takes place.

“I no longer speak from afar, from the heights of the heavens, but take up my dwelling -- and with Me, the Father and the Spirit, for we are one single reality -- in the hearts of those who love Me,¹²³ and my word is no longer a whisper, but a full Voice, no longer isolated, but continuous. I am then the true ‘Master.’ I am the One who twenty centuries ago tirelessly spoke to the crowds and who now finds his delight in speaking to his beloved ones who are able to listen to Him, and I make them into my channels of grace.

“How much Life I give you! True Life, holy Life, eternal Life, joyful Life, through my word; which is the Word of the Father and the Love of the Spirit. Yes, in truth I have ‘the victor’ eat of the fruit of the tree of Life. I give it to him beginning on this earth through my spiritual doctrine, which I return to bear among men so that not all men will perish. I give it to you in the other life by my being in your midst eternally.

“I am true Life. Remain in Me, my beloved ones, and you will not know death.”

¹²³ ET: John 14:23.

The Hidden Manna Of The Word¹²⁴

Jesus says:

"As we continue to see the words of the Beloved disciple with my sight, it is understood that the 'hidden manna'¹²⁵ is also my Word. *Manna, because it brings together all the sweetness of love of our Trinity, which is the Father, Brother, and Spouse of your souls and loves you with the three highest loves. Hidden, because it is spoken in the secrecy of the heart to those deserving to savor it.*

"I would certainly like to be able to have it rain down on everyone and nourish all with it. But it is said, 'Do not give pearls to swine and holy things to dogs.'¹²⁶ And many who have even been washed in my Baptism and redeemed by my Blood are lower than swine and more canine than dogs.

"[Maria,] you have read that the manna in the desert was ruined for the ancient Hebrews, undeserving of possessing it.¹²⁷ They proved undeserving because of their lack of faith and their human concern. *Can I have less respect for my Word than I had for the manna destined to nourish the stomach, whereas the Word is destined to nourish the spirit?*

"I thus give the manna to *those who gain victory over the lower part, with all its tendencies towards nonfaith, the senses, and base, selfish concerns.* I give the manna of my Word, which fills your spirits with sweetness and light. I give the 'little white stone on which a new name is written'¹²⁸ -- that is, *on which a Truth which is silenced for the unworthy is revealed. It is the Truth which opens to you the gates of eternal Life, which gives you its keys, and sets you on the Way to arrive at the Gate of my heavenly City.*

"I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life.¹²⁹ Apart from Me there is no other way, truth, or life. Those who overcome all obstacles to follow Me will become pillars in my temple, and through the Word which they have kept and practiced, after having been saved in the tremendous hour of the trial of temptation which slays, they will have a place on my own throne, together with the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit."

¹²⁴ NB43, August 19, 1943, p. 250

¹²⁵ ET: Apocalypse 2:17.

¹²⁶ ET: See Matthew 7:6.

¹²⁷ ET: See Exodus 16:16-20.

¹²⁸ ET: Apocalypse 2:17.

¹²⁹ ET: John 14:6.

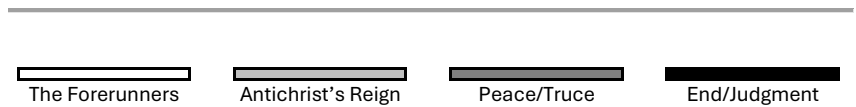
He further says:

"The world is perishing because it has not kept my Word, because it has neglected and derided it. *No human force will be of avail to check the world's race towards the abyss because the one thing which saves is lacking to the world and to the world's forces. My Law.*

"An empty space has been created in the mystical forest which I had cultivated for you so that you would have a dwelling place in the shadow of my provident love. Your sins have created it, and in that space the eternal Serpent has installed himself as the master who poisons you with his breath and slays you with his bite and prevents my Law from being an agent of Goodness in you.

"You have fumes, venom, horror, and desperation in yourselves and around you. And you could have had Light, Peace, Hope, and Joy. You could have had this if you had followed my Word, for I consumed all the horror of life to protect you from that and did so with the atrocity of that agony which I suffered for you.

"But you have cast my gift aside and called Satan to be your master and king. And Satan instructs and rules you, salts and lashes you to make you worthy of his hell."



The Seven Seals. Commentary On The Antichrist And Judgment¹³⁰

Jesus says:

"If one were to observe closely what has been going on for some time and especially since the beginning of this century preceding the conclusion of the second millennium, one ought to think that the seven seals have been opened.¹³¹ Never before as at present have I gone into action to return among you with my Word to gather together the multitudes of my chosen ones so as to set out with them and my angels to do battle against the hidden forces working to bore open the gates of the abyss for mankind.

"War, famine, pestilences, the instruments of military homicide -- which are more than the ferocious beasts mentioned by the Beloved one -- earthquakes, signs in the sky, eruptions in the entrails of the earth, and the miraculous calls towards mystical ways of little souls moved by Love, persecutions against my followers, the loftiness of souls and the lowliness of bodies -- nothing is

¹³⁰ NB43, August 20, 1943, p. 252

¹³¹ ET: Apocalypse, chapters 5-8.

lacking among the signs whereby the time of my Wrath and my Judgment may seem to you to be near.

“In the horror you experience,¹³² you exclaim, ‘The time has come, it cannot get more tremendous than this!’ And you loudly call for the end which will free you. The blameworthy call for it, mocking and cursing, as always; the good call for it who can no longer bear to see Evil triumphing over Good.

“Peace, my chosen ones! A little while longer, and I shall come. *The sum of sacrifice needed to justify the creation of man and the Sacrifice of the Son of God is not yet fulfilled.* The marshaling of my cohorts is not yet finished, and the angels of the Sign have not yet placed the glorious seal upon all the brows of those who have deserved to be chosen for glory.¹³³

“The disgrace of the earth is such that its fumes, not very different from those issuing from Satan’s dwelling, rise to the feet of God’s throne with a sacrilegious impetus. Before the appearing of my Glory it is necessary for east and west to be purified so as to be worthy of the appearance of my Face.

“Purifying incense and oil consecrating the great, boundless altar where the last Mass will be celebrated by Me, the eternal Pontiff, served at the altar by all the saints which heaven and earth contain in that hour, are the prayers and sufferings of my saints of my Heart’s beloved, of those already marked with my Sign -- of the blessed Cross -- before the angels have marked them.

“It is on earth that the sign is engraved, and it is your will which engraves it. Then the angels fill it with incandescence, indelible gold which makes your brows shine like the sun in my Paradise.

“Great is the present horror,¹³⁴ my beloved; but *how very, very much it still has to increase to become the Horror of the last times!* And if it truly seems that wormwood has been mixed into man’s bread, wine, and sleep, *a very, very great deal more wormwood must still drip into your waters, onto your tables, and onto your couches before you have reached the total bitterness which will be the companion of the last days of this race created by Love, saved by Love, which has sold itself to Hatred.*

“For if Cain went roaming over the earth because he had shed innocent blood -- though still blood contaminated by original sin -- and found no one to deliver him from the torment of the memory, for God’s sign was upon him for his punishment -- and he begot in bitterness and in bitterness lived and saw others live and in bitterness died -- what is the race of man to suffer, which in fact shed and sheds, the most innocent Blood which has saved it?

“Go right on thinking, then, that these are the warning signs, *but it is not yet the hour.*

¹³² ET: World War II.

¹³³ ET: Apocalypse 7:3.

¹³⁴ ET: World War II.

*“There are forerunners of the one I said could be called ‘Negation,’ ‘Evil incarnate,’ ‘Horror,’ ‘Sacrilege,’ ‘the Son of Satan,’ ‘Vengeance,’ and ‘Destruction;’ and I could go on giving him names designating him clearly and fearfully. But he is not yet present.*¹³⁵

“He will be a very lofty person, as lofty as a star. Not a human star shining in a human sky. But a star from a supernatural sphere that, yielding to the flattery of the Enemy, will experience pride after humility, atheism after faith, lust after chastity; the hunger for gold after Gospel poverty, and a thirst for honors after concealment.

“To see a star plummet from the firmament is less fearful than to see this creature, already chosen, plunge into the coils of Satan -- this creature will copy the sin of his elective father. Lucifer, out of pride, became the accursed and Dark One. The Antichrist, out of the pride of an hour, will become the accursed and dark one after having been a star in my army.

“As a reward for his denial -- which will shake the heavens with a shudder of horror and make the pillars of my Church tremble in the dismay his fall will occasion -- he will obtain the complete assistance of Satan, who will give him the keys to the pit of the abyss in order for him to open it.¹³⁶ *But let him open it altogether so that the instruments of horror will come out which Satan has concocted over millennia to lead men to complete despair, in such a way that they will invoke Satan as King by themselves and run after the Antichrist, the only one who will be able to open wide the gates of the abyss to make the King of the abyss come out, just as the Christ opened the gates of the Heavens to make grace and forgiveness come out, which make men similar to God and kings of an eternal Kingdom in which I am the King of Kings.*

*“As the Father has given Me all power, so Satan will give him all power; and especially all power for seduction, to drag after him the weak and those corrupted by the fevers of ambitions, as he, their chief, is. But in his unbridled ambition he will still find Satan’s supernatural aids to be too scanty, and he will seek additional aid in the enemies of Christ, who, armed with increasingly deadly weapons which their lust for Evil led them to create to sow despair in the masses, will help him until God pronounces his ‘Enough’ and burns them to ashes with the splendor of his appearance.*¹³⁷

“There has been much -- too much -- speculation over the centuries -- and not out of a good thirst and honest desire to remedy the insistent evil, but, rather, only out of futile curiosity -- regarding what John says in chapter 10 of

¹³⁵ ET: As of 1943.

¹³⁶ ET: Apocalypse 9:1-2.

¹³⁷ ET: 2 Thessalonians 2:7-8. On a typewritten copy, Valtorta wrote in pencil: “Defeat of the Antichrist, but not the universal Judgment.”

the Apocalypse. But you should know, Maria, that I allow what may be useful to know to be known and conceal what I find to be useful for you not to know.

“You are too weak, poor children of mine, to know the proper names of the apocalyptic ‘seven thunders.’¹³⁸ My angel said to John, ‘Seal what the seven thunders have said and do not write it down.’¹³⁹ *I say that it is not yet time for what is sealed to be opened, and if John did not write it down, I will not say it.*

“Besides, it is not your lot to taste that horror¹⁴⁰ and therefore... *It only remains for you to pray for those who will have to undergo it, that strength will not fail in them and they will not come to form part of the mob of those who, under the lash of the scourge, will not experience repentance and will curse God instead of imploring his help. Many of these are already on the earth, and their seed will be seven times seven more demoniacal than they are.*

“I, not my angel, *I Myself swear that when the thunder of the seventh trumpet is finished and the horror of the seventh scourge is fulfilled,¹⁴¹ without the race of Adam recognizing Christ as King, Lord, Redeemer, and God, and, with the invocation of his Mercy, his Name, in which there is salvation, I, by my Name and by my Nature, swear that I shall halt that instant in eternity. Time will cease, and the Judgment will begin.¹⁴² The Judgment eternally separating Good from Evil after millennia of coexistence on earth.¹⁴³*

“*Good will return to the fount from which it came. Evil will fall to the place to which it was previously cast down at the moment of Lucifer’s rebellion and from which it emerged to disturb the weakness of Adam in the seduction of the senses and of pride.*

“*Then the mystery of God will be fulfilled. Then you will know God. Every man on earth, from Adam to the last man born, gathered together like grains of sand on the dune of the eternal beach, will see God the Lord, Creator, Judge, and King.*

“Yes, you will see this God whom you have loved, cursed, followed, mocked, blessed, insulted, served, and escaped from. You will see Him. *You*

¹³⁸ ET: Apocalypse 10:3.

¹³⁹ ET: Apocalypse 10:4.

¹⁴⁰ ET: Let the reader bear in mind that this statement, true when written in 1943, may very well no longer apply.

¹⁴¹ ET: As previously, Valtorta annotates: “The seven thunders correspond to the seven plagues described later on, on August 22” (see ET:48-50).

¹⁴² ET: Matthew 25:31-46.

¹⁴³ As above, the writer notes: “When He speaks here, He is referring to the time of peace which will precede the end, a time in which the last selection will begin during the final manifestation of Christ the King, whom many will not want to follow. The mystery of God is fulfilled immediately afterwards.” But there is uncertainty in the reading of the note.

will then know how much He deserved your love and how meritorious it was to serve Him.

“Oh the joy of those who have consumed themselves in loving and obeying Him! Oh, the terror of those who have been his Judases, his Cains, those who have preferred to follow the Adversary and Seducer instead of the Word made man, in whom there is Redemption -- the Christ: the Way of the Father; Jesus: the most holy Truth; the Word: true Life.”

The Forerunners Antichrist's Reign Peace/Truce End/Judgment
The Two Witnesses, The Satanic War Behind Human War¹⁴⁴

Jesus says:

“In my two witnesses are concealed all the masters in faith: pontiffs, bishops, the inspired, doctors of the Church, and souls pervaded by the Light and by the Voice. With their voices purified of every human timbre, they have proclaimed Me and the truth of my doctrine and have set a seal of holiness, pain, and even blood as confirmation of their voices.

“Hated, like Me, the Master of masters, the Holy of Holies, they have always been tormented, more or less, by the world and by power, *which find in them the ones who by their very conduct say to the world and to the great of the world, 'What you do is not licit.'* But when the hour of the son of Satan comes, Hell, rising from the abyss opened by the Antichrist, will ruthlessly wage war on them and, to human sight, will overcome and kill them.

“*But it will not be true death. It will instead be the Life of lives, true and glorious Life.* For if those who follow my Law in the commandments will have Life, *what an infinite fullness of Life will be possessed by those following my Gospel counsels of perfection as well and spurring their being along with Me to the point of complete sacrifice out of love for their Jesus, the eternal Im-molated One, whose imitators they become to the point of sacrificing their lives?*

“*Called to a brilliant resurrection, they will be the ones who strip themselves of what is dearest to man -- life -- just for the sake of following Me out of love for Me and for their brothers and sisters.* I will never tire of repeating this: there is nothing greater than love in Heaven and on earth, and there is no greater love than that of those who give their lives for the sake of their brothers and sisters.”

Jesus further says:

¹⁴⁴ NB43, August 21, 1943, p. 256

“I told you one day¹⁴⁵ that in this present tragedy¹⁴⁶ the forces of Satan are already in motion; he has sent his black angels to mobilize the kingdoms of the earth against each other. *The supernatural Battle has already begun. It exists. It is behind the scenes of the little human battle.*¹⁴⁷

“*Small, not in terms of the extent of its volume, but in terms of the cause. The little human cause is not at all the origin of it. It is not. The true cause which makes brothers into so many murderous beasts biting and killing each other is another.*

“*You fight each other with your bodies. But in reality it is souls that engage in mutual combat. You fight at the command of four or five powerful men. You think it's that way. No. Only one is the executor of this ruin. One who is on the earth because you want him there, but he is not of this earth. It is Satan that pulls the strings of this slaughter, in which more souls than bodies die.*

“*This is one of the initial battles. The kingdom of the Antichrist needs a cement made of blood and hatred to become consolidated.*

“And you, that are no longer able to love, serve him in proper fashion and butcher each other and curse the one who is not to blame for this misfortune of yours: God, *who fights with his angels to protect what is his: Faith in the hearts of Christians and Goodness in the hearts of the good.*

“It is not I who make the selection, for the time being. *It is you that select yourselves, spontaneously.* Those who, in spite of the horror, are able to grasp that God remains God -- that is, Goodness and Justice -- and that salvation lies in following the Law of God *separate themselves from those who deny these truths. The former rise up to meet the Light; the others plummet down towards the Darkness.*

“Satan, with his demons, really aims to make a second ascent to Heaven. But, rebuffed by my archangel, he plunges to the earth *to defeat God by way of the hearts of his children. For every soul that is lost is a defeat for God.* And Satan easily succeeds because the hearts of men no longer have a spiritual flame. *They no longer have the life of the spirit. They are a knot of sin in which the threefold lust which kills the spirit prospers.*

“Blessed are those who have overcome by virtue of the blood of the Lamb and have remained and will always remain faithful. Blessed will be those who have rebuffed Satan and his enticements and have not worried about his apparent triumphs, about the efforts he launches in this hour, which he knows is brief for his kingdom of accursedness, and who remain faithful to Christ and to his Church, dismembered by anti-Christian persecution, an unvanquished martyr -- like the Great Martyr, her Spouse, Christ Crucified -- but rising again more

¹⁴⁵ In the dictations of June 4 and June 19 (ET:7-8).

¹⁴⁶ ET: World War II.

¹⁴⁷ ET: World War II.

lovely, after apparent death, to enter, glorified, into Heaven, where the true Pontiff awaits her to celebrate the wedding.”

The Forerunners

Antichrist's Reign

Peace/Truce

End/Judgment

The Demons Aping God's Angles, The True Knowledge Of Christianity, The Seven Last Plagues, The Earth As Babylon Among Numerous Worlds¹⁴⁸

Jesus says:

“I told you one day¹⁴⁹ that the eternal envious one seeks to copy God in all God's manifestations.

“God has his faithful archangels. Satan has his. Michael -- God's witness -- has a hellish imitator; and so does Gabriel -- God's strength.

“The first beast, on coming out of the sea -- who with a blasphemous voice has the deluded proclaim, ‘Who is like the beast?’¹⁵⁰ -- corresponds to Michael. Vanquished and wounded by the latter in the battle between God's hosts and Lucifer's, at the beginning of time, healed by Satan, he feels deathly hate towards Michael, and love, if love can be spoken of among the demons -- but it is better to say ‘absolute subjection’ -- for Satan.

“A faithful minister of his accursed king, he uses intelligence to do harm to the descendants of man, God's creature, and to serve his master. Limitless, measureless force is used by him to persuade man to cancel out my sign on his own, which horrifies the spirits of darkness. Once it is removed, *by sin which takes away grace, the luminous chrism upon your being, the Beast can approach* and induce man to worship him as if he were a God¹⁵¹ and serve him in crime.

“If man reflected on the kind of subjection he gives himself over to by wedding sin, he would not sin. But man does not reflect. He looks at the moment and the joy of the moment, and, worse than Esau, he exchanges God's fatherhood for a plate of lentils.¹⁵²

“Satan, however, does not use only this violent seducer of man. No matter how little man reflects, in general, there are still too many men who, not out of love, but out of fear of punishment, do not want to sin seriously. And then

¹⁴⁸ NB43, August 22, 1943, p. 258

¹⁴⁹ In the dictation of June 19 (ET:7).

¹⁵⁰ ET: Apocalypse 13:4.

¹⁵¹ ET: Apocalypse 13:5-8.

¹⁵² ET: Genesis 25:29-34.

the other Satanic minister appears, the second beast.¹⁵³ In the guise of a lamb, he has the spirit of a dragon.

“It is the second manifestation of Satan and corresponds to Gabriel, for he announces the Beast and is his strongest force: *the one that dismantles without seeming to and persuades with lying sweetness that it is right to follow in the Beast’s footsteps.*

“It is useless to speak of political power and of the earth. No. If anything, you can apply to the former the name of *human Power* and to the latter that of *human Knowledge*. *And if Power by itself produces rebels, Knowledge, when it is only human, corrupts without producing rebellion and leads a boundless number of initiates to perdition. How many are lost through mental pride causing them to scorn the Faith and kill the soul with the pride which separates them from God!* For if I will reap the harvest of the earth¹⁵⁴ on the last day; *there is already a reaper in your midst. And it is this spirit of Evil, who cuts you down and doesn’t turn you into ears of eternal grain, but into straw for the dwelling places of Satan.*

“One, one science alone, is necessary. I will repeat a thousand times: to know God and serve Him, to know Him in things, to see Him in events, and be able to distinguish Him from his adversary so as not to fall into perdition. Instead, you are concerned about increasing human knowledge *to the detriment of superhuman knowledge,*

“I do not condemn Knowledge. Rather, I am pleased that man should deepen the insights he has gradually been building up by knowledge, so as to be able to comprehend increasingly and admire Me in my works. I have given you intelligence for this. But you must use it to see God in the law of the star, in the formation of the flower in the conception of a being, and not use intelligence to violate life or deny the Creator.

“Rationalism, Humanism, Philosophism, Theosophism, Naturalism, Classicism, Darwinism -- you have schools and doctrines of all kinds and are concerned about them all, no matter how much Truth is very distorted or suppressed in them. You do not want to follow and deepen knowledge of the school of Christianity alone.

“A natural resistance, moreover. In deepening knowledge of religious culture, you would be obliged either to follow the Law -- and you do not want to do so -- or to confess openly that you want to trample upon the Law. And you don’t want to do this either. You thus *do not want* to become learned in super-natural Knowledge.

“But, poor fools! What will you do with your little schools and your little words when you have to take *my* examination? You have extinguished the

¹⁵³ ET: Apocalypse 13:11-18.

¹⁵⁴ ET: Apocalypse 14:14-16.

infinite light of true Knowledge in yourselves and have believed you are illuminating your souls with substitutes for light just like some poor madmen seeking to put out the sun by making a lot of little lamps into a new sun. But even if mists hide the sun, the sun is always in my firmament. *But even if with your doctrines you create mists concealing Knowledge and Truth, Truth and Knowledge always exist, for they come from Me, who am eternal.*

“Seek true Knowledge and you will understand Knowledge as it should be understood. Free your souls of all the artificial superstructures and lift up the true Faith therein. Like spires of a spiritual cathedral, Knowledge, Wisdom, Intellect and Fortitude and Humility and Continenence will bloom thereupon, for the true sage knows not only what is humanly knowable, but knows what is hardest of all: how to master himself in the passions of the flesh and make his lower part the pedestal to lift up his soul and launch his spirit towards the Heavens to meet Me, who come and am in all things and who love to be the true and holy Master of my brothers and sisters,

Later, Still on August 22

Jesus says:

“The seven last plagues¹⁵⁵ correspond to the seven peels of thunder¹⁵⁶ not described.¹⁵⁷ As always, they are figurative descriptions wherein *reality is not totally excluded*, however. I will explain to you what I deem appropriate to be explained to you in them.

“The first is the ulcer.

“Beginning with the times of Moses I punished creatures who had committed unforgivable sins against Me with disgusting diseases. The body of the sister of Moses, Mary; was covered with leprosy for having spoken badly about my servant, Moses.¹⁵⁸ How can the same -- and even worse -- fail to happen to those who speak ill of their God? Leprosy -- or whatever kind of ulcer -- spreads more and more *because more and more you have spread your sins against God and against the admirable work of God that you are.*

“When you wrap yourselves in lust, don’t you perhaps think you are committing a sin against God? Well, you certainly are, for you profane your bodies, where the spirit resides to receive Me, the Supreme Spirit. And how far is man’s lust going, when carried out with a cold, deliberate will? It is best not to examine closely this abyss of repugnant human degradation. I tell you that

¹⁵⁵ ET: Apocalypse 15:5 to 16:21.

¹⁵⁶ ET: Those mentioned in the August 20 dictation (ET:42).

¹⁵⁷ In the dictation of August 20.

¹⁵⁸ ET: Numbers 12:1-15.

certain animals were called unclean,¹⁵⁹ but man has already surpassed them *and will surpass them even more*, and if a new animal could be created, obtained by crossing monkeys with serpents and pigs, *it would be even less unclean than certain men with the appearance of man, but with an interior more lascivious and repellent than the filthiest animal.*

“As I told you, mankind is splitting increasingly. *The spiritual portion, as scanty as can be, is ascending. The carnal portion, extremely numerous, is descending.* It is descending to a frightful depth of vice. When the time of wrath has come, mankind will have reached the perfection of vice.

“And would you like the inner stench of their dead souls not to ooze out and corrupt the flesh, worshipped more than I and used for all forms of prostitution? And as the ulcers will be provoked by you, so You will fill the sea and the river waters with blood. You are already filling them with your slaughters, and the inhabitants of the waters are diminishing, killed by you, contributing to your hunger. You have trampled upon the gifts which God has given you for your material needs to such a point that earth, sky, and waters are becoming your enemies and deny you the fruits of the earth and the inhabitants of the waters, rivers, forests, and air.

“You kill. You even kill. You trample on the law of love and forgiveness. You shed your brothers’ and sisters’ blood, and especially the blood of the good, *whom you persecute precisely because they are good. Be careful, though, that God will not one day force you to satisfy your hunger and your thirst with the blood you have shed, in contrast to my order of peace and love.*

“You are rebels against the laws I have given you; rebels against you are the stars and planets which have until now given you light and heat as you needed, *obeying the rules I have indicated out of goodness towards you.*

“Repugnant illnesses as a mark of your vice, blood in the waters bearing witness to all the blood you have wanted to shed -- and in the midst of it there is mine -- fire from the sun to give you a foretaste of the eternal embers awaiting the accursed, darkness to warn you that darkness awaits whoever hates the Light -- all of this to lead you to reflect and repent.

“And it will be of no use. *You will go on plummeting. You will go on making your alliances with evil*, preparing the way for the ‘kings of the East’¹⁶⁰ -- *that is, for assistance from the Son of Evil.*

“My angels seem to be the ones that are bringing the plagues. *In reality, you are. You want them, and you shall have them.*

¹⁵⁹ ET: Leviticus, chapter 11.

¹⁶⁰ ET: “Kings of the East” translates the Italian “re d’Oriente.” Compare with “the kings from the rising of the sun” (Apocalypse 16:12), and consider Jesus’ choice of the Italian word “Oriente,” which can mean “east” or “[Masonic] lodge.”

“Having become dragons and beasts yourselves, by having wedded the Dragon¹⁶¹ and the Beast, you will give birth to unclean beings from your corrupt insides: *the absolute demoniacal doctrines* which by performing false prodigies will seduce the powerful and drag them into battle against God. *You will be so perverted that you will take what is a hellish creation to be heavenly prodigies.*

“Maria, now I will take your hand to lead you to the most obscure point in John’s book. The annotators of it have exhausted their capacity in many deductions to explain to themselves and to the multitudes who the ‘*great Babylon*’ is.¹⁶² With a human view, to which the jolts left by desired events or by events taking place were not unconnected, they have given the name of Babylon to many things.

“But how is it that they have never considered that the ‘*great Babylon*’ is *the whole Earth*? I would be a very small and limited God the Creator if I had created only the Earth *as an inhabited world*! With a beat of my will I have brought forth worlds upon worlds from nothing and cast them as luminous fine dust into the immensity of the firmament.

“The Earth, about which you are so proud and fierce, is nothing but one of the bits of fine dust rotating in unboundedness, and not the biggest one. *It is certainly the most corrupt one, though.* Lives upon lives are teeming in the millions of worlds which are the joy of your gaze on peaceful nights, *and the perfection of God will appear to you when, with the intellectual sight of your spirits rejoined to God, you are able to see the wonders of those worlds.*

“Isn’t the Earth really the *great harlot* that has committed fornication with all the powers of earth and hell, and haven’t the Earth’s inhabitants prostituted themselves -- bodies and souls -- just to triumph during the earthly day?

“That is certainly the case. *The crimes of the Earth have all the names of blasphemy, as the Beast does with whom the Earth and its inhabitants have allied themselves just to triumph. The seven sins are like a horrendous ornament on the head of the Beast, who transports the Earth and those of the earth to the pastures of Evil, and the ten horns,¹⁶³ a metaphorical number, serve to demonstrate the limitless acts of wickedness committed just to obtain, at any cost, what his ferocious covetousness wants.*

“Isn’t the Earth really soaked with the blood of the martyrs, inebriated by this holy liqueur, *which, having been drunk by its sacrilegious mouth, has changed therein into a filter for accursed drunkenness*? The Beast that carries it -- the *compendium and synthesis of all the evil done from Adam on just to triumph in the world and in the flesh* -- draws behind him those who by adoring him will become king for an hour of an accursed kingdom. *You are kings as*

¹⁶¹ ET: Apocalypse, chapter 12.

¹⁶² ET: Apocalypse, chapters 17-18.

¹⁶³ ET: Apocalypse 17:3-14.

children of God, and it is an eternal kingdom. But you become kings for an hour of an accursed kingdom when you worship Satan, who can only give you an ephemeral triumph paid for at the price of an eternity of horror.

“The Beast, John says, was and is not.¹⁶⁴ At the end of the world that is the way it will be. He was, because he has really existed; he is not because I, the Christ, will have defeated and buried him because he will no longer be necessary, then, for the triumphs of the world.¹⁶⁵

“Isn’t the Earth seated on the waters of her seas and hasn’t she made use of these to do harm? What has she not made use of? Peoples, nations, races, boundaries, interests, food, expansions -- everything has been of use to her to fornicate and carry out enormous homicides and betrayals like that of Judas. Her own children, nourished by her with the blood of sin, will accomplish God’s vengeance upon her by destroying her, by destroying themselves, bringing the sum of the crimes against God and against man to the perfect number which demands the thundering of my ‘Enough!’

“In that hour the blood of the martyrs and prophets, steaming with a smell pleasing to my throne, will seethe, and the clods of the earth which have gathered in the moans of those slain out of hatred for Me and received their last shudders will cast forth a loud cry made up of all those holy moans and will tremble with anguished convulsion, shaking men’s cities and homes, where there is sinning and killing, and filling the vault of the Heavens with a voice calling for Justice.

“And there will be Justice. I will come. I will come because I am Faithful and Truthful. I will come to bring Peace to the faithful and holy Judgment to those who have lived. I will come with my name, whose meaning is known to Me alone and in whose letters are the main attributes of God, of whom I am Part and Whole.

“Write: Gesu.¹⁶⁶ Grandeur, Eternity, Sanctity, Unity. Write: Cristo.¹⁶⁷ Charity, Redemption, Immensity, Sapience,¹⁶⁸ Trinity, Omnipotence (of God summarized in the name of the Word made man). And if you think some attributes are missing, consider that Justice is comprehended in holiness -- for whoever is holy is just; Royalty, in grandeur; and Creation, in omnipotence. In my name the praises of God are thus proclaimed.

¹⁶⁴ ET: Apocalypse 17:8.

¹⁶⁵ ET: On a typed copy the writer adds at the foot of the page, in pencil, “After the defeat of the Antichrist and the destruction of Babylon.”

¹⁶⁶ ET: “Gesu” is the Italian for “Jesus.”

¹⁶⁷ ET: “Cristo” is the Italian for “Christ.”

¹⁶⁸ ET: I translated [*The End Times translator*] the Italian “Sapienza” as “Sagacity” to follow the letter-pattern of “Cristo,” although the best translation would have been “Wisdom.” [*Here, the more recent translation uses “Sapience.”*]

“A holy name whose sound terrifies the demons. Name of Life that give Life, Light and Strength for whoever loves and invokes you.

“Name which is a crown upon my head¹⁶⁹ as the victor over Beast and his prophet who will be taken, driven down, submerged, and buried in the liquid, eternal fire whose corrosive ferocity is inconceivable for human sensation.

“It will then be the time *of my Kingdom on Earth*. There will thus be a truce in the demoniacal crimes so as to give man time to hear the heavenly voices again. Once the power unleashing horror has been taken out of the way; *immense spiritual currents will come down like waterfalls of grace, like rivers of celestial waters, to speak words of Light*.

“But as, over the centuries, they did not gather in the isolated Voices, beginning with that of the Word, which speak of Goodness so men will be deaf, still deaf -- except for those marked with my sign, my most beloved friends set on following Me -- deaf to the voices of many spirits, to the voices similar to the sound of many waters which will sing the new canticle¹⁷⁰ to guide the peoples to meet the Light and, above all, Me: the eternal Word. When the last attempt has been made,¹⁷¹ Satan will come for the last time and will find followers in the four corners of the earth, and they will be more numerous than the sand of the sea.¹⁷²

“O Christ! O Jesus, who died to save men! Only the patience of a God could have waited so long, done so much, and obtained so little without withdrawing his gift from men and having them perish long before the hour indicated! *Only my Patience, which is Love* was able to await you, knowing that, like sand filtering through a very fine sieve, *some rare souls would come to glory; in contrast to the mass that is unable and unwilling to filter through the sieve of the Law, Love, and Sacrifice to arrive at Me*.

“But in the hour of my coming, when, in the role of God, King, and Judge, I will come to gather together the chosen and curse the reprobate, hurling them there, where the Antichrist the Beast and Satan will already be eternally;¹⁷³ after the supreme victory of Jesus Christ, the Son of God, Victor over Death and Evil, *to these chosen ones, who have been able to remain ‘alive’ in life, alive in the spirit, awaiting our hour of triumph, I will give possession of the heavenly dwelling; I will give Myself unceasingly and measurelessly*.

“Aspire to that hour, Maria. Call it and call Me with all the strength of your spirit. *Here I am, already coming when a soul calls me*. Together with the

¹⁶⁹ As above, the writer notes, “in the period of peace preceding the judgment.”

¹⁷⁰ ET: Apocalypse 14:2-3.

¹⁷¹ As above, the writer notes, “The attempt at peace after the punishments, at spiritual evangelization.”

¹⁷² ET: Apocalypse 20:7-8.

¹⁷³ ET: Apocalypse 20:9-10.

Beloved One, who from the Earth saw the glory of the Lamb, the Son of God, the glory of *his* and *your* Jesus with every beat of your heart say, ‘Come, Lord Jesus.’”¹⁷⁴

I am just a tatter, a poor little tatter. All that remains to me is a soul immersed in sweetness.

In dictating to me, Jesus has me understand that when He says “Earth,” He means the “world,” taken not as a globe of dust and waters, but, rather, *as a union of persons*. I don’t know if I am able to explain properly. When He says “Earth,” He means, shall I say, a *moral entity*,¹⁷⁵ and when He says, “earth,” He simply means a planet composed of turf, mountains, and waters. The former is blameworthy; the latter is innocent.

That is why He can say without contradicting Himself that the blood of the martyrs has become venom for the Earth, which has drunk it (in its inhabitants) with sacrilegious wrath and shed it (in its governing powers) with a blasphemous abuse of temporal power, whereas the earth-globe, rotating in ethereal space, has respectfully drunk and lovingly received the blood of the martyrs and their convulsions in agony and presents the former and the latter to the Eternal, maternally and mercifully asking that they not be shed and suffered for nothing and that justice may be done to them.

I am happy to have received the direct explanation from the Book which I like so much, but, in human terms, I assure you¹⁷⁶ that I am a wreck. I seem to be an empty thing, squeezed out. I no longer have anything inside after having had so much.

In these days, crushed by the loud voices sounding inside me, I couldn’t stand human noise, and there has been so much of it around me! I have suffered very much, caught between life’s ordinary fetters and the Master’s supernatural demands.

Well. Now it’s done. And I now say, “A little rest -- otherwise Jesus’ poor little scribbler will split apart like a machine that’s been overused.” Now it’s yours for the copy. But, when you bring me the text, bring me this notebook back, too. I have less trouble correcting if I have the manuscript in front of me. Otherwise, how can I remember and add the missing words? Who can remember them? I’ll give it back to you afterwards.

There is still more to be said, however.
Jesus says:

¹⁷⁴ ET: Apocalypse 22:20.

¹⁷⁵ ET: In other words the corporate entity of mankind as a whole.

¹⁷⁶ She is addressing Father Migliorini.

“Before closing this cycle there is something to be said about the two resurrections.

“The first¹⁷⁷ begins when the soul separates from the body and appears before Me in the individual judgment. But it is only a partial resurrection. Rather than a resurrection, it could be called the *liberation* of the spirit from the sheath of the flesh and the spirit’s *waiting* to rejoin the flesh so as to reconstitute the living temple, created by the Father, the temple of man created in the image and likeness of God.

“A work in which one part is missing is incomplete and thus imperfect. Man as a work, perfect in his creation, is incomplete and imperfect if not joined together again in his different parts. Destined to the Kingdom of light or the dwelling of darkness, men must eternally be in one or the other with their perfection as flesh and spirit.

“The *first* and *second* resurrection are thus spoken of. But observe.

“The one who has killed his spirit with an earthly life of sin comes to Me, in the particular judgment, with a spirit that is already dead. The final resurrection will cause *his flesh to take on again the weight of the spirit so as to die with it completely*. Whereas the one who has overcome the flesh in earthly life comes to Me, in the particular judgment, with an *alive* spirit that, on entering Paradise, increases his *mode of living*.

“Those being purged are also ‘alive.’ Sick, but alive. When healing is obtained in expiation, they will enter the place which is Life. In the final resurrection their spirits, alive with my Life, to which they will be indissolubly united, *will take on the flesh again to make it glorious and live with it totally, just as I live with it*.

“That’s why the *first* and *second death*¹⁷⁸ are spoken of and, consequently; the *first* and *second resurrection*. Man must arrive at this eternal possession of the Light -- for in Paradise you possess God and God is Light -- by *his own will, as by his own will he wanted to lose the Light and Paradise*. I give you help, but the will must be Yours.

“I am faithful. I have created you free, and I leave you free. And if you consider how worthy of admiration this respect by God for man’s free will is, you can understand *how right and proper it would be for you not to abuse it by doing evil therewith*, and how right and proper to maintain your respect for, gratitude towards and love of the Lord God.

“To those who have not acted dishonestly I say, ‘Your dwelling in Heaven is ready, and I ardently desire that you should be in my Blessedness.’”

¹⁷⁷ ET: The first resurrection: Apocalypse 20:6.

¹⁷⁸ ET: The second death: Apocalypse 21:8; 20:14; 2:11; 20:6.

<hr style="width: 100%;"/>	<hr style="width: 100%;"/>	<hr style="width: 100%;"/>	
The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment

Clarification Of The Apocalypse¹⁷⁹

Jesus says:

“Even in the Apocalypse the periods seem to be confused, but that is not the case. It would be better to say they are reflected in the future times under increasingly grandiose aspects.

“We are now in the period I call ‘of the *forerunners of the Antichrist.*’ Then the period of the *Antichrist*, who is the *forerunner of Satan*, will come. He will be helped by the manifestations of Satan: the two beasts named in the Apocalypse. It will be a time worse than the current one. Evil is constantly increasing. Once the Antichrist is defeated, the period of peace will come to give men -- struck by amazement at the seven plagues and the fall of Babylon -- time to gather under my sign. The anti-Christian epoch will rise to the maximum power in its third manifestation -- that is, *when the last coming of Satan takes place.*

“Do you understand? To believe is necessary, without quibbling. You really did understand, precisely because you don’t quibble. The dictations do not contradict each other. One must read them with faith and simplicity of heart.

“Like one who is anxious to make something understood, I always go straight to what is most important, which in this case is my kingdom. For in the kingdom there is the justification for my having become incarnate and having died. For in the kingdom there is proof of my infinite power, goodness, and wisdom. For in the kingdom there is proof of eternal life, of the resurrection of the flesh, of my power as Judge. Therefore, when I spoke to explain the Apocalypse, I almost always crowned off each individual point explained with my Judgment, my triumph, my kingdom, and the defeat of Satan in himself, in his creature, and in the forerunners.

“Read carefully, and you will see there is no contradiction. I have said what I have said.”

<hr style="width: 100%;"/>			
The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment

The Difference Between God's Word And Human Words¹⁸⁰

Jesus says:

¹⁷⁹ NB43, August 27, 1943, p. 274

¹⁸⁰ NB43, September 10, 1943, p. 297

“Daughter, let us read together the last verses of Ecclesiastes. If he was most wise, I am the Wisdom of God. Thus infinitely superior to him. But, like him, I instruct my people. I have been instructing it for twenty centuries. I began the instruction with my Word and have continued it through the word of my beloved servants.

“But among those instructed from my people I have favorite disciples for whom the Master becomes more than a master -- a friend; and with the wealth of a king He opens to them the gates to acts of intimacy and revelations. I take these beloved ones by the hand and lead them with Me into the innermost secrets and make them capable of receiving my Word, given with a breadth which is reserved for my second Johns.

“My little John, I entrust my Word to you. Transmit it to the masters - *let them use it for the good of creatures. It comes from the One Shepherd, from the Good Shepherd, who has written the truth of his Word with his Blood.*

“When a Leader in the world or a Genius of the Earth entrusts to one of his faithful followers a sacred flag or a precious secret when they convey an order or the formula of an invention, how great is the sacred respect with which that loyal person bears and transmits what has been passed on! But I am much more than a Leader or a Genius. I am God, the Father’s Word and Wisdom, your Lord and Redeemer. *My Word does not serve only to offer an earthly good, but to give the Good which does not die: eternal Life. There is thus nothing more sacred and precious than my Word.*

“Receive it with your soul on its knees, and let your love be incense purifying your heart, which receives it, your hand, which writes it, your mouth, which repeats it, and your eye, which reads it. Live as an angel and a priest, for I have granted to you to hear what the angels hear and what priests repeat. And live increasingly as a victim, *for it is sacrifice that opens the ears of the spirit, and it is blood that washes the tongue which speaks of the Lord.*

“In these days preceding the feast of the Cross *I have an immense need for crucified souls.* Please be so kind as to suffer for Me. Believe in your Jesus! If I could go back on the Cross for your sakes, how certainly I would! But I cannot. And amidst so much enemy blood which man sheds on Earth with fratricidal hatred, my Blood is lacking which I can no longer shed from the Cross for you.

“As I transform the species of Bread and Wine into the Body and Blood of Christ on the earth’s altars -- too few, and too little surrounded by truly praying souls -- you, my little hosts, dear victims, dear flowers of my garden, take the Redeemer’s place and give Me your bodies as a host of propitiation for the sins of the world.

“My daughter, do not seek anything more, I, too, say, along with Ecclesiastes. And what more do you want than the mission of being a little Christ in the place of your Jesus? And what do you desire that is greater than my Word?

“God is simple. *The closer you come to God, the simpler you will become. You will feel in yourself increasingly the tedium and vanity of human science, including that aimed at God, but written by man. The more God speaks to you, the more you will feel the suffering of the harsh, bitter sound of human words compared to the most sweet, supernatural tone of my word. Don't weary yourself with many doctrines; don't fetter yourself with many rules. Be simple and free, Upon you may there be only the light yoke which is not a weight, but a wing -- my yoke.*

“There is only one thing to do to come to Me without error. The one that Ecclesiastes¹⁸¹ advises, but which I modify as follows: ‘Love God and observe his commandments.’ I do not say, ‘Fear.’ I say, ‘Love.’ *Love is much higher than fear and is safer to reach the aim. Fear is for those still far from God, so as not to lead them astray.* Like blinkers, it keeps the bestiality locked up in man from getting the upper hand at every chimerical seductive shadow. *But for those who are already close to God, to those, above all, who are in God's arms, love is what must be the guide.*

“God will bring all of your actions to judgment. *But it is natural that the actions moved by love will never be completely wicked and such as to disgust the Lord. They will have the sign of your human limitation, but it will be covered over by the blazing banner of the love, which cancels out sins and makes man's actions pleasing to the Lord.*

“There, my daughter. While the world is full of homicidal uproar and hatred overflows from hearts, the two of us, who love one another, in silence and in peace, speak of love. And there is nothing which gladdens your Jesus so much as these little Bethanies of mine in which I am the Master who takes his rest and teaches a Mary in love who looks at Him and listens with all her love.

“Were you unable yesterday to write down what I told you? It doesn't matter. Don't worry about it. *The seed of those words is in you just the same. When I wish, I will make it germinate.* And it will be even lovelier.

“Always be good and patient. I give you my peace.”

The Forerunners

Antichrist's Reign

Peace/Truce

End/Judgment

The Blood Shed Over All The Earth¹⁸²

Jesus says:

“It is called the ‘Feast of the Holy Cross.’ It would be better to say the ‘Feast of the Sacrifice,’ for on the Cross there was an apotheosis of my Sacrifice

¹⁸¹ ET: Ecclesiastes 12:13.

¹⁸² NB43, September 14, 1943, p. 307

as Redeemer. And on saying 'of the sacrifice,' one could say 'of the Blood,' for on the Cross I finished shedding my Blood to the last drop, to the point when it indeed is no longer blood, but blood serum: the sweating extreme of a dying body.

"How much blood, Maria! And I shed it everywhere, to sanctify everything and everyone. This suffering of mine and bleeding in different places also has its explanation, which you do not inquire into, but which I, for the feast of the Cross, want to reveal to you.

"I shed it at Gethsemane, the garden and olive grove, to sanctify the countryside and the works of the countryside. The countryside created by my Father with its harvests, its vines, its fruit-bearing plants, its minor little plants, but all of them useful to man, and whose use and cultivation the Father taught by supernatural instruction to the first men on earth. I shed it there to sanctify the earth and the workers of the earth, among whom the shepherds of the different species of animals granted by the Father for man's help and sustenance are also included.

"I also shed my Blood in the Temple, for I was already wounded by stones and clubs, to sanctify in the Temple of Jerusalem the future Temple, whose cement was begun in that hour: my Church and all the churches, houses of God, and their ministers.

"I shed it in Herod's palace, for all the kings of the earth, invested by Me with supreme human power for the protection of their peoples and the morality of their states. In royal palaces, too, I alone know how very much need there is to remember that only One is King: the King of kings, and that his Law is the sovereign law over the kings of the earth as well, who are such until I have to intervene to deprive them of the crown of which through either evident, personal sin or weakness -- not material sin, but no less condemned and condemnable because it is the cause of so many ruins -- they are no longer worthy.

"And I thus shed my Blood in the Pretorium, where Authority resided. I already told you, some time ago,¹⁸³ what authorities, -- power -- are, why they are, and how long they are. What they should be so as not to be cursed by the eternal Judge can be obtained by them only through obedience to my Law of love and justice and my Most Precious Blood, which eliminates sin from hearts and confirms spirits, making them capable of acting in holiness, even when events, permitted by God for the trial of a nation or for punishment of another nation, bring about a circumstance where the ruling Authority does not belong to the country itself, but to the country which is the victor or oppressor. In this case, above all, Authority should remember that it is such by God's permission and always for a purpose based on the sanctification of both parties. Hence the need not to use power to damn oneself and damn the oppressed and dominated

¹⁸³ For example, in the dictations of June 3, July 28, and, more broadly, July 29 and 30.

with a[n] unjust abuse of power. I gave my Blood, sprinkling it like rain in the house of Pilate, to redeem *this class* on Earth, which has an infinite need to be redeemed, for since the world began, it has believed it could render licit what is not licit.

“I reddened the soldiers who scourged with an ever greater aspersion of blood to infuse into militias a sense of humanity in the painful circumstances of wars, accursed diseases which always reappear because you are unable to root out of yourselves the venom of hatred and inject yourselves with love. The soldier must combat -- such is the law of duty -- and he will not be punished for his combating and killing because obedience justifies it. But he will be punished by Me when he uses ferocity in his combating and takes the liberty of committing abuses which are not necessary, but which, on the contrary, are always cursed by Me because they are useless and opposed to justice, which must always be justice, even when a human victory proves intoxicating or racial hatred arouses sentiments contrary to justice.

“My Blood bathed the streets of the City, impressing footprints which, if they are no longer seen, have remained and will eternally remain present in the minds of the inhabitants of the highest Heavens. I wanted to sanctify the streets where so many people pass and so much evil is done.

“And if you think that my Blood, profusely bestowed everywhere, has not sanctified all the ministers of the Church and has not sanctified the royal palaces and authorities and militias and people and science and cities and streets and not even the countryside, I reply to you that I shed it just the same, though knowing that for many it would turn against them as condemnation instead of salvation according to the purpose for which I shed it, and I shed it for those few in the Church, Science, Power, the Armies, the People, the Cities, and the Countryside who have been able to gather it in and comprehend its voice of love and follow that voice in its commands. Blessed are they, eternally!

“But the last Blood was not shed on the turf, stones, faces, and robes, in places where the water of God or the hand of man could wash it or cause it to be lost. The last Blood, gathered between the chest and the heart, which was already growing cold, and flowing forth for the final scorn -- so that in the Son of God and of Man there would not remain a drop of vital liquid and I would really be the Lamb whose throat was cut for the holocaust acceptable to God -- the last drops of my Blood were not lost. There was a Mother below that Cross! A Mother who in the end could clasp the wood of the Cross, reach out towards her slain Child, kiss his pierced feet, contracted by the last agony, and gather into her virginal veil the final drops of the Blood of her Son, which were dripping from my open side and streaming down over my lifeless body.

“My Mother of such great pain! From my birth to my death She had to suffer for this reason as well: not to be able to give her Child those first and last comforts which even the most wretched of the sons of man receives at birth and

death, and out of her veil She had to make clothing for her newborn Son and a shroud for the Son who had lost all his blood.

“That Blood was not lost. It exists and lives and shines on the veil of the Virgin. Divine purple on the virginal whiteness -- it will be the banner of Christ the Judge on the day of Judgment.”

The Forerunners

Antichrist's Reign

Peace/Truce

End/Judgment

Commentary On Joel: Spiritual And Physical Gifts In The Last Times¹⁸⁴

Jesus says:

“It is not in the sense in which you understand it. The hour of peace and forgiveness will come for you Italians, too; the hour will come in which you will again form an alliance with the Lord, after having been in the hands of Satan, who has mistreated you like a skein of thread in the hands of a furious madman. But the words of Joel (2:18-23) are not said particularly for one people or another.

“They are for my people, the people of the One, True, Great King: of your Lord God, Triune, Creator, and Redeemer of the human race. That period of well-being Joel speaks about is the advance announcement of what long after John talks of in his Apocalypse.

“After the tremendous wars which Satan will have brought upon the Earth through his Messenger of Darkness -- the Antichrist -- the period of truce will come in which, after having shown you with the bloody evidence what gifts Satan can be the author of, I will seek to attract you to Myself by filling you with my gifts.

“Oh, my gifts! They will be your sweetness! You will not know hunger, massacres, and calamities. *Your bodies, and even more your souls, will be fed by my hand; the Earth will seem to rise by a second creation, entirely new in its sentiments, which will be of peace and concord among peoples and of peace between Heaven and Earth, for I will have my Spirit extend Himself over you, and He will penetrate you and give you supernatural vision of God's decrees.*

“It will be the Kingdom of the Spirit. The kingdom of God, the one you ask for -- and you don't know what you're asking for because you never reflect -- with the 'Our Father.' Where do you want the Kingdom of God to occur, if not in your hearts? It is from there that my Kingdom on Earth must begin. A great Kingdom, but still limited.

¹⁸⁴ NB43, September 16, 1943, p. 312

“Later the Kingdom without confines either on earth or in time will come. The eternal Kingdom, which will make you eternal inhabitants of Heaven, for, as is natural, I speak to those who are my subjects and not to the reprobates, who already have their horrendous king: Satan.

“Your God will work all prodigies to attract the greatest number of the living to Himself, for I am a God of Mercy, Forgiveness, and such infinite Love that no matter how much you may study and comprehend its measure, you cannot do so. What you think is the infinity of my love for you is like a tiny pebble on the bank of a stream compared to a whole mountain range whose bases divide continents and whose peaks wrap themselves in the clouds.

“But do you think that so many prodigies of Love and so many lights of the Spirit will convert men to their Eternal God? Don’t fool yourself. If towards poor animals devoid of reason I were to use the care I will use with you for the needs of your bodies -- this care alone -- those animals, with their unformed languages, would praise Me from dawn to dusk, and if they knew where to find Me, they would set out from all over the globe to come and give thanks for their beneficent Protector. But men will not.

“Nearly all of them are totally deaf to spiritual voices and gifts, and almost completely deaf to bodily gifts; instead of recognizing my Goodness and loving Me out of gratitude, they will take advantage of the well-being which I will give them to sink lower and lower into the abyss they are pleased with, where, like filthy beasts in a swamp, they wallow and the things which seduce nine-tenths of mankind await them: desire, lust, deceit, violence, thievery, heresy, superstition, and other corruptions of the senses and the mind -- so horrendous that it seems impossible to the honest that they can be true, but they are true, and they make the Heavens blush and rouse our Divinity to a movement of disdain.

“Neither the paternal offering of gifts nor the nonterrorizing signs in the sky will be able to make those living at that time into children of God. And then my great and terrible day will come.

“Not a day of twenty-four hours. My time has a different measure. ‘Day’ is said because one works during the day, and I will work at that time. I will carry out the final selection of those living on the earth. And that will take place during the last raging of Satan.

“Then those who have within themselves the Kingdom of God and those who have the kingdom of Satan will be seen. For the latter; with their mouths, deeds, and, above all, blasphemous hearts, will commit the final acts of disdain for my Law and the last acts of sacrilege towards God, whereas the former, the Lord’s children and subjects -- as the final battle hits the Earth with unspeakable horror -- will cling to my Cross and invoke my saving Name; and my coming as Judge will not terrify them, but, rather, it will be their Jubilation,

for the faithful are the saved, those Joel calls the Lord's 'remainder' -- that is, those who remain for the Lord after Satan's plunder.

"Thrice blessed eternally are these children of mine. The eternal Paradise belongs to them. *Joined to those faithful to the Lord in all times, they will possess God, the possession of whom is eternal blessedness.*"

Since it seemed this morning that Jesus was leaving me in repose, after having said the *Veni, Sancte Spiritus*, as is my custom, I opened the Bible at random. The second chapter of the Book of Joel turned up, and precisely verses eighteen to thirty-two.

I gave those words an interpretation which my heart as an Italian dreams of with all its strength. But Jesus explains a much higher meaning for it... And the little donkey Maria writes it down telling herself that only the Lord is wise.

The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment
The Examples Of Three Gentiles¹⁸⁵			

Jesus says:

"From my Gospel there emerges a teaching for you, humans so divided by hatred.

"Yesterday I left you at peace to give you time to change your thought and look -- yes, this, too, for there are blameworthy looks because of the hate filling them as it does, and even more than, every word -- by filtering the movements of your heart through the very sweet teaching of Mary.

"The storms upsetting a lake are not suddenly calmed and, above all, once calmed, do not restore to the waters immediately their former appearance. The cloudiness remains for some time to corrupt the waters' color and clearness, and only when the waves are totally calm, even in the depths, does the water become clear and once again get as blue and serene as the sky. The same occurs when hate rushes into a heart with its hellish wind. Time is needed for the soul to be purified of its anti-Christian poison.

"Bear in mind, Maria, that I understand that under certain painful agents it is only human for hate to arise. *But you are not only human. Indeed, humanity is a transitory phase of your lives, whereas the superhuman is what is not subject to transience*, for from the moment in which you are created by the Father *you are* and will always be, in light or in darkness, according to your way

¹⁸⁵ NB43, September 22, 1943, p. 326

of acting on earth, not until the end of the world but in eternity, which has no end.

“The earth! The long, thirty times millenary life of the Christian earth and the seven times millenary life of the Earth, a planet created by the Father -- what is this in my time? An instant of eternity.

“Yesterday you were purifying yourself, and I left you immersed in this work necessary for all, and especially for my beloved ones *for I cannot stay where there is hatred*. Always remember this. Even if it were the most humanly just and comprehensible of hatreds. And I will now speak for you and for all.

“The teaching I am speaking to you about, which my Gospel gives you, and on which you meditate little or not at all, is a teaching of lofty charity. There are three episodes which give it to you. They are explained to you in other forms, but, in this hour of hatred among the world’s races, I will explain it to you in my own way: the way it would be so necessary to meditate on to emerge from this high sea of hell into which you have transformed the world.

“The centurion who beseeches for his paralyzed servant, the Cananean woman with the reply which is a cry of boundless trust and the wife of Pontius Pilate. Three Gentiles, three people outside the Father’s Law. But among the children of Abraham, among those living in the Law given by the Lord to his Prophet amidst the lightning bolts of Sinai, who had a heart like those three hearts? They had more faith in Me than my countrymen did; they recognized who I am in the light of this faith, and their believing was not left unrewarded.

“Now I want this to convince you that in all races, in all nations, there are good, unknown children of God, for those who believe in Me and seek Me with purity of heart are my children. Not even in Israel had I found so much faith as I found in these three hearts that came to Me without my having called them materially. And how many distant ones like these there are among the living!

“Judge not, children, and do not disdain. Just love, love all; you have a single Father Creator -- remember this; you are thus brothers and sisters to one another. A single dust formed you and a single breath animated you.

“Why, then, is there so much mutual hate? Do not be harsh to your brothers and sisters. Look at Jesus, the Master who does not err and who did not reject the pagan centurion and the Cananean woman, in Israel judged to be a leper in her soul.

“Take care that it may not be God who judges you to be such, infected as you are by ferocity, deceit, lust, and pride. Cleanse yourselves in the fire of love. It is lustral water which makes your souls white again and a touch which opens your blinded eyes, your closed ears, which gives life to your paralyzed souls and makes you capable of grasping what the Divine Spirit is saying to your spirits, in need of so much light and so much forgiveness.”

“Into Your Hands I Commend My Spirit”¹⁸⁶

Jesus says:

“Today I want. to talk about a sentence spoken by Me on the cross. It may seem to be a break at variance with the topic I am speaking to you about in these days. But it is not.

“Everything I am saying refers to the gem which is in you; the spirit. For the spirit is the lord of your being. You often turn it into a slave, but that is a sin you will answer for. The fact that you oppress and kill it does not change its characteristic as lord of your being.

“I want to call your attention to a sentence spoken by Me on the Cross. You, too, are on the cross, Maria. And your now customary cross has at this time become heavier and harsher with the present pain consuming your flesh and blood and oppressing you to the point of breaking your morale. If it were only because of death, you would suffer less. But to the pain of the death of your mother there is joined the other pain over the way your mother left you, without a word. You’ve got a lump of tears in your heart because of your unfulfilled hunger for caresses, which has accompanied you throughout your life as a daughter and will accompany you throughout your life as an orphan.

“Give Me this sacrifice, too. There are so many motherless children. Motherless, because their mother does not love them and also because their mother has rejected them.

“Do you think that the children of sin, when they emerge from the mists of childhood and begin to reflect, do not suffer over this condition of theirs? Human charity gives them bread and a roof -- oh not much more! -- and often less than what is given to a stray puppy or an abandoned animal. But if the puppy and the animal are happy just to have food, shelter, and a caress, the children of woman whom woman has repudiated because they represent for her a witness to her sin have a mentality superior to that of the puppy and the animal; they have a soul that suffers and that, in their suffering as illegitimate children dispersed outside the nest where they were born, cast out of the nest, may make them become unjust and wicked. Unjust to Me and wicked to men, to the fellow beings of those who have generated them to condemn them to a shameful fate.

“Only I, I that am the One for whom no tear of man escapes and not even the need of the hungry sparrow goes unobserved. Only I know the tears and acts of rebellion of these poor creatures of mine, who have not had even that

¹⁸⁶ NB43, October 16, 1943, p. 389

minimum of a family which is constituted by the memory of deceased parents. And my Love gathers in the tears, and my Mercy takes pity on the acts of rebellion. *Justice is not severe to these poor children generated to tears and shame, but goes with a severe countenance to judge those who have generated them for such a fate.*

“But it is not this that I want to talk to you about. I therefore ask you only for your suffering as a daughter who has not experienced the comfort of her mother’s farewell. You have Me as few do. They are unable to see Me and hear Me; I would otherwise be with everyone as I am with you. Give Me your pain as a daughter so that they will feel that they have a Father, that they are not spurious, that there is someone who loves them. And He loves them as no parent on earth is able or knows how to love. One must be able to apply one’s individual pain to relieving the pains of others. And you, that are familiar with the bitterness of certain situations the desolation of the heart, and the comfort which comes only from God suffer with good will to prevent this despair, which is one of the bitterest, most desolate, and most dangerous forms of despair.

“And now let us talk about the sentence spoken by Me on the cross.

“If in the words of Wisdom there is not one which is useless in regard to the spirit, what must the case be with the words spoken by Me, Divine Wisdom? On the cross I completed my mission as Redeemer, but also as Master.

“I taught you forgiveness by forgiving those who killed Me and those who offended Me as God and as a dying person. I taught you to have faith in the Mercy granted to whoever repents by promising Paradise to Disma. I taught you who to go to so as not to feel alone: to Mary, who is your Mother. I taught you to ask humbly and suffer bodily needs as well patiently by asking for a sip for my lips. I taught you not to complain if that sip is vinegar and *bile -- vinegar and bile, Maria, which are given not only to the lips, but often to the heart which asks to love and receives rejection and offenses. Remember that your Jesus’ Heart was saturated with this most bitter, truer mixture.*

“I taught you who to invoke in the hours when pain rushes upon You and it seems to you that everyone, including God, has abandoned you. Because of the needs of Redemption, I was really abandoned by the Father, but I invoked Him just the same. *One must act like this, O children, in the hours of trial and pain. Even if God seems to you to be distant, call to Him for help just the same. Always give Him filial love. He will give you his gifts. They may not be the ones you were requesting. They will be others even more useful to You.* Trust your Lord and Father. He loves you and provides for you. Always believe this. God rewards those who believe in his Goodness.

“But before pronouncing the final word, in which to the joy of having conquered Life for you was joined the distressing pain of that death, I uttered the sentence I want to talk to you about: ‘Father, into your hands I commend my spirit.’

“Do you see, O dear children, what value the spirit has? My final thought turns to it, to commend it into the hands of the Father. The immeasurable value of our living as men is the spirit; I say ‘our,’ for the one who was dying on the cross was true Man as well as true God, like you, therefore, in humanity. My last request turns to this spirit of mine about to be freed from the flesh to return to the Origin it had come from.

“The spirit of the Christ had no need of divine mercy. It was the divine, innocent spirit of the Son of the Father and of the Immaculate One. But I wanted to teach you *that one single thing is valuable in life and valuable after life: the spirit*. It must receive all your care during existence and your prudence in the hour of death.

“All you possess on earth is something that dies with the flesh. Nothing follows you into the other life. But the spirit remains. *The spirit precedes you*. It is that which presents itself to the Judge and receives the first sentence. It is that which will draw to itself the flesh in the hour of the last Judgment and will make it alive again to hear the decree which will render it blessed with that spirit or accursed with that spirit.¹⁸⁷ The flesh will undergo centuries or seconds of death before its resurrection, *but the spirit undergoes only one death and does not rise again from it*.

“Woe to those dead spirits that will infuse death into the flesh they inhabited! The ‘second death,’ which knows no resurrection and which is the one that you must fear for this body which you love more than the spirit, O foolish men who overturn the values of things.

“Try to have mercy on yourselves, *not from a human, but a supernatural standpoint*. Mercy on what does not die like flesh, but which can die only as spirit by losing the Light of God here below and the vision and possession of God in my heaven.

“Try. And since you are weak on account of the flesh, which tempts you, caught as it is in the seduction of Satan, in life and death entrust your spirits to the Powerful, Holy, and Merciful God.

“When I taught you to say; ‘Lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil,’ wasn’t I already teaching you to entrust your spirits to the Father, who created you and does not repudiate his paternity as you, on the other hand, repudiate your status as sons and daughters?

“Satan can do little harm on earth to the spirit that entrusts itself to God; the terrors which the Beast arouses as a final revenge will be spared the spirit that invokes God in its agony; God will open his Heart to the spirit expiring in God, and from death it will pass into eternal, holy, blessed life.”

¹⁸⁷ ET: See John 5:29.

On Purgatory. Observing The Lord's Day. The "Holy Episcopate" Of Parents¹⁸⁸

Jesus says:

"I shall resume the commentary¹⁸⁹ on the souls taken into Purgatory.

"It does not matter whether you have grasped the complete meaning of my words. These are pages for all, for all have some loved ones in Purgatory, and nearly all, with the life they lead, are destined to stop in that dwelling. For the former and the latter I shall thus continue.

"I said that the souls being purged *suffer only because of love and expiate with love*. Here are the reasons for this system of expiation.

"If you, unreflecting men, carefully consider my Law in its counsels and commands, you see that it *entirely* hinges on love. Love for God, love for one's neighbor.

"In the first commandment, I, God, impose Myself on your reverential love with all the solemnity which is worthy of my Nature, as compared to your nothingness: 'I am the Lord, your God.'¹⁹⁰

"You forget this too often, O men who think you are gods, and, unless you have a spirit vivified by grace in you, you are nothing but dust and putrefaction, animals joining to animality the craftiness of the intelligence possessed by the Beast, who makes you do the works of beasts -- worse than those of beasts: the works of demons.

"Say it to yourselves morning and evening; say it to yourselves at midday and at midnight; say it to yourselves when you eat, when you drink, when you go to bed, when you wake up, when you work, when you rest; say it to yourselves when you love; say it to yourselves when you contract friendships; say it to yourselves when you command and when you obey; say it to yourselves always: 'I am not God. Food, drink, and sleep are not God. Labor, rest, occupations, and the works of genius are not God. Friendships are not God. Superiors are not God. *One alone is God: my Lord, who has given me this life so that with it I may merit the Life which does not die; who has given me clothing, food, and dwelling places; who has given me work so that I may earn a living and ingenuity so that I may witness to being the king of the earth; who has given me the capacity for loving and creatures to be loved "with holiness" and not with lust;*

¹⁸⁸ NB43, October 21, 1943, p. 406

¹⁸⁹ Appearing in the dictation of October 17.

¹⁹⁰ ET: Exodus 20:2; Deuteronomy 5:6.

who has given me power and authority so that I may make it a means of holiness and not of damnation. I can become similar to Him since He has said, “You are gods,” *but only if I live his Life -- that is, his Law -- only if I live his Life -- that is, his Love. One alone is God: He. I am his child and subject, the heir of his kingdom. But if I desert and betray, if I create for myself a kingdom of my own in which I want to be king and god in human terms, I then lose the true Kingdom and my destiny as a child of God is forfeited and becomes degraded into that of a child of Satan, for one cannot serve selfishness and love at the same time, and whoever serves the former serves the Enemy of God and loses Love -- that is, he loses God.[’]*

“Remove from your minds and your hearts all the deceitful gods that you have placed there, *beginning with the god of mire that you are when you do not live in Me.* Remind yourselves of what you owe Me for all I have given you -- and *I would have given you more if you had not bound the hands of your God with your way of living -- what I have given you for the life of each day and for eternal life.* For the latter God has given you his Son so that He would be immolated like a lamb without blemish and wash your debts with his Blood and thus not, as in Mosaic times, make the iniquities of the fathers fall upon their children down to the fourth generation of sinners *who are ‘those who hate Me,’ for sin is an offense against God and whoever offends hates.*

“Do not raise other altars to gods that are not true. Have the one and only Lord your God, not so much on altars of stone, *but on the living altar of your hearts.* Serve Him and offer *true* worship of love, love, love, O children who are unable to love, who utter and utter and utter words of prayer, *words alone, but do not make love your prayer, the only one pleasing to God.*

“Remember that a true throbbing of love which rises like a cloud of incense from the flames of your heart in love with Me *has a value infinitely greater than thousands and thousands of prayers and ceremonies performed with a lukewarm or cold heart. Attract my Mercy with your love. If you knew how active and great my Mercy is to whoever loves Me! It is a wave which passes and washes what constitutes a stain in you. It gives you a snow-white stole to enter into the holy City of Heaven, in which the Charity of the Lamb who had Himself immolated for you shines like a sun.*

“Do not use the Holy Name out of habit or to give strength to your wrath, to vent your impatience, or to confirm your curses. And, *above all, do not apply the term “god” to a human creature whom you love out of sensual hunger or mental worship. That Name should be said to One alone. To Me.* And to Me it must be said with love, faith, and hope. Then that Name will be your strength and your defense. The worship of this Name will justify you, *for those who act while placing my Name as a seal upon their actions cannot perform wicked actions.* I am speaking of those who act truthfully, not of the liars who seek to cover themselves and their works with the splendor of my thrice-holy

Name. And who are they trying to deceive? I am not subject to deceit, and men themselves, unless they are mentally disturbed, by comparing the liars' deeds with their words comprehend that they are false and experience disdain and aversion over this.

“You that are unable to love anything but yourselves and your money and regard every hour not devoted to satisfying your flesh or fattening your purses as wasted, in your enjoyment or work as gluttons and beasts, manage to introduce a pause which will enable you to think of God, of his acts of goodness, his patience, and his love, You should always, I repeat, bear Me in mind, whatever you do; but since you are unable to act while keeping your spirits fixed in God, once a week stop acting so as to think of God alone.

“This, which may seem to you to be a servile law, is instead proof of how God loves you. Your good Father knows that you are fragile machines that wear out in continuous use and has provided for your flesh -- *for it, too, since it is also his work* -- by giving you the command to have it rest one day out of every seven to give it proper repose. God does not want your illnesses. If you had remained his children, *really his*, from Adam on, you would not have known illnesses. *These are the fruit of your acts of disobedience to God, together with pain and death*; and like a mushroom bed they arose and arise over the roots of the initial disobedience -- that of Adam -- and they sprout from each other, a tragic chain, from the germ which has remained in your hearts, from the venom of the accursed Serpent who gives you fevers of lust, avarice, gluttony, sloth, and blameworthy forms of imprudence.

“*And it is blameworthy imprudence to want to force your being towards constant work for gain, as it also is to want excessive enjoyment of the palate or the senses by not being satisfied with the food necessary for life and the company necessary for the continuation of the species*, but satiating yourselves beyond measure like animals of the swamps and exhausting themselves like -- rather, not like brutes, that are not similar, but superior to you in coupling, to which they go in obedience to laws of order -- *but degrading yourselves worse than brutes: like demons that disobey the holy laws of proper instinct, reason, and God.*

“*You have corrupted your instinct, and it now leads you to prefer corrupt meals, formed by lusts in which you profane your bodies -- my work -- and your souls -- my masterwork; and you slay embryonic lives by denying them life, for you suppress them before their time voluntarily or through your leprosy, which are lethal venom for nascent lives.*

“How many souls are there that your sensual appetite calls from Heaven and that you then close the gates of life to? How many are those that barely reach their term and are born dying or already dead that you bar from Heaven? How many are those upon whom you impose a weight of pain, *which they cannot always bear*, with a sick existence marked by painful and shameful

diseases? How many are those that cannot resist this kind of martyrdom, not wanted but affixed by you like a firebrand upon the flesh, which you have begotten *without reflecting that, when one is corrupt like a tomb full of putrefaction, it is no longer licit to beget children to condemn them to pain and the loathing of society?* How many are those that, unable to resist this fate, commit suicide?

“But what do you think? That I will condemn them for this crime of theirs against God and themselves? No. *Before them, who sin against two, are you, who sin against three: against God, against yourselves, and against the innocent whom you beget to lead them to desperation.* Consider this. Consider it carefully. *God is just, and if the sin holds weight, the causes of the sin also do. And in this case the weight of the sin lightens the condemnation of the suicide, but aggravates the condemnation of you, true killers of your desperate children.*

“On that day of rest which God has placed in the week -- and He gave you his example of rest; consider: He, the infinite Agent, the Generator who from Himself generates Himself continuously -- he has shown you the need for rest; He did so for you, to be your Teacher in life. And do you, insignificant powers, want not to take this into account, almost as if you were more powerful than God? On that day of rest for your flesh which is broken under excessive fatigue, *manage to occupy yourselves with the rights and duties of the soul.* The rights -- to true Life. The soul dies if it is kept separated from God. Give Sunday to your souls -- since you are unable to do so every day and every hour -- so that on Sunday the soul may feed on the Word of God, may be filled with God, so as to have vitality during the other days of work. Rest is so sweet in his father's house for a son whom work has kept distant for a whole week! And why don't you give this sweetness to your souls? Why do you tarnish this day with excessive food and drink and lust instead of making it a clear light for your blessedness now and afterwards?

“And, after love for the one who created you, love for those who have begotten you and for those who are your brothers and sisters. If God is Charity, how can you say you are in God if you do not seek to resemble Him in charity? And can you say you resemble Him if you love Him alone and not the others created by Him? Yes, God should be loved more than all others, *but those who scorn loving the ones God loves cannot say they love God.*

“*Love, then, first of all, those who, because they begot you, are the second creators of your being on earth. The supreme Creator is the Lord God, who forms your souls and, master as He is of Life and Death, allows you to come into life. But the second creators are the ones who make a single new flesh out of two bodies and two bloods, a new child of God, a new future inhabitant of the Heavens. Since it is for the Heavens that you are created, since it is for the Heavens that you must live on earth.*

“Oh, the sublime dignity of the father and mother! *A holy Episcopate* - I speak with bold, but true words -- *that consecrates new servants to God with the chrism of conjugal love, washes them with the mother's tears, dresses them with the father's work, and makes them bearers of the Light by infusing the knowledge of God into children's minds and the love of God into innocent hearts. In truth I tell you that parents are only slightly inferior to God solely because of the fact of creating a new Adam. But, in addition, when parents are able to make the new Adam a new little Christ, then their dignity is barely one degree inferior to that of the Eternal.*

“*Love your father and mother; then -- this twofold manifestation of God that conjugal love turns into a 'unity' -- with a love inferior only to the love you must have for the Lord your God. Love this manifestation because its dignity and works are the most similar to God's in regard to you: these parents are your earthly creators, and everything in you must venerate them as such.*

“*And love your children, O parents. Remember that to every duty there corresponds a right and that, if it is your children's duty to see in you the greatest dignity after God and to give you the greatest love after that total love which should be given to God, you have the duty to be perfect so as not to diminish your children's conception of and love for you.*

“*Remember that begetting flesh is a great deal, but at the same time, nothing. Animals also beget flesh and often care for it better than you do. But you beget a citizen of the Heavens. You must be concerned about this. Do not extinguish the light in your children's souls; do not allow the pearl of your children's souls to get used to the mud. Give love, holy love, to your children, and not foolish care of physical beauty and human culture. No. It is the beauty of their souls, the education of their spirits, that you ought to care for.*

“*The life of parents is a sacrifice, as is that of priests and teachers convinced of their mission. All three groups are 'molders' of what does not die: the spirit, or the psyche, if you prefer. And since the spirit stands in relation to the flesh in a proportion of 1000 to 1, consider the degree of perfection from which parents, teachers, and priests ought to draw to be truly as they should. I say 'perfection.' 'Formation' is not enough. They must form the others, but in order to form them not as the deformed, they must model them after a perfect model. And how can they claim to if they are imperfect themselves? And how can they become perfect themselves of [if] they do not model themselves after the Perfect One, who is God? And what can make man capable of modeling himself after God? Love. Always love. You are crude, formless iron. Love is the furnace which purifies you and melts and liquefies you so as to flow through supernatural veins into the form of God. Then you will be the 'molders' of others: when you have molded yourselves after the perfection of God.*

“*Children often represent the spiritual failure of parents. Through the children the worth of the parents is seen. For, if it is true that depraved children*

are sometimes born to holy parents, this is the exception. Generally, at least one of the parents is not holy, and since it is easier for you to copy evil than good, the child copies the less good. It is also true that a holy child is sometimes born to depraved parents. But here, too, it is unlikely that both parents are depraved. By a law of compensation, the better of the two is good for both and with prayers, tears, and words does the work of both in molding the child for Heaven.

“In any case, O children, whatever your parents are like, I tell you, ‘Do not judge; just love; just forgive; just obey, except in those things which are contrary to my Law. To you goes the merit of obedience, love, and forgiveness, of the forgiveness of you sons and daughters, Maria, which hastens God’s forgiveness of parents, and the more it is complete forgiveness, the more it hastens it; to parents go the responsibility and the just judgment -- in regard to both you and what concerns God -- of God, the only Judge.’

“It is superfluous to explain that to kill is to act against love. Love for God, whose right over the life and death of a creature of his and whose right as a Judge you take away. Only God is a Judge and a holy Judge, and if He has granted to man the creation of assemblies for justice to put a check on both crime and punishment, *woe to you if, as you go against the Justice of God, you go against the justice of man by setting yourselves up as judges of a neighbor of yours who has done wrong or who you believe has done wrong.*

“Consider, O poor sons and daughters, that *offenses and pain upset mind and heart, and that wrath and pain itself place a veil upon your intellectual sight*, a veil that obstructs your vision of authentic truth and charity, as God presents it to you, so that by it you may be able to govern your indignation, when just, and not turn it into injustice by excessively harsh condemnation. *Be holy even while the offense is burning you. Remember God then, above all.*

“And you, too, judges of the earth, be holy. You have the most intense horrors of mankind in hand. Examine them with your sight and mind impregnated with God. See the true ‘reason’ for certain ‘forms of depravity.’ Consider that even if they are real forms of ‘depravity’ of mankind, which degrades itself, there are many causes which produce them. In the hand that killed seek the power which moved it to kill, and remember that you, too, are men. Ask yourselves whether you -- if betrayed, abandoned, or provoked -- would have been better than the man or woman before you awaiting sentence. In severely examining yourselves, consider whether no woman can accuse you of being the true slayers of the child she suppressed because, after the joyous hour; the two of you withdrew from your commitment of honor. And, if you can do so, also be severe.

“But if, after having sinned against the child born of your deceit and your lust, you still want to obtain forgiveness from the One who is not deceived and does not lose his memory after years and years of correct living, after that incorrect act which you did not want to make amends for, or after that crime

which you provoked, *at least be active in preventing evil, especially where female irresponsibility and a squalid environment predispose people to fall into vice and infanticide.*

“Remember, O men, that I, the Pure One, *did not refuse to redeem women without honor.* And in place of the honor they no longer had I caused *the living flower of redeeming repentance* to rise up in their spirits, like a flower from desecrated soil. I gave my merciful love to the poor unfortunates whom a so-called ‘love’ had prostrated in the mire. My true love saved them from the lust which so-called love had injected into them. If I had cursed and fled them, I would have lost them forever. *I have also loved them because of the world, which after having enjoyed them, covers them with hypocritical scorn and lying disdain.* In place of the caresses of sin, I have caressed them with the purity of my gaze; in place of the words of delirium, I have had words of love for them; in place of money, the shameful price of their kiss, I have given the riches of my Truth.

“*One acts like this, men, to pull whoever sinks into the slime out of the slime, and one does not throw one’s arms around their necks so as to perish together or throw stones so as to make them sink further. It is love -- it is always love that saves.*

“I have already spoken about what a sin against love adultery is, and I will not repeat it, at least for the time being. There is so much to be said about this regurgitation of animality -- *so much that you would not even understand, for you pride yourselves on being betrayers of the home --* that out of mercy on my little disciple I will keep silent. I don’t want to exhaust the strength of the extenuated creature and disturb her spirit with forms of human ruthlessness, for, now close to the goal, she thinks only of Heaven.

“Those who steal obviously act against love. If they remembered not to do to others what they would not like to have done to them and if they loved others as themselves, *they would not take way[sic] what belongs to their neighbor with violence and deceit.* They would thus not go against love, as, on the contrary, they do when committing thievery, which may involve merchandise, money, or jobs. How many robberies you commit by stealing a job from a friend, an invention from a companion! *You are thieves, thieves three times over, when doing this. You are such even more than if you stole a wallet or a jewel, for without these one can still live, but without a paying job one dies, and the family of the man whose job was stolen dies of hunger with him.*

“I gave you speech as a sign of elevation over all the other animals on earth. You should thus love Me for speech, my gift. *But can I say that you love Me for speech when you make this gift of Heaven into a weapon to ruin your neighbor with a false oath?* No, you love neither Me nor your neighbor when you affirm what is false, but, rather, you hate us. *Don’t you reflect that the word*

kills not only the flesh, but a man's reputation? Whoever kills hates; whoever hates does not love.

“Envy is not charity: it is anti-charity. Whoever immoderately desires the possessions of others is envious and does not love. Be content with what you have. Consider that under the appearance of joy there are often sorrows which God sees and which are spared you, apparently less happy than those you envy. For, if, moreover, the object desired is the wife or husband of another, realize, then, that you join the sin of lust and adultery to that of envy. You thus commit a threefold offense against the Charity of God and your neighbor.

“As you see, if you violate the decalog, you violate love. And so it is with the counsels I have given you, which are the flower of the plant of Charity. Now, if by violating the Law you violate love, it is obvious that sin is an act against love. And it must therefore be expiated with love.

“You must give Me the love you have been unable to give Me on earth in Purgatory. This is why I say that Purgatory is nothing but the suffering of love.

“Throughout your lives you have little loved God in his Law. You have cast the thought of Him behind you; you have lived loving everyone and not loving Him very much. It is right that, not having merited Hell and not having merited Paradise, you should merit it now by becoming inflamed with charity, burning for the way you were lukewarm on earth. It is right that you should desire for thousands and thousands of hours of expiation in love what you have failed to desire thousands and thousands of times on earth: God, the supreme goal of the created intelligences. To every time you turned your backs on love there correspond years and centuries of loving longing. Years or centuries according to the seriousness of your sin.

“Now rendered certain of God, aware of the supreme beauty of God, through that fleeting encounter at the first judgment, the memory of which then accompanies you to make the desire for love more intense, you long for Him, weep over his absence, regret and repent of having been yourselves the cause of this absence, and increasingly become capable of being penetrated by Charity in that intense fire for your supreme good.

“When the merits of Christ, by the prayers of the living who love you, are cast like burning essences into the holy fire of Purgatory, the incandescence of love penetrates you more powerfully and more inwardly, and, amidst the glow of the flames, the memory of God, seen in that instant, becomes increasingly luminous in you.

“As in life on earth the more love grows, the thinner the veil becomes which conceals the Divinity from the living, just the same in the second realm, the more purification -- and thus love -- grows, the closer and more visible the face of God becomes. It already shines through and smiles amidst the flashing of the holy fire. It is like a Sun coming closer and closer, and its light and

warmth increasingly cancel out the light and heat of the purgative fire, until, passing from the merited and blessed torment of the fire to the conquered and glorious refreshment of possession, you go from blaze to Blaze, from light to Light, and rise to be light and blaze in Him, the Eternal Sun, like a spark absorbed by a pyre and a lamp thrown into a fire.

“Oh, joy of joys, when you find yourselves risen to my Glory, having passed from that realm of expectation to the Kingdom of triumph. Oh, perfect knowledge of Perfect Love!

“This knowledge, O Maria, is a mystery which the mind can know by the will of God, but cannot describe with human words. Believe that it is worth suffering for a whole lifetime to possess it beginning at the hour of death. Believe that there is no greater charity than to seek it with prayers for the ones you loved on earth and who are now beginning the purgation in love to which they closed the doors of their hearts so many times in life.

“Courage, blessed one to whom the hidden truths are revealed. Proceed, act, and rise. For yourself and for the ones you love in the hereafter.

“Let the thread of your life be consumed by Love. Pour your love upon Purgatory to open the gates of Heaven to the ones you love. Blessed are you if you are able to love to the point of burning to ashes that which is weak and which sinned. The Seraphim come to meet the spirit purified by the immolation of love and teach it the eternal Sanctus to be sung at the foot of my throne.”

The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment

Obadiah And Italy¹⁹¹

Jesus says:

“This will make you suffer. But I cannot always speak to you alone, little spouse of love and pain.

“Write for everyone. The words of Obadiah are the page of Italy in this last century. There is no error even in the description of the soil.

“O Italy, Italy, to which I have given so much and which has forgotten Me and forgotten my benefits! And from that Piedmont, where there is a witness to God not inferior to that of the Mosaic Tabernacle -- for, if there were two tablets in it written by God's prophet, here there is the story of my Passion written with the ink of divine Blood on the linen¹⁹² which mercy offered to cloak my nakedness as the Immolated One -- and from that Piedmont there was to

¹⁹¹ NB43, October 23, 1943, p. 417

¹⁹² The Holy Shroud, which is kept in the Turin Cathedral.

begin the error which has now blossomed into such a painful flower and which will give you such poisonous fruit!

“The pride of the heart, the eternal sin of man, has come to pervert your rulers, O Italy, your rulers, for whom it was fatal to have won. It is always fatal when God’s gift does not descend into the heart of a sincere son, who respects and loves the Father.

“The gift ferments, getting mixed, with its good, with the evil which is in you, and it produces an amalgam of destruction. First of all you destroy grace in yourselves, then the benevolence of God towards you, and thirdly the fruit of that benevolence. In your case the initial victories, mixing the licit motive of national resurrection with pride, from which acts of overbearance and errors come, destroyed that good which I had granted to you.

“You immediately erred. You thought you were safe because you had been successful. But don’t you know, O kings and rulers, *that You exist as long as I will it and your errors do not prompt my ‘Enough?’* Even if you had become the most powerful on earth and your throne had been set upon the summits where the eagle freely flies, made in the very rocks which crown this land, crowned with my stars, a thought of my Will could cause it to crumble and hurl the remains to the depths of the valley.

“*You excessively forget that there is One who is Powerful and that every power comes from Him.* Like those who badly use miraculous health regained by my mercy, you have badly used the satisfactions I have given you and have thought you could do without Me and my Law.

“It is of no benefit, O kings and peoples, to display deceitful veneration for my Cross and my Church. *One must live the law of the Cross and truly respect the Church.* God may not be mocked and is not deceived. You must not tempt his infinite patience.

“You have committed one, two, ten errors. I have sent you punishments; I have sent you joys; I have sent you my saints to lead you back to Good. You have responded to the punishments with acts of rebellion, to the joys by taking advantage of them for human, and sometimes illicit, ends, and to my saints by mocking them. You have grown worse and worse. I increased the benefits to attract you, and you smiled at the spirit of the Enemy. It certainly can be said that in this people and in its rulers ‘there is no longer any prudence,’ there is no longer ‘wisdom,’ but only pride, derision, thoughtlessness, and sin.

“You have placed everything under your feet to make it a stool and rise. *But the things of God are not placed under one’s feet. They should be accepted on one’s knees and with the spirit of children, and not used as the means of human triumph.* Then, like the stones of a triumphal ark shaken by the trembling of my wrath, they come apart, plunge, and cast you down.

“And you are knocked down. Your sons shall be pushed to the confines, poor land without any more divine light. Like herds beaten on their backs

by fierce shepherds, your present and previous masters beat your sons, and since you wanted these masters of cruelty in place of the holy Master in whose hands are blessings and peace, and since you were unable to shed the tears which obtain forgiveness and wash away sins, you shall wash them with blood mixed with the long and bitter weeping of one defeated.

“Where are your friends, O land that have not wanted God as your friend? Betrayal is reserved for whoever betrays. And it is useless and harmful to say now, ‘This one or that one was the traitor.’ *All of you have betrayed. Betrayed God, your Father, betrayed his Word of Life, betrayed your consciences.* You are so many Judases. You have sold *those near and those distant* for a little money and a few deceitful promises, hoping you would obtain a result from betrayal. But what result, except poison? What result, except death?

“You have exulted over the ruin of others. And why? For your interest? No. You are doubly to blame for this. You have worshipped the calf you thought was golden and which was only golden dust. You have served the precursors of the Beast. The Beast gives you the fruits of his kingdom of darkness. Death, ruin, indigence, famine, shame, servitude, the collapse of faith, freedom, and honor, *and if you don’t cling to the Cross, your final salvation, you will come to imitate the beasts made rabid by hunger and wrath: you will tear each other to pieces and think you are sating yourselves by killing the servants of God. But you will do nothing but destroy the Good still flourishing among you and become hyenas with a human appearance, demons who look human.*

“But don’t you hear the Voice of God crying out in your consciences? Don’t you hear it thundering in the skies, calling you once more to save you? No, you do not hear it. And, what is worst of all, not even those who ought to be accustomed to perceiving it and knowing it hear it any longer. They have the consecrated clothing, but desecrated hearts. They are deaf. *And if they do not hear, how can they make others hear?*

“Keep watch. I say it once again. *Observe the signs -- you that read God’s books and you simple faithful. The signs are tremendous.* Divert them with the Cross. Bear out the crosses and my effigies. *Throw out Satan with Christ the Victor.* Have faith. Have faith. You are dying from not having faith. *I would like you to bless every region, every province, every city with Myself, the Redeemer. Not celebrations. This is not the time. But true adorations and pure blessings to free yourselves from the One who makes you and your present and previous masters obsessed.*”

Jesus has me understand that He would like prayers to his images as Redeemer. For this region, to the Holy Face. But without festivities. City by city, town by town, village by village.

Having to write certain painful pages is a torture. I feel my nerves shrinking. But what can I do?

Admonition For Priests And Leaders¹⁹³

Jesus says:

“Too many have wanted to eat with blood. And blood forms a knot in their throats. Blood extorted out of overbearance, pride, lust for power. Too much blood was shed and is shed on earth by those who have lost even the slightest conception of Good and Evil and are butts of mockery in the hands of Satan, who waves them like his banner to confuse and pervert the weak.

“Too much of the ‘illicit’ has been made to become ‘licit’ just because it was done by the powerful. But consider, O men of power for an hour, that the only Powerful One is already holding his thunderbolt to burn to ashes in your hands the fruits you have stolen, first of all, and, if you still do not repent, then you yourselves.

“The true possession of the earth will not be given to the violent, killers, corrupters, betrayers, and the perverse. It will belong to those who live according to my Law. You can take this earthly day away from them before sunset comes; but in the tremendous and blazing Day of my Coming they will judge you with Me, you that now regard every illicit verdict as licit.

“Woe to you, then, when behind Christ the Judge, whose immense Majesty will shake the worlds with a trembling much stronger than that which opened the tombs and split the veil of the Temple at the hour of my death,¹⁹⁴ woe to you when behind Me you see all those whom you have killed and tortured and *whose pains I will bear in mind in judging you for eternity.*

“Cities, kingdoms, and peoples fall because of your sin. You have wanted to dominate, and with fierce absolutism. *I will create solitude around you.* You will remain like the surviving column of a collapsed building. But remember that *it may happen that those living amid the ruins are ruined and whoever produces ruins is certainly destined to ruin.* And you can still call yourselves happy if on falling you remember that I am the Lord of the world.

“As for you, soul of mine, do not tremble and do not grow proud. Fear and pride are equally harmful. May you be left indifferent by praise and derision. Live solely in the thought of serving the cause of your God. The derision endured for God’s cause is already a halo.

“Praises! Oh, the praises of men! They are the vainest thing there is and that which most readily vanishes into nothing. More than an air bubble ris-

¹⁹³ NB43, October 28, 1943, p. 428

¹⁹⁴ ET: Matthew 27:51-54; Mark 15:38; Luke 23:45.

ing from a slimy depth, gas from putrid mud, to burst forth on the surface of the waters, on which it marks a circle immediately dissolved -- such is the praise of men. It always arises from a human sentiment, drags its miasmas after it, breaks the mirror of inner peace, and then nothing more remains of the latter. Blessed are those who, like water wanting to remain pure, continue to act in God and go swiftly, leaving behind even the memory of the useless praise prompted by passing into contact with humanity which is humanity alone.

“May human praises never seduce you. Always consider that they are half hypocrisy and half thoughtlessness. As they adulate you today, tomorrow they denigrate you. Consider that even the best -- with that goodness which is entirely human, though -- listen to you out of delight at the words, not because of the words’ substance. Concepts are pleasing because they are harmonious and artistic; they do not meditate on the core which supports them: ‘To them you are like a song sung by a sweet, soft voice; they listen to your words, but do not put them into practice.’¹⁹⁵

“Let them act. All the worse for them. They refuse another gift of my patient Mercy and, in refusing it, heap upon themselves the coals of my Justice, for they had someone who brought them the Word anew, and they have once again disparaged it. The prophesy of Isaiah may once again be applied to this generation: ‘You will hear and not understand; you will look and not see. For the heart of this people has become insensitive; they have become hard of hearing and have closed their eyes so as not to see and not hear and not understand in their hearts and not be converted and not be healed by Me.’

“Adulterous and accursed generation that so readily believe in those killing you spiritually and reject the Christ and his prophets, who want to give you Life, how often, generation of those *already marked* with the sign of Christ, which is a contradiction upon you, wedded to the Enemy and the flesh, how often I have sought to save you receiving in exchange stones for my prophets and crucifixion for your Master! Foolish and betraying generation, generation of Judas that sell Me and engage in trade for an unclean appetite and deny the Light to sink into the darkness, welcome to what you want. You shall have death, for you did not want Life, and you shall have no other signs to awaken your somnolence as a guzzler but the tremendous signs of my wrath.

““But when what has been foretold occurs, and it is coming, then you will know that there has been a prophet in your midst, a servant, a “voice” of mine.”¹⁹⁶

“Daughter, write: ‘Woe to the shepherds who feed themselves.’¹⁹⁷ Shepherds of souls and shepherds of men. My priests and the heads of nations.

¹⁹⁵ The writer in pencil adds a reference to “verse 32.”

¹⁹⁶ The writer adds a reference in pencil to verse 33.

¹⁹⁷ The writer adds a reference in pencil to verse 2.

“The tremendous responsibility of being administrators of lives and Lives cannot be fulfilled in holiness and justice unless you remain in my Holiness and my Justice. There are no others. Outside of God and his Law there is no continuous honesty in works. You can rule for some time, but you then decline and are the ruin of yourselves and others.

“You deform your mission; you feed yourselves instead of giving food. You do not exhaust yourselves in the holy and gentle task of fortifying and healing souls -- you, the first shepherds, and, in the just and blessed task of protecting your subjects, you, the second shepherds. You have persecuted and neglected. You have condemned and slain. O tremendous judgment awaiting you!

“I repeat:¹⁹⁸ *the despair of those subject falls upon those who prompt it. Every disturbance, every curse upon those who cause it to issue forth. Every agony of souls, upon those priests who know only how to be rigorists and are without charity.*

“Woe, woe, woe to you powerful ones. But woe seven times over to you priests. For, if the former lead bodies more than souls to death, *you are responsible for the death of the souls, beginning with those of the powerful, whom you are unable to contain, or, at least, do not try to contain with a firm ‘Non licet’ but whom you leave to work their evil out of a deceitful deference which is a betrayal of Christ.*

“I told you: ‘The good shepherd gives his life for that of his sheep.’ You pay attention to preserving your own; and the sheep, great and small, have dispersed, as the prey of the fierce, and have died from having fed on unhealthy pastures.

“One must be able to chain the feet of the big plant which does harm. And not consider the danger that it and its offshoots will turn against you with the chain and take your life, *but act to protect the highest Life.* You do this less and less, and ruin devastates the earth, and ruin devastates spirits.

“I now tell you: Behold, I, Myself will become their Shepherd. I will come to gather my sheep together. I will gather them in my pastures outside the haze of the foolish, pernicious doctrines which produce the deadly fevers of the spirit. I will separate them; indeed, by themselves they will separate from the kids and the rams, for they shall hear the Voice that loves them. They shall no longer hear it as they do now, through my servants, but issuing forth like a river of Life from the mouth of the Word coming back to take possession of his Kingdom.

“I will gather in my sheep with mercy, including those that your neglect has ruined. But get out, get out of my flock, wolves in sheep’s clothing; get out, slothful shepherds; get out, those thirsting for wealth and pleasure. Those who follow Me must have charity towards their brothers and sisters and not grow fat

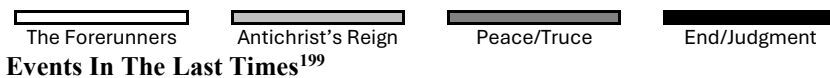
¹⁹⁸ As in other dictations, especially in those of July 22 and August 5.

while leaving to others wretched grass trampled upon and filthy, and water made cloudy by human intrigues. And this also applies to those who in the congregations of lay people are inclined only towards offices arousing vainglory. *Down with pride*, if you want to be my lambs *and down with hardness of heart*. *They are the pointed horns with which you wound and reject the meek and oppress the weak*.

“When I have cleansed the flock of what is false and impure, in my period as King of Peace, I will instruct those remaining for the final instruction. They shall know Me as now only the chosen know Me. There shall be not twelve of them, but twelve thousand times twelve thousand creatures called to the knowledge of the King. Heresies and wars shall fall. Light and Peace shall be the sun of the Earth. They shall feed on the living seed of my Word and shall no longer be languishing with spiritual hunger. They shall worship Me in spirit and truth.

“When Satan’s final revolt against God takes place, the final Judases will not be lacking among those called to the knowledge of the King. The gold of the Eternal City must be refined by three filters so as to become a thurible before the throne of the glorious Lamb. And this shall be the last filter. But the ‘faithful’ shall remain faithful; they shall know that I am with them and that they are my eternal people.

“But from this moment on, O my beloved ones, O soul that love Me and that I love, know that, even before I come to gather together my flock to take it to the eternal pastures of Heaven, you are my beloved lambs. You shall enter into my Kingdom before the others because you are my flock and I am the Lord your God, your Shepherd, who takes his delight in your midst and calls you to his dwelling to live with you in the Peace reserved for Christ’s faithful.”



Events In The Last Times¹⁹⁹

Jesus says:

“When I have Zephaniah say that I will carry off everything from the earth, I have him prophesy what will happen the day before the eve of the last time, what I later announced, concealed under the description of the ruin of the Temple and of Jerusalem, of the destruction of the world, and what the Beloved One prophesied in his Apocalypse.²⁰⁰

¹⁹⁹ NB43, October 29, 1943, p. 432

²⁰⁰ ET: Matthew 24:1-31; Mark 13:1-27; Luke 21:5-28; Apocalypse 14:14-20; 19:11-21; 20:1-15.

“The voices succeed each other. Indeed, I can say that, as in a sacred edifice raised up to witness to the glory of the Lord, the voices rise from pinnacle to pinnacle, from prophet to prophet preceding Christ, up to the greatest peak, upon which the Word speaks during his life as a man, and then descend from pinnacle to pinnacle, over the centuries, through the mouths of the prophets following Christ.

“It is like a concert which sings the praises, dictates, and glories of the Lord, and it shall last until the moment when the angelical trumpets shall assemble the dead in graves and the dead in spirit, the living on earth and the living in Heaven, so that they will prostrate themselves before the visible glory of the Lord and hear the word of the Word of God, that Word whom numberless ones have rejected and neglected, disobeyed, mocked, and disparaged, that Word who came -- Light into the world -- and whom the world did not want to receive, preferring the darkness.²⁰¹

“I am the summit of God’s edifice. There cannot be a word higher and truer than mine. But my Spirit is in the mouths of the lesser ‘words,’ for everything which speaks of what is God’s is a word inspired by God.

“Famine and the mortality of epidemics shall be one of the cursory signs of my second coming. Punishments created to punish you and call you back to God with their painful power shall effect one of the selections between the children of God and of Satan.

“Famine produced by plundering and accursed wars wanted without the justification of the independence of nations but only out of ferocity of power and the pride of demons in the guise of men, produced by the arresting, through Gods will, of the cosmic laws, whereby the cold shall be harsh and protracted, whereby heat shall be seething and not mitigated by rains, whereby the seasons shall be reversed and you shall have drought in the rainy seasons and rains in the time of the ripening of the harvests, whereby; deceived by sudden warmth or unaccustomed freshness, plants shall bloom out of season, and, after having already generated, the trees shall be covered with new, useless flowers extenuating the plant without fruit -- for all disorder is harmful and leads to death remember this, O men -- hunger shall cruelly torment this arrogant race hostile to God.

“The animals, deprived of hay and fodder, of grains and seeds, shall die of hunger and because of man’s hunger, be destroyed without giving them time to procreate. Birds of the sky and fish of the waters, herds and flocks shall be attacked on all sides to give your bellies the food which the earth shall not produce for you any longer, except meagerly.

“The forms of mortality created by wars and pestilences, by earthquakes and storms shall hurl into the next life the good and the wicked. The

²⁰¹ ET: John 1:1-11.

former, for your punishment, for, deprived of the best, you shall grow worse and worse; the latter, for their punishment, for they shall have hell as their dwelling before the anticipated hour.

“The victim prepared by the Lord to purify the altar of the earth, profaned by the sins of idolatry, lust, hatred, and pride shall be you, men, thousands and tens of thousands of whom shall perish under the sharp scythe of the divine thunderbolts. Like grass mown down in a meadow in April, you shall fall upon each other: the holy flowers mixed with the poisonous ones; the soft steles mixed with the sharp brambles. The hands of my angels shall select and separate the blessed from the accursed, taking the former to Heaven and leaving the latter to the tridents of the demons for the pasturage of Hell. Being kings or beggars, learned or ignorant, young or old warriors or priests shall not constitute a difference or bulwark against death. There shall be punishment, and a tremendous one.

“The eye of God shall choose those destined by removing the ‘lights’ so that they will not have to suffer any longer from the haze created by men joined to Satan, removing the ‘darkness’ generating darkness because it is possessed by the father of darkness: Satan.

“The eye of God, which penetrates into palaces, churches, and consciences -- and there is no barrier or hypocrisy which keeps it from seeing -- shall scrutinize within the Church -- the present Jerusalem -- and scrutinize within souls and write the individual decree for the indolent, the indifferent, the lukewarm, the rebellious, the betrayers, the killers of the spirit, and the decides.

“No, do not think that God will do you neither good nor harm for your works. I swear to you, I swear to Myself, I swear by my Justice, I swear with a triple oath -- I will do good to you for the good you do and harm for the evil done by you.

“If the uncleanness of the flesh and of your life as beasts forms a scale over the eyes of your souls to keep them from seeing God, nothing forms a veil for God. I will make my hand weigh heavily upon those who delight in being in the slime, for they make the slime of sin into the food preferred by their impure hunger.

“The day is approaching, children who have denied the Father. The time of the Earth is at once long and brief.

“Wasn’t it yesterday that you enjoyed an honest well-being provided by peace and by the pacific works producing bread and labor? Wasn’t it yesterday -- O you that live in this tremendous hour²⁰² -- that you enjoyed the bliss of the family, not dismembered and destroyed, the bliss of children around the father’s dinner table, of the marriage bed -- the husband alongside the wife -- of the father bending over the heads of his children as a teacher and friend? And

²⁰² ET: 1943.

now? Where is all of this? Swift as a bird flying to distant shores, that time has passed. It was yesterday... Now you turn and see that a sum of days which horror multiplies with its bloody intensity separates you therefrom. You take refuge in memory, but heaps of ruins and rows of tombs destroy the sweetness of your memory with the reality of the present.

“Oh, men! Men who insult God with the voices of the mouth and heart, believing it is licit for you to do so. *Hear, men, the voice of God, agonized and agonizing, which already thunders over the world because it is of no benefit to speak to you through the mouths of his servants and friends and which announces to you his wrath and which still calls you, for it suffers over punishing you.*

“*Before the blindness of your spirits is complete, come to the Doctor and the Light. Before the blood is so abundant as to become a lake of death, come to the source of Life. Gather together your wretched capacities for love and direct them towards God. Love will forgive you on account of those crumbs of love, the leftovers of the robberies of the flesh and of Satan, which you offer to Him.*

“To God the first fruits and the totality of goods should be given. But, since you have been unable to do this, O sons and daughters who have cost Me my life, *give to the great, merciful, and powerful Lord what still remains to you. In your spiritual poverty, not evangelical, but human poverty, wrest the last petiole from your hearts, deny that remainder to the flesh, and give it to Me.* I know that the sacrifice of life costs one of my beloved less -- for love inebriates him -- than the sacrifice of a kiss costs you. *And for your effort, disproportionate to the offer, I will give you a reward disproportionate to the gift. I will give it to you, provided you come.*

“Whoever worked well in the final hour shall be admitted into the Kingdom like the one who guided the plough until falling upon it, from dawn to the dusk arriving in haste. You shall not regret having a different dwelling in Heaven; there the baseness of human envies does not exist. But conquer this Heaven which I created for you and which I opened to you with my death on the Cross. *Come to the Lord before the Lord comes upon you with his majesty as a Judge.*

“In regard to you, my beloved ones, remain on the way you have chosen. Whirlwinds and storms cannot make you lose the goal which I am, with my Heart open to receive you with the most intense kiss of love. Let kingdoms and peoples fall, and what now thinks it is powerful become ash and ruin, and what now thinks it is licit to dictate decisions and doctrines become dust fractured by the Will and Law of God.

“In my brief reign over the world, it shall be I that reign, I and the remnants of my people -- that is, the true faithful, those who have not denied Christ and covered the sign of Christ with the tiara of Satan [ET: “...Satan’s

[fake] tiara.”]. Then the deceitful deities of excessive power and the obscene doctrines denying God, the almighty Lord, shall fall.

“My Church, before the world’s hour ceases, shall have her shining triumph. *Nothing is different in the life of the Mystical Body from what was in the life of Christ. There shall be the hosanna on the eve of the Passion, the hosanna when the peoples, caught by the fascination of the Divinity, shall bend their knee to the Lord. Then the Passion of my militant Church shall come and, finally, the glory of the eternal Resurrection in Heaven.*

“O blessedness of that day, on which the deceits, acts of revenge, and struggles of Satan and of the flesh shall be over forever! My Church shall then be made up of true Christians. Then, on the next-to-last day. A few, as at the beginning, but holy, as at the beginning. She shall end in holiness as she began in holiness. The liars, betrayers, and idolaters shall remain outside. Those who on the final day imitate Judas and sell their souls to Satan, harming the Mystical Body of Christ. In them the Beast will have his deputies for his last war.

“*And woe to those in Jerusalem, in the last times, who become guilty of such a sin. Woe to those who exploit their function therein for human gain. Woe to those who let their brothers and sisters perish and neglect making the Word I have entrusted to them bread for the souls hungry for God. Woe. I will not distinguish between those openly denying God and those denying Him with their works. And in truth I tell you, with the sorrow of the supreme Founder, that in the final hour three-fourths of my Church will deny Me, and I will have to cut them away from the trunk as dead branches corrupted by an unclean fever.*

“But you that remain in Me -- hear Christ’s promise. Wait for Me faithfully and lovingly, and I will come to you with all my gifts. With the gift of gifts -- Myself. I will come to redeem and to provide care. I will come to illuminate the darkness, to overcome it and set it to flight. I will come to teach men to love and worship the Eternal God, the Most High Lord, the Holy Christ, the Father, the Son, the Holy Spirit. I will come to bring you not the peace of this world -- the eternal Destroyer of Peace -- but the Peace of the undying Kingdom.

“Exult, O my faithful servants. The mouth that does not lie tells you this. *You will no longer have to fear any evil because I will put an end to the time of evil; I will hasten this end out of mercy on my blessed ones.*

“O you, my beloved at present -- exult, above all. For you the advent of Christ and his glorious embrace will be even more solicitous. For you the gates of the City of God are already opening, and your Savior is coming out to meet you and give you true Life.

“A little longer, and I will come for you. As with Lazarus, my friend, I will call you one by one: ‘Come out!’²⁰³ Out of this earthly life which is a tomb for the spirit imprisoned in the flesh. Out. Into the Life and freedom of Heaven.

²⁰³ ET: John 11:43.

*“Call Me with your faithful love. Let it be the blaze which melts the chains of flesh and gives the spirit the freedom to come quickly to Me. Utter the most beautiful cry written by man: ‘Come, Lord Jesus.’”*²⁰⁴

The Forerunners

Antichrist’s Reign

Peace/Truce

End/Judgment

Judgment Of Those Exercising Power²⁰⁵

Jesus says:

“Let us read Wisdom together. It begins with the exhortation, dictated by Me so often, to all the powerful of the earth that they be powerful more in justice than in strength.

“Strength is not an attribute of holiness. It does not place man on a superhuman level. One alone is the strength which elevates you: that of the spirit. But that is the antithesis of the strength you love and admire as if it were something great.

“You love ‘violence,’ ‘overbearance,’ and ‘ferocity’ and call this triad ‘strength’ and venerate it out of fear, as the beast on a chain fears the dominion of the tamer. But observe that this strength is common to the brutes. A strength solely of flesh and blood, it makes you perform actions of flesh and blood. And thus it is quite rarely justice.

“I said this²⁰⁶, and I repeat it: ‘You, the powerful, are such as long as I permit, and no longer.’ What, then, is this waving the whip over those without specific authority? Strip yourself of that function, which has come to you by inheritance, if you are kings, or by fortune and cunning, if you are dignitaries, ministers, heads of a Province, heads of a town, or directors of an institution, a factory, an office, or a convent -- in what respect are you different from the others? In none.

“Your underlings are often more deserving than you of that post. Deserving in human terms and, above all, spiritually. Always consider that even if out of fear they remain silent, you are judged by them and by God, who sees your actions better than everyone else and your being golden, crowned statues of slime, and black slime from the most corrupt pool. The deceitful and obligatory homage with which you want to be incensed produces loathing in God, who forgives those, amidst the throngs, who offer it to you because they are forced to do so and curses you and the others: idolaters of you to the point that they

²⁰⁴ ET: Apocalypse 22:20.

²⁰⁵ NB43, October 30, 1943, p. 437

²⁰⁶ In the dictation of October 23.

believe you are gods and give you that ritual of honor and respect which they do not give Me.

“One alone is God. He who made the earth over which you rule during your brief day and with your foolish or cruel pride. *If you want to be truly ‘great’ and ‘strong,’ draw this greatness and this strength from the Great and Powerful One -- from God -- by following his Word and remaining in Him as sons and daughters. You are not more than the least born of woman, compared to God, who is the Father Creator of all* and who can hold upon his heart like a precious pearl the poor one whom you disparage, beloved to Him for his holiness, while He looks at you with reproach, you that challenge Him from the loftiness of your precarious seat.

“*How much you that govern the Earth need light. Light comes from God. He alone is the Father and generator of Light.* Remain, then, under his holy ray; follow the Light; do not repudiate it for the darkness.

“*Seek the Lord as your counselor.* He is not one of those foolish, lying, self-interested counselors who surround you, adulating you and exciting your worst instincts out of either a servile spirit or a self-interested plan to draw you into error, to create your fall and take your place on the seat from which you have fallen.

“*But do not think of seeking this holy and all-seeing Lord with lying intentions. Accursed are those who always name Me and my Providence along with Me to deceive the masses, pretending to be lambs when they are wolves. That great and powerful Name, which thunders and shines like a blessed sun upon the good and like a lightning bolt upon the wicked of this earth and of Satan’s dwelling, hearts.*

“*I am where a son or daughter calls Me. But I do not confirm the works of the wicked with my help. Consider, O men, that their ephemeral triumphs, which make you believe that I am with them and doubt my Justice, have not come from Me. [It] is their leader and father -- it is Satan -- that grants them these as to his devoted children and soldiers, to create in them an ever-greater torment after death.*

“*I am where there is one of the faithful who believes in Me. But these are not faithful. If they were, they would observe my Word and the Will of the One who sent Me. They instead trample on the former, disobey the latter, and offend the Holy Spirit by killing their spirits with hatred contrary to love, with profaning lust, and with pride corrupting souls.* They are rudderless ships caught by the wind and by a wicked current. They go ever further from the goal, which is God, and eventually perish in the pit of the abyss.

“*When a heart is full of fleshly thoughts or hellish thoughts, the quintessence of fleshly thoughts, how can God enter there with his lights? When a heart which was once God’s separates from Him by doing evil, how can my Spirit continue to be its master?*

“I am the Merciful One. I take pity and forgive. I forgive so much. *I forgive what I see you do out of human weakness, not what is done out of cold human calculation. I will never be so severe a judge as with those, with their thought sold to Satan, who commit more crimes than a bandit, induce others to commit them, and, above all, commit the crime of crimes: that of leading souls to doubt God.*

“Today this crime of homicide and deicide is not exclusive to a few. They kill bodies and souls and kill the idea of God in souls by making them blind as empty sockets.

“The throngs distinguish too late. But I see at the moment you think and act, and all of you, wicked in flesh and spirit, shall be Judged with a most severe judgment.”

			
The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment

The Two Kinds Of Death²⁰⁷

Jesus says:

“There are two kinds of death. I have already explained this.²⁰⁸ There is the little death, the one that takes you from the earth and frees your spirits from the flesh. And there is the great death: the one that kills what is immortal -- your spirits. You rise again from the former. You never rise from the latter. You will be separated forever from Life -- that is, from God, your Life.

“More foolish than animals that, while obeying the order of instinct, are able to govern themselves in food, in mating, and in selecting a dwelling, you, with your continual acts of disobedience to the natural and supernatural order, often cause your own first and second death by yourselves. Forms of intemperance, abuses, acts of imprudence, foolish habits, pleasures, and vices kill your flesh like as many weapons brandished by you deliriously. Vices and sins, moreover, kill your souls. I thus say, ‘Do not go seeking death with the errors of your lives and perdition with the works of your hands.’

“I told you:²⁰⁹ God, who created everything, did not create death. The sun, which has been shining for vast millennia, is his work; the sea, contained in its limits upon a globe whirling in space, is his work; the numberless stars, whereby the firmament is like a region over which jewels fallen out of a boundless open coffer are scattered, are his work; animals and plants are his work:

²⁰⁷ NB43, October 31,²⁰⁷ 1943, p. 439

²⁰⁸ Especially in the dictation of August 22.

²⁰⁹ In the dictation of September 23.

from the colossal ones, like the elephant and the baobab,²¹⁰ to the tiniest, like the tenuous down of moss and the ephemeral dipterans insect in the strawberry bed; you men -- with hearts harder than jasper and tongues sharper than diamonds created and buried in the entrails of the earth by the Eternal, with thought darker than the coal created in the terrestrial strata through decomposition over millennia, and with intelligence as powerful as an eagle in space, but with a stubborn, rebellious will like that of an ape -- are his work.

“But He did not create death. It was generated by your marriage to Satan. Your father, in the order of earthly time, Adam, begot it before begetting his son. He begot it that day when, weak before the weakness of the woman, he yielded to her seduced will and sinned where no one had ever sinned; he sinned under the Serpent’s hiss and the tears and blushes of the Angels. But the little death is not a great evil when the flesh alone falls with it, like a leaf that has completed its cycle. It is, rather, a good, for it leads you to where you came from and where a Father awaits you.

“As He did not make the death of the flesh, God did not make the death of the spirit. He instead sent the eternal Resurrector his Son to give you Life when you had already died. The miracles of Lazarus, of the young man of Naim, and of the daughter of Jairus are not anything remarkable. They were among those who had fallen asleep -- I awakened them. The miracle was great, on the other hand, when I turned a Magdalene, a Zacchaeus, a Disma, and a Longinus, spiritually dead, into ‘those living in the Lord.’

“To be alive in the Lord! There is nothing greater in beauty, joy, duration, and splendor than this. Believe this, O sons and daughters, and seek to be ‘alive.’ Alive in the Triune God, alive in the Father, alive for eternity.

“You that call the earth hell -- and no matter how hellish you have made it with your ferocious systems, it is a paradise compared to Satan’s dwelling -- do *not make hell the final goal for your spirits. Make it God, who is Paradise for your spirits*, and leave hell to the nether world, to the damned, to the *accursed ones who have rejected Life*, repugnant food for their hearts as degraded ones, and received the death of which they were quite worthy.

“If everything ended on the earth, it would still be a small evil to appear wicked for a short time. Men would soon forget it, for memory is like a cloud of smoke that quickly vanishes. But the earth is not everything. *Everything is*

²¹⁰ *Baobab is a tree native to certain regions of Africa, Arabia, Australia and Madagascar. Also known by their scientific name Adansonia, baobab trees can grow up to 98 feet (30 meters) tall and produce a large fruit that is commonly consumed and appreciated for its delicious citrus-like flavor. The pulp, leaves and seeds of the baobab fruit -- which is also available in powdered form -- have been associated with many health benefits and are a staple in various recipes and cuisines.*

elsewhere. And in that 'everything' you will find what you have done on earth waiting for you.

"Nothing shall be without judgment. Consider this. And do not waste the patrimony God has given you like demented people, but make it bear fruit for your immortality. Those who lived in the Lord do not die. What was pain, frustration, and trial here below shall be changed for them in the hereafter into reward, triumph, and joy.

"And do not think either that God is unjust in distributing the goods of the earth and the length of life. This is what those who are already apart from God think. Those living in the Lord turn privations, afflictions, illnesses, and early death into a joy, for in all things they see the hand of the Father who loves them and can give them only useful and good things -- those things, moreover, which He gave Me, his Son.

"Already projected beyond this world, they think of and wish for the glory of God alone, and God shall clothe them in glory for eternity, The wicked shall be forgotten or remembered with horror, but the saints, the just, the sons and daughters of God shall be rendered lasting and holy tribute, for the Lord takes care of his beloved and not only is concerned about giving them joy in Heaven -- that is Himself -- but has true honor be given them by men, causing the spirit of a saint to shine like a new star before the eyes and minds of men."

The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment

Forms Of Contemporary Idolatry²¹¹

Jesus says:

"When a man, even when far from knowledge of the true God, knows, by the elevation of an upright soul, that there must be a God and in his heart raises an altar to the unknown God of whom Paul speaks, this man is much closer to God than those who, after having been instructed about the existence of God, have wanted to apply human theories to God's wondrous works.

"Even more idolatrous and even more accursed than those adoring a star or an animal are those who worship their thought or the thought of other shrimps like themselves. The former are savages and involutes. The latter, on the other hand, are civilized people who become savages. Similar to those who spontaneously mutilate themselves, they amputate their noblest and holiest part and throw it away as an inferior part.

"Look at the things of God with honest eyes and honest thought. You will see God shining there. Why examine the laws of lives and the secrets of the

²¹¹ NB43, November 5, 1943, p. 456

universe and not confess previously that this universe and these laws are the undeniable proof of a God?

“But is all your progress capable of increasing the meadow which gives you its greenness by a single blade of grass? But is your science able to generate a new animal by departing from those laws which God has introduced since creating them as males and females? But, in spite of your experiments, which fill you with vainglory, are you able, I won’t say to create life, but to halt death?

“No. You are able to fertilize the eggs of the simplest among the millions of existing animals. You are able to make the beating of an embryonic heart continue. But you are unable to maintain the beating of a dying heart when God tells the dust to become dust again and the soul to return to Him. Without seed you are unable to make a single blade of grass sprout. With all your electricity, you are unable to give energy back to a dead body. You are able only to generate diseases and death, massacres and misfortunes.

“And as you are unable to do this, increasing only confusion on earth and in consciences, so you no longer manage to create in your interior *that Faith without which error is inevitable*. You go astray. You make yourselves religions. *But you do not have Religion*.

“You love a child, a husband, or a relative more than God. You lose love and respect for God if He takes them away from you. You love -- indeed, you venerate as a god -- some unfortunate man who proclaims himself to be a ‘god’ and is three times as much mud as you are, and before him you bend not only your backs -- that would not be very bad -- but your criterion, your conscience, above all. You sin to please him. If I still have mercy on those who sin out of disordered love for a relative, *I do not forgive those who sell themselves and their consciences to a power opposed to God*.

“It is necessary to be sons and daughters of God even against tyrants and accept everything except burning one’s soul before the idols of mud. When man loses holy worship of the true God and falls into idolatry of his peers and inferiors, corrupting in himself the admirable jewel which makes him similar to God, everything in him gets corrupted. And it is not exaggerated to say that the time you are in is a sample of such corruption. It lacks no form of it.

“To my altars, O false Christians who have a Christian exterior but are not such in your interior, many come who are not as they should be. And this is bad for man, who ought to be able not to fornicate, and, if the flesh with its voice of blood spurs him, to choose a wife without waiting to become old, but while bringing an uncontaminated body to this wife. Out of justice, for he wants the same from her, and out of charity, for contaminations are not always without danger, but, rather, together with the body, which becomes degraded, and the soul, which is corrupted, there is illness, which so often makes you into lepers, and you communicate this leprosy to Your companion and your innocent children.

"It is twice as bad for the woman to present herself to God, at God's altar for an oath to a man, with the ugliest stain which can stain a woman. Lying to God, to the man, her companion, and to the World, she wrings out a blessing, a protection, and a respect of which she is not worthy. But the blessing upon her turns into punishment, for God is not deceived. On the basis of these sins of hers, she shall be judged a thief and an adulteress. A thief, because she defrauds her companion of his right and steals from him a trust of which she is not worthy, and from God a blessing of which she is even less worthy; she steals a mother and rights from those yet to be born, nor in her dead soul does a tremble pass at the thought of those suppressed before the dawn of life or those abandoned at life's fringes like stray pups. An adulteress, because 'she who looks at a man with desire already commits adultery,' and she has consummated adultery because she has been unable to master fleshly desire, but has sated herself with it in her depraved hunger.

"By living in idolatry you become prone to shed blood in individual or collective killings, as are wars, which are almost always -- and all of the present ones are -- nothing but thefts and deceits not justified by any motive. You are thieves of the lands and rights of others, and you are the killers of others' children.

"You are liars and swindlers on a small scale and on a large scale. There is no more honesty in life. Man's word is devoid of honor and you thus calmly commit acts of dishonesty.

"You are corrupt. In thought, in tastes, in works, in the senses. Corrupt right down to the bottom. More than bodies buried for ten times four days. You are corrupt even in what I had created incorruptible in you: in the spirit, which you have slain and which is entirely a nest of vermin swarming with filthy thoughts and filthy deeds.

"Corrupt and corrupters. Of your fellows, big and small. You no longer respect even childhood, before which you indifferently fornicate in word and deed, dirtying lily buds with your depravity. They will open already sullied and will emit deathly odors, more and more, because you increasingly corrupt them. Your art, even art -- the sign of your royalty over other animals, the sign of your nature as demigods who from the true God, your Creator, have received a spark of his creative Thought -- even art is corrupt and corrupting and provokes repugnance in those who, rarer than a solitary mountain pine, are still able to remember Heaven and remain intent on Heaven.

"You are unfaithful. Unfaithful to God, to your country, to your family, to your wife, to your children, to your relatives, and to your friends. A Judas who sell everything for a glittering of money and the smile of a female serpent, you don't know any longer even what the faithfulness is which makes the spirit secure in honoring God above all things and at any cost, which makes the heart

heroic in defending the flag, which makes love sincere towards those who love you and friendship constant towards those entrusting themselves to you.

“You are quarrelsome. And you turn every occasion into an instrument to give your beastly instinct a chance to sink its fangs into your brothers’ blood.

“You are liars, for you say you love God, country, and family, but you say it with your lips alone, as you are quick to betray everything and everyone if you hope to obtain earthly gain therefrom. And since, according to your blind souls, little can come to you directly from God, you make God a springboard to conquer men’s esteem by naming God, putting hypocrisy into practice so as to seem good and attain what you long for from men deceived by your appearance as lambs, O charlatan he-goats full of sin.

“You are oppressors, for, in not following my law of Charity, it is inevitable that you should fall into the opposite law, and you think the illicit is licit for you provided it serves your purposes: you thus hate your fellows and oppress them, and since those equal to you in hardness of heart are able to make head against you, you oppress the ones who do not react because they are ‘the children of God’ in the true sense of the word.

“Contaminators of everything you touch. Your look, even your look, is a contamination, men full of obscene appetites. It is a word aimed at seducing, like the hiss of your real father: the infernal Serpent. It is thought which gives birth to works which are poison for minds and eyes, whereby the stimulus of your venom descends to disturb sentiments and rouse the senses.

“You are inverted in the senses. Never as now, this characteristic, the result of centuries of vice, which makes you inferior to the beasts, is widespread. Nor do you combat it, but, rather, since you are depraved, you take pleasure in it and exploit it for your purses. You cause the demons disgust. And I won’t say anything more out of respect for my spokesman.

“This produces in you the idolatry of the senses and power which You now practice with such obstinacy. And you abandon yourselves to it considering that for this and its fruits you will be punished by the One who sees.

“I am not a god of flesh or clay who is not always present or who lacks eyes to see. I am He who is,²¹² and who is everywhere, and from the height of my throne I observe and note the works of men. I am He who has spoken to give you the way to guide yourselves. I have said what I have said, and over the course of millennia it does not change. I am the Eternal, the Only God. I am the Lord, your God, of whom there is no copy. I am One in my Most Holy Trinity.

“Accursed are those who are not concerned about Me and repudiate Me to follow the Beast.”

²¹² ET: Exodus 3:14.

The Chance To Return To Christ²¹³

Jesus says:

“I know that you are surrounded by snares and weak. I know and take this into account when judging you. I would no longer be just if I did not take into account your weakness and the works of the Evil One.

“What makes Me become severe is that you often do not fall out of weakness or a demoniacal snare. *You fall knowingly. You deliberately throw yourselves into the abyss, saying, ‘And what do I care about God?’ It is then that I call you ‘Judas.’ You sell Me with my precious Blood. You hand Me over to Satan by giving him your souls, which are mine, for I bought them back by my death. You betray Me by calling yourselves Christians while performing works as anti-Christians.*

“Judas also consumed the Eucharist and with Me in his breast went to take the money of barter and with his hands contaminated by that money he embraced Me to point Me out to the enemy. Judas causes you disgust. *But in what way do you act differently, you that seek to exploit your position as Christians for your own purposes and do not serve the interests of Christ? You serve them so little that you leave Him to chase after the Seducer.*

“How much mercy I will have for those who fall with a will opposed to falling and who repent of their fall! One, two, ten, or a hundred nonmalicious falls do not mortally wound Love. They are mutual scratches which your tears heal and my love restores to health. You say to Me, ‘Mercy, Lord,’ and I say to you, ‘Come, poor child, to the Father.’

“You are always mine until love is dead in you. And it is for the wounded children that I gave my Blood. Be just, then, and merciful to yourselves, as I am. Strive to know Me and love Me so as not to deprive your souls of their right to eternal joy.

“Get back onto the way of Life. My commandments are that way. Seek to bear them in mind during your day. For if weakness then drags you into slight errors, I assure you that you should not be demoralized over it. Tomorrow you will do better than today, and the day after tomorrow, better than tomorrow. A plant grows slowly. Every day a new little root, every day a new leaf. But how beautiful it is when it has grown! Perfection is like this, children. It is conquered by degrees.

²¹³ NB43, November 6,²¹³ 1943, p. 460

“But what do you think -- that I will give a lesser reward to those who did not reach the maximum immediately? No, on the contrary. *Between those who were holy by my grace and those who wanted to be holy against their nature, I will gaze with eyes twice as loving at this hero of love. The reward in eternity is one alone: the vision of God. But the initial embrace of union between the combatants who are victorious over the flesh, the world, and the devil -- in whom throughout life the latter have agitated their serpentine essence, cut off a thousand times and rising again a thousand times -- shall be powerful, with a special ecstasy.*

“I tell you so. Believe Me, the Truth. How urgent is the need for that memory in you now! You die from not remembering to be Christians. Turn to the Christ. Wisdom says, ‘And those who turned to that sign were not healed by what they saw, but by You, the Savior of all.’

“That’s it, O children. You are not healed of your individual and public infirmities *because you are unable to see Me*. Practices do not count; reprisals create vaster evil; *acts of vengeance kill those committing them before those enduring them;*²¹⁴ the shelters fall without sheltering you. But if you came to Me, you would be saved. In regard to the life of this earth and that of the hereafter.

“I repeat²¹⁵ my wish. *Let many acts of adoration be offered to the Cross, which is the throne of power of Jesus, your Savior.* As the serpent raised up on the cross had the power to heal the Jews, so I, the One who is immortal, raised up on the Cross, will have the power to set to flight what frightens and torments you, for I am the Lord of life and death and can place life where death is already imminent and overcome death by calling back to life.

“No one, except Me, can do this. Satan can give you all powers, but not that of calling back vital movement. On the contrary; he teaches you to shatter lives with hatred for the Giver of life, who, to nourish you not only for bodily life, for which He has grain germinate and form ears, but for spiritual life, gives you the Bread which the angels adore because it is the Flesh of the Son of God. He gives it to you, not asking for anything in exchange except love and faith, and, indeed, like a holy Beggar asks you to receive Him into yourselves, for He makes being with you his joy.

“In you that Bread is transformed into Life and Grace; it is transformed into Salvation, Light, Joy, and Wisdom. *You become all when you are all with the Son of God. The Word of the Father speaks softly when He remains like a heart in your breast. And it is my Word that conserves for Eternal Life those who do not forswear their supernatural filiation.*

²¹⁴ At the foot of the page the writer adds, “Is this also referring to the bombing of the Vatican tonight?”

²¹⁵ Mentioned in the text of October 23.

“Blessed are those who not only love You -- O Thought of the Father whom Love makes the Word -- in the hours of joy, but who, even before there is joy, even under hurricane clouds, bless You, Light that experience no pause in shining. Blessed are those who are able to praise you with tears in their eyes and trust in their hearts and are certain of your mercy. In truth I tell you that whoever is able to hope in God with the most beautiful act of faith while the darkness is hanging overhead, bringing despair, shall know the Eternal Sun.

“There are few of these true believers, too few. In this night of impotence which has come out of hell, the infirm spirits fall like leaves disintegrated by water and torn away by the wind. Their weight drags them along, and, as an increase of the flesh, they have Satan, who keeps them blinded and tightly grasped to prevent them from making an effort at elevation which would suffice to save them. Fear and discouragement dull them, vice paralyzes them, and despair burns them. They are ruins trembling over vain shadows and do not know that they ought to tremble over themselves as slayers of their immortality.

“The churches are emptied; the altars lack worshippers; the mystical Bread is not sought after; the three virtues²¹⁶ are languishing or dead, and the cardinal virtues²¹⁷ as well.

“There is rage and a chaotic effort to seek salvation and disdain and derision for the children of the Light -- more than disdain, a desire to oppress them to put out that Light, which is hateful to them. But the more they deride and crush you -- O dear children who are my light brought to men -- the more this poor world will plunge into darkness. *The Crime*²¹⁸ and the crimes shall form a wall and barrier for the Light. And under that onerous shelter humanity shall perish in a desperate jail.

“Go ahead and reject the signs I send you from Heaven and laugh at the celestial warnings. Go ahead and believe everything is licit for you. When you least expect, I will have you experience a sign before which you shall plummet in terror, and the wrath you now unleash against the defenseless²¹⁹ will be flung back upon you.

“I am that sign. At my appearance, not on earth -- the time has not yet come -- but spiritually, to the children of wrath and to the father of extermination, your arms and his shall fall like dust when the wind dies down. *And if prayers had risen from the earth, instead of curses, that appearance of mine would already have occurred, and you would now be liberated from your ter-*

²¹⁶ Theological virtues of faith, hope, and charity.

²¹⁷ Prudence, justice, fortitude, and temperance.

²¹⁸ At the foot of the page the writer poses a question: "Perhaps another allusion to the bombing of the city of the 'son of the Light?'"

²¹⁹ At the foot of the page the writer adds, "And here?"

rors, unfortunates who tremble and are unable to come to the one who loves you.

“It is I who overcome. It is I who know. And it is a great affliction for Me to see you running here and there like frightened sheep, following the most foolish advice, obeying those who are wicked, in addition to being foolish. I would like to die a second time just to open the eyes of your souls and make you that holy, great, and glorious People that God had proposed to make when He created the first Parent. I would like to create you a second time just to be able not to see you so far removed from my Thought. But what is is.

“I am speaking to all. I will be heard by few. Comprehended by fewer still. Wisdom is no longer loved and is no longer comprehended. But to his faithful ones Wisdom shall always give strength and light on earth, salvation and joy beyond the earth. He shall give Himself, and the man who has served Him and merited shall be among the one hundred and forty-four thousand about whom John speaks,²²⁰ and the holy Jerusalem shall be his, in which there is the throne of the Wisdom who immolated Himself to bring Himself to men of good will.”

		Peace/Truce	End/Judgment
The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign		

Peace Only To Men Of Good Will²²¹

Jesus says:

“What peace? The acts of fornication by Jezabel and her numerous poisons still exist.”^{222 223}

“I said²²⁴ that to obtain true peace, and not a pause in the war, it was necessary to remove from your midst what was fornication with Satan. I have said so through the mouths of my saints, and I have had my Mother say so. For decades I have been repeating this, and for decades you have been insisting on that. I have told you so with urgent words in these recent times. But you have not changed. Rather, you have increasingly made fornication with Satan your way of life.

“You have preferred everything else to God. And this God whom you invoke in the hour of fear is such a distant, unknown Being for you that if you were consistent, you should not even invoke or blaspheme any longer, for you

²²⁰ ET: Apocalypse 7:4 & 14:1.

²²¹ NB43, November 9, 1943, p. 465

²²² Echoes of the parable may be found in the dictations of July 5 and July 24, for example.


²²³ ET: Valtorta pencilled in: “Kings, book 4, ch.9, v.22.” (That is according to the Vulgate’s numbering. Another system calls that book 2 Kings.)


²²⁴ ET: Also in the dictation of August 15, 1943 (ET:27).


have drifted so far away from Him. Indeed, even your invocations are blasphemy, for you call Him with lips sullied with filth, for you invoke Him while you are still one with Satan, for you dare to mix his Holy Name with your plans for crime.


“Peace has been promised to men of good will. Christ came to bring Peace. But if you send Christ away and your will is not good, how can you have peace? You have pauses. But they are nothing but intervals between one slaughter and another, to give time for your spirits, sold to Satan, to learn new doctrines of death from him and new instruments of destruction.

“Death to souls and death to the flesh. Destruction of spirits and destruction of things. Your growth in Satan is impressive. In a short while you will have reached the mature age in which he will no longer have anything to teach you, and then Hell will be able to give birth to its son -- the Antichrist -- for the times will be ripe and men will have deserved to know the horror preceding the end.”


The Forerunners


Antichrist's Reign


Peace/Truce


End/Judgment

The Church Of Rome At The End Of Time²²⁵

Jesus says:

“Let us together propel our gaze into the times which like a Placid dawn following a stormy night, will precede the Day of the Lord. You will no longer be present. But from the place of your rest you will exult over it, for you will see man’s combat nearing its end and sorrow fading to give the living time to fortify themselves for the last brief convulsion of the Earth, before hearing the command assembling it in all the living, past and present, from the time of Adam onwards.

“I have already told you.^{226 227} My Church shall have her day of hosanna before the final passion. Then the eternal triumph shall come.

“The Catholics -- and the whole world will then know the Roman Church, for the Gospel will resound from the poles to the equator, and from one side of the world to the other, like a band of love, the Word will go -- the Catholics, having emerged from a very fierce struggle, to which this one²²⁸ is only the prelude, sick of killing each other and of following brutal masters, will turn from the insatiable thirst for killing and insuperable violence towards the trium-

²²⁵ NB43, November 11,²²⁵ 1943, p. 473

²²⁶ In the dictation of October 29.

²²⁷ ET: In the October 29, 1943 dictation (ET:69).

²²⁸ World War II.

phant Cross rediscovered after their long blindness. Above the great din of massacres and abundant blood they will hear the loving and forgiving Voice and see the Light, whiter than a lily; descending from the Heavens to instruct them for the Heavens.

“Like a march of millions and millions of tribes, men will go with their spirits towards Christ and place their trust *in the only entity on Earth* in which there is no thirst for overbearance or desire for revenge.

“It will be Rome that speaks. But not the more or less great, and enduringly great, Rome which they may obtain from the leaders of peoples. It will be the Rome of Christ. The one that overcame the Caesars; it overcame them without weapons or struggles, with a single force: love; with a single weapon: the Cross; with a single oratory: prayer. It will be the Rome of the great Pontiffs which, in a world darkened by barbarian invasions and dazed by acts of destruction, was able to preserve civilization and expand it among the uncivilized. It will be the Rome that stood up to the arrogant and through the mouths of her holy Elders was able to side with the weak and set the sting of spiritual punishment even in those who were apparently refractory to all remorse,

“O different peoples, you cannot arrive at lasting agreement among yourselves. You all have the same aspirations and the same needs, and, as with scales, the weight of the good part of one is detrimental to another. You live so as always to get the better part, and you kill each other for this reason. It is a seesaw affair which gets worse and worse,

“Listen to the voice of the one who is not thirsty for domination and, in the name of his Most Holy King, wants to reign *only over spirits*. There will come the day when, disillusioned with men you will turn to Him who is already more spirit than man and conserves only that minimum of humanity needed to make you convinced of his presence. *There will come from his mouth, which I inspire, the words similar to the ones I would say to you -- I, the Prince of Peace. He will teach you the most precious pearl of mutual forgiveness and convince you that there is no weapon more beautiful than the ploughshare and the scythe which wounds the glebes to make them fertile and cuts the grass the [to] make them more lovely. He will teach you that the holiest labor is that which is performed to obtain bread, clothing, and a house for one's brothers and sisters and that only by loving one another as brothers and sisters is there no longer knowledge of the poison of hatred and of the tortures of wars.*

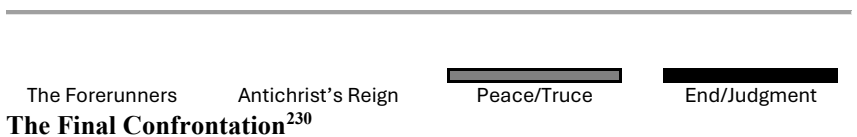
“Children, begin the march towards the Light of the Lord. Do not go further, groping in the blind darkness. My beloved ones at the head, overcoming every human fear, for I am with you, O those dearest to my Heart, the others drawn along by the example of my *saints -- begin this new Exodus towards the new Earth which I promise you and which will be your very same Earth, but changed by Christian love.*

“Separate yourselves from those who are idolaters of Satan, the world, and the flesh. Without disdain, separate yourselves from them. *Disdain is of no benefit. It ruins without benefiting.* But separate yourselves from them so as not to be infected by them. *Love them with the love of redeemers, placing your faith in Christ as a bastion between them and yourselves.* You are not strong enough to be able to live in their midst without danger. Too many centuries of increasingly marked spiritual decay have weakened you. Imitate the early Christians. *Be able to live in the world, but isolated from the world* by virtue of your love for God.

“*And never submit to regarding as a superman the wretched man who does not differ from the beasts because his best part -- the only thing that does not make him worse than a beast -- is entirely in instinct.* The Prophet says, ‘Leave aside, then, the man whose spirit is in his nostrils.’²²⁹ I want you to interpret the sentence in this sense. The animal deprived of breath is nothing but unclean remains. Once its nostrils are closed to this breath, it ceases to exist and becomes a carcass.

“*There are many men who are not superior to it, having no other life except the animal life which lasts as long as breath lasts in them. The spirit is dead, the spirit made for the Heavens.* It is thus right to say that there are men whose spirit is the breath of their nostrils and from whom it is best to remain at a distance spiritually so that the breath of Satan and of the bestiality emerging from them will not eat into your humanity and make it like theirs.

“Pray for them, O you blessed ones. That is charity. And that’s enough. Words do not enter into those closed to the Word. And do not think that the one fuming and breathing out his overbearance and his pride from his nostrils like a raging beast is sublime. *Only those whose spirits are alive and are thus children of God are sublime.* The others are poor things whose fictitious elevation is destined for a great collapse and whose memory does not survive except as the memory of scandal and horror.”



Isaiah 4:2-6

Jesus says:

²²⁹ ET: Isaiah 2:22.

²³⁰ NB43, November 12, 1943, p. 476

“When the time of my peaceful Kingdom comes -- and it shall come, for I have promised, and I do not fail to keep my promises -- the good on earth will all come to Me. It will be the period about which I have spoken to you,²³¹ the period when the spirit will have reached that evolution whereby you will spontaneously separate into two parts. Those living outside the spirit will lie in their darkness, waiting to be the militia for the Prince of Evil. Those living in the spirit will come into the retinue of the Holy Son of God, of the Seed of the Lord, loved and blessed by men in grace, who will then comprehend what is now comprehended by a few chosen ones and will know what my glory is like and what theirs is as children of God.

“I will assemble my saints, *for whoever loves Me and follows in obedience and fidelity is a saint*. I will assemble them from the four corners of the Earth. And because of their love I will forgive the iniquity of men. *The goodness of the saints will extinguish the sternness of Justice, and my love and that of the saints will cleanse the Earth with its fire*. The Earth reconciled with itself and with God will be like a great altar, and on this altar the Master will instruct men in the exact knowledge of Truth, so that the good will not waver when Satan, furious at seeing Christ adored by mankind, unbridles himself for the final battle.

“*A struggle of spirit against spirit. Over against my spiritual Kingdom and my instruction, Satan will set his Satanic war on spirits to corrupt as many of them as he can*, the weakest ones, and from his reserves, from his fortresses, where there are to be found those who have remained faithful to the Beast even after the defeat of the Beast and his minister, he will draw the agents of seduction to ruin God’s work for the last time, the ruin of which began at the foot of the tree of Good and Evil.²³²

“*The Satanic epoch will be three times fiercer than the antiChristian epoch. But it will be brief because for those living in that hour the whole triumphant Church amidst the lights of Heaven will pray, the Church in Purgatory amidst the purgative flames of love will pray, and the militant Church with the blood of the last martyrs will pray*.

“Those will be saved who, while Satan’s darkness, heat, storms, and lightning bolts upset the world, are able to remain under the shelter of the tabernacle from which every strength issues forth, for I am the Strength of the living and whoever feeds on Me with faith and love becomes one with my Strength. And there will be few of these saved ones, for after centuries and centuries of my love for man, man has not learned to love.

²³¹ ET: See for instance the dictations of August 21-22, 1943 (ET:44-45 &49).

²³² ET: Genesis 2:9 & chapter 3.

“But no one can accuse Me if he or she is lost.²³³ And what more could I do for you, O children of God who have preferred to go wandering off far from the Father’s house and sometimes sell your divine primogeniture to the Enemy of God? Do not say that I, in my Power, could keep Evil from laying snares for you and could make you good by my authority. You would then have been less meritorious than the blade of grass which the foot tramples on without feeling it, for the grass arises from the seed, obeying God’s decree. It arises and grows by itself. And it lacks even the slightest portion of the care by the Most High which you receive. The blade gets sun and dew from God and a lump of earth. You have the intellect to guide you, Grace to illuminate you, the Law to govern you, Me as your Master, and my Blood for salvation.

“I have given you everything, and you have given Me so little less and less! With the patience of God I have taken care of you, and you have always rebelled against Me. *The least blameworthy were always the indolent. You have, always been afraid to do too much for your God, who has done everything for you.*

“This is why punishments come to you. *They are a further call of love to convince you that a God exists and that the other gods that you serve with the faithfulness which you deny Me cannot give you anything but deceitful promises and certain evil.* From punishment to punishment -- increased in the measure in which you increase idolatry and fornication -- I arrive at the great punishments, and *this²³⁴ is one of them, whereby no longer a row of my vineyard, but the whole vineyard is opened and invaded, devastated and overturned by the one whom you serve and whom I allow to convince you of his deathly gifts.*

“For this reason I say to you, ‘Come to God. Call God with truth in your thought and heart, and God will appear on the bloodstained horizon, and Satan the torturer will flee, leaving you free.’

“But you do not call God. It is enough for you to think about making the common evil an individual good: to increase your wealth, appropriate higher and higher powers, enjoy and enjoy. You do not care about those suffering -- the best ones. Even less about God. Indeed, you rise up to challenge, daring to call Him, O blasphemers, to ratify your Satanic thoughts and acts. You challenge Him to show Himself, for you tell yourselves, ‘God does not exist. We are God.’ Satan is already heaping up infernal coals upon your accursed tongues and your souls that have been sold, and I set them afire with my fury.

“I curse you from this very moment, serpents in the guise of man, and if you hold the excommunications of my saints and the execrations of my good ones as a sparrow’s feather that does no harm if it falls upon someone -- for you possess a heart of granite -- my curse will penetrate to bring you torment be-

²³³ ET: On the same line, Valtorta pencilled in: “Ch.5:1-29” (“Isaiah” being understood).

²³⁴ ET: World War II.

cause I am the one who open valleys, split mountains, separate seas, and shake the earth with the will of my thought, and I can penetrate into the flint of your heart and make it crumble as if it were a fragile bubble of blown glass.

“Profaners, liars, wicked ones -- be accursed for all the evil you do, for all the souls that you cast into despair over God’s goodness, that you corrupt by your example, and that you steal from Me by ruining them in every way. But do not fear. As I will be just and merciful to the weak whom you have bent to evil with your strength, I will be equally just and inexorable with you. Beginning on this earth. *Your power, your stolen riches, distilled from the pain of thousands of men, will vanish from your hands like the smoke of straw which is burnt because it is too dirty to be kept. Nor will there be any effective defense for you that have overstepped all limits.*

“Let whoever has ears for understanding understand. *The hand stained with blood is not to be extended against the whiteness of the Holy One who speaks in the name of the Holy of Holies or against the Sanctuary which is more elect than the temple of Jerusalem, for its foundations were baptized, even before they were begun, by the blood of my heroes, and its stones have received as dew the purple lavacres of countless martyrs. In it²³⁵ is the bed where the flesh of my chosen Stone²³⁶ rests, waiting to rise again alongside his Master. And I swear to you that this place is much holier than the Temple of Solomon was, and what happened to all those who challenged the glory of the Lord shall happen to the profaners of this place, which is already Paradise -- understand the reason why.*”

The Forerunners

Antichrist’s Reign

Peace/Truce

End/Judgment

Constancy In Communicating The Word²³⁷

Jesus says:

“Let everything fall away and retain only God, Light, Grace, God’s Love. Let nothing that is earthly disturb you. *You are a daughter of God. I have granted to you the sight of this sublime condition to robe you in strength and serenity. The care of the Most High, like two loving arms, is leaning over you. The time will come when they join together to carry you beyond these horrible earthly things, to carry you into the Light now looking at you with love.*

²³⁵ ET: On a typewritten copy, Valtorta added the following footnote: “Rome. Because all of Rome is a Sanctuary since it was saturated with the early Christians’ blood and virtues.”

²³⁶ ET: Christ’s chosen Rock was Peter, a name derived from the Greek *Petros*, which means stone or rock

²³⁷ NB43, November 16,²³⁷ 1943, p. 486

“Always think, ‘Over me there is the Father of Jesus, who is also my Father. The Love that has joined the Father to the Son joins me to the Father, and it is the love of the Son that has given me the love of the Father. In me, then, I have the Triune God, for I have their love.’ You will feel yourself being lifted up by this thought, as by an eagle in flight, and you will penetrate into the Fire that wants to set you entirely aflame to make you worthy of It.

“And now, go forward, my little voice. The time is short, and the Word is abundant. And even greater is ignorance of the Word. Let us give these unfortunates as much as we can, so that they will not accuse us of their ruin. The world will perish just the same because it wants to perish. But Justice and the just ones of the Lord will be able to say; ‘Everything has been given to you to save you, even more than duty requires, for love is a spendthrift who never has enough of giving.’

“Don’t get demoralized by the conviction that the labor you perform is useless because the holy words fall upon immovable souls, closed like steel coffers. For the sake of that thrice-holy Face which Goodness has shown you²³⁸ and which for you is loving laughter, for the sake of that Face which men have forced to withdraw under the rise of an avalanche of crimes which, after having devastated the Earth, hurl themselves against the Heavens, continue to be a hand which serves the Word.

“They have hidden the Face of God. They deny Him. They do not believe in Him. They have set what is their ruin in his place. They are at the mercy of the occult forces rebelling against God’s sign and serve them, believe them, and obey them. Many voices emerge from deceitful founts, *and there is not one which states the truth or a reflection of truth*. The ones they listen to are the laughter of demons who mock man and turn into lying words to lead him farther and farther away.

“They want to know the future to guide themselves. *The future is here: in my Word. To avoid this present,²³⁹ which is worse than a nightmare and a condemnation, they would have had to study this Word, be able to read it, and guide themselves by its moral, historical, and supernatural teachings. To make the future less atrocious, it would still be necessary to study this Word, which teaches Good and Truth.*

“I repeat:²⁴⁰ leave the dead where they are. *If they are blessed, they can tell you only what the Word is already telling you, for the Lord’s saints speak the same language as the Lord. If they are damned, they can tell you only the words of their father, the master and king of falsehood.* And can you believe that the Liar will have an ounce of mercy and grant you a light which may be

²³⁸ In the text of November 15.

²³⁹ ET: World War II.

²⁴⁰ AS in the dictation of September 11; ET: Q43:338 (a passage not quoted in this book).

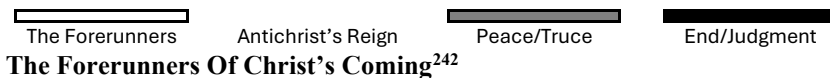
the light of salvation? *Why, of course not -- rather, pursuing his goal, he creates mirages for you within which there lies the precipice of the abyss.*

“And you are plunging into the abyss, as you no longer have the morning light -- God, your holy Father -- as your guide. As orbs guided by blind men, your spirits, led astray, roam from error to error, from ruin to ruin. You strike one another and cause each other one pain after pain and provoke new wounds and new calamities; you hate each other for the evil you do to one another, and you fill your hands with this hatred, which ferments in your hearts, and hurl it against God, holding Him responsible for your misfortune. And hatred, unable to reach Heaven, falls back upon you in fire and flames, famine, deaths, moments of desolation, and darkness. Nor will there be respite until you grasp, at your own expense, that violence is of no use, that blood hinders and does not nourish, and that hatred does not create, but destroys. Nor will there be respite until your hearts turn to God.

“I am the One who can give you peace, and not by the use of your homicidal weapons, but with my holy weapon: the Cross -- but by breaking your murderous weapons with my love.

“Do not instigate God’s judgment by overstepping all bounds in sin. Do not make the pause between the time of the Antichrist and the time of Christ too brief, for, if it is true that the last days will be shortened out of love for the chosen,²⁴¹ it is also true that it is necessary for you to have a pause of peace to fortify yourselves for the final Satanic combat.

“I will turn over the stone above Lucifer’s cavern after the defeat of the Beast and his servants; but do not give the Demon power to throw off that lock by your acclaiming Evil. Do not make your spirits, devoted to the flesh and Satan, levers to open the infernal prison and bring out the Accursed One for his final booty before the hearts of men are rebaptized in the Word of the Lord.”



The Forerunners Of Christ's Coming²⁴²

Jesus says:

“You make yourselves instruments of Satan by performing works of iniquity.

“Great or humble, you are no different in acting. You are overbearing and thieving. The great, with great overbearance and thievery. The small, with overbearance and thievery which are always greater than their condition would

²⁴¹ ET: Matthew 24:21-22; Mark 13:20.

²⁴² NB43, November 17, 1943, p. 488

lead one to believe could be possible, and they are still not content and long to be something more to oppress and rob more.

“There is no social group immune from sin. And those among you who are honest because of the moral law or holy out of love for God are your greatest victims, for overthrowers as you are of the Law of love, you repay with hatred whoever gives you love and goodness; you are wicked to the good and torturers of those who, in the name of their God, do not pay you back evil for evil.

“But even if it doesn’t seem so to you, don’t think you will remain unpunished. The throngs see the punishment of the great and that of the small escapes them, for the great who fall make a loud noise, and the small, on the other hand, go unobserved among the many cases in the world. But, beginning in this life, you do not remain unpunished. The rest will come later in the other life, where, for the hard-hearted there will be no mercy.

“But you, you that are now great -- what will you do when, in proportion to your wrongdoing, the wrath of God and of the oppressed rises up against you? Don’t you feel it hanging over you already and building up like a cloud laden with thunderbolts and a flood overflowing the dikes? And when the cloud opens and the wave overflows, where will you go -- you that have spread hatred, pain, and injustice along your path, mad and demoniacal sowers, usurpers of the bread of others and destroyers of the good of others?

“You didn’t think, did you, while you had time at your service, of making unjust wealth a refuge for yourselves before the hearts of men and of God? How much good you could have done, being able to live blessedly and pass blessedly into the Life of true glory! And how will you, without faith and love, be able to live when you are brought low as you have brought others low?

“You make yourselves the instruments of Satan. But I, more Powerful than Satan, when I judge it to be the time for a new flood, take you and use you against each other: nations against nations, and, on a small scale, relatives or friends against relatives or friends, to make man the punishment of man, *punishing man’s sins by way of man, his fellow*. Do you oppress? And I allow others to oppress you. Do you rob a country? And I permit others to rob your country. Isaiah rightly says, ‘The stick and rod of the wrath of God.’²⁴³ This is what you are with each other when you overstep the bounds.

“It would thus be good for those for whom struggle is propitious and victory a friend not to regard themselves as eternally favored by God and much less to consider themselves so perfect as to deserve all human success from God.

“No. *If those who triumph use their triumph badly, I will strike them and cast them down into the dust.* I am the King and the Lord and no one is greater than I. I am the Just One, and show no partiality. My gaze sees all in the same light. The stock from which you come is the same, as are your obligations

²⁴³ ET: Isaiah 10:5.

towards God, your Creator, and his thought is the same regarding all of you. The most civilized among you are for Me like the least civilized, like the savages ignorant of everything but their virgin forest. The examiner as I am of the truth of your thoughts and the innocence of your feelings, I so often look with love at the savages prostrating themselves in adoration of the form which for them is god, and for the sake of that form they become good, and I turn my gaze with disdain from the civilized who deny God, known to them, with blasphemous words, negating thought, and accursed works.

“When the hour of punishment is over, I say my ‘Enough’ and gather together the multitudes stricken and dispersed and give them peace and bread, for I am a Father -- do not forget this -- and *if you weren't drunk with blood or intoxicated with the desire to drink it, I would always give you peace and bread. The more numerous the just of God are -- overwhelmed in the common punishment not for their punishment, but for your redemption -- amidst the crowds of madmen, the more quickly and abundantly and securely I give bread and peace. For Good, in order to flourish, always needs the tears of saints and the holocausts of redeemers.*

“Oh, blessed are these christs whom you do not know, but whom my Heart gathers like gems into a coffer! Oh, blessed are these angels who, in the midst of the chorus of curses and obscenities in which you perish, are able to sing the *Gloria* and the *Sanctus* to their God! Purifying this earth of the miasmas which your sins create, they live burning like thuribles and offer God the most sacred fire: that of love. For their sake I will again work the miracle of forgiveness, the miracle of gathering together the remnants of my people and making them understand that only in God is there salvation. The others, those who do not want to be my people -- and remember that I do not measure with your measure -- will continue to follow the banner of their king.

“The world is not to die without Christ's army being gathered together under his command. Dispersed, stricken, knocked down, and rendered like sand which the wind scatters over the shores of the sea, you will hear the command and come to Me, for a time will come when I will be the King of these poor kingdoms without a crown and of these subjects without a king. I already see the spirits of that time turning to the call and coming to fight against all the obstacles sown by centuries of error, coming towards the Light and towards the Truth. I say ‘spirits’ because only the spiritually alive will be able to know the Voice which calls them.

“O you that are already spiritually alive, precursors of the Christ in his second coming, antithesis of the precursors of the Antichrist, who in his name carry out the work preparatory to desolation, prepare the ways for Me by your holocaust. The precursors of the son of Satan are robed in human dignity; *the precursors of the Son of God have the same crown as their King*, and their throne and teaching chair are the cross and pain.

“But, as always, and especially in the hour in which Pain had to overcome Sin, it is always pain that saves; it is always sacrifice that redeems. And now the world, to be redeemed, needs not so much to be covered with ears of grain as with heroic souls, victims of charity.”


The Forerunners Antichrist's Reign Peace/Truce End/Judgment
The Voice Of The Father²⁴⁴

Isaiah 11

Jesus says:

“I continue to speak to my forerunners, to those who by their holocaust prepare the ways of the Lord and evangelize in no other form but that of their holy lives.

“Exult, O my faithful servants who are not content with saving your souls, but offer yourselves so that the Light will win out over the Darkness and salvation will be given to many who are not now desirous of it. *When my hour comes, I will not be alone in reigning, you shall be with Me.* Beginning on this earth you shall be with Me during my Reign of love and peace. Haven't I promised you that you will be where I am and that you will have a place in my Kingdom? Like the dignitaries in a royal palace, your spirits shall be a crown for Me on earth, serving Me as luminous ministers, and they shall inherit that possession of the Earth which I have promised to the meek²⁴⁵ and which shall become possession of the Heavens when the Earth is no more.

“Long before that hour, you, O just ones, shall possess Heaven. It already stands open to receive you in the hour of your passing out of your current jail. *But it shall then be radiant, complete possession, known to all creatures, assumption into glory even of the flesh with which you have conquered Heaven by making it the main instrument of sacrifice out of faithfulness to your God.*

“Victors over Satan, who has corrupted the flesh, victors over the senses, which stir in you because of the inheritance of sin and through the instigation of Satan, *you shall possess the Universe together with your God and shall be mirrors of God, who shall appear in your glorified flesh in all his splendor.* You shall be similar to the Father, O holy children. Similar to Jesus, my Most Holy Son.²⁴⁶ Similar to Mary, our Queen.

²⁴⁴ NB43, November 18, 1943, p. 491

²⁴⁵ ET: Matthew 5:5.

²⁴⁶ On a typewritten copy the writer notes, “Here God the Father begins to speak, instead of the Son.”

“You have the intellectual likeness of the Father²⁴⁷ and the human likeness of the two most glorious Living Ones in Heaven, and, since to have the Intellect is like having the Word and the Love, and where One is, the other Two in the perfect Triad are, you, in having the likeness of the Father, will be the possessors of that Perfection which made man like Him and made Him choose man as his son.

“Before that hour you shall be the dignitaries of my Son; you shall see the miracle of love of an Earth immersed in peace and directed towards hearing God; you shall know what man’s life would have been like if he had not degraded himself by alliance with Satan.

“You shall not be defrauded by this hour, O loving followers of Love made flesh. *What you now hear sounding in yourselves, the word of my Son for his most beloved ones, shall be heard by you sounding in the four corners of the globe, and you shall see men rushing out of thirst for true Knowledge.* Men -- not brutes in the guise of man, not demons with a human face, not *the perpetual Judases who sell my Son and wound the threefold Love which is inseparably One by their commerce.*

“If now is the time when hosts of angels at God’s command fight against hosts of demons who want to subject the Earth, *it will then be the time when hosts of the just will plow the Earth to prepare it for the Word, reigning just once* on Earth before the disappearance of the world.

“Where the Master is, the disciples are, and you shall be there, for you have loved the Master more than yourselves; you shall be there, where He will impart his final lesson.

“And then, with Him, as an array of light going back up to the Heavens, you shall return to the dwelling to pray for those living in the final hour and await the Hour of Judgment, when you shall still be alongside my Son, no longer the Savior, but the Judge of the world,²⁴⁸ for the time of salvation will be over, and the number of the chosen, fulfilled.

“That hour shall be a triumph in your triumph, children. *And since I love you, I tell you that you must be without measure in the active will to conquer sanctity, for that hour shall be such for you that a thousand lives immolated for the sake of it and the treasures of the earth abandoned for that treasure would*

²⁴⁷ The writer, marking this text specifically, added the following note on half a sheet of paper, which she later appended to the notebook page: “Nothing more is needed, He is saying, than a human likeness, for through resemblance to God the Father, the likeness to the Son as God will also be had. Therefore, whoever is in the likeness of God, the Creator Spirit, has only to take on the physical likeness of the Incarnate God and of his Mother, who was the one created in the perfect image and likeness of God (explanation given by Our Lord for the dictation of November 18).”

²⁴⁸ ET: Matthew 25:31-46; Apocalypse 6:11.

not be sufficient to equal the glory of that hour and the blessedness of the eternal possession of God.”

The Forerunners

Antichrist's Reign

Peace/Truce

End/Judgment

Loss Of Freedom Under Satanic Dominion²⁴⁹

Jesus says:

“The believer identifies with his god, and the child, with his parent. It is not mistaken, then, to say regarding the forerunners of Satan what Isaiah says in the fourteenth chapter, verses twelve to fifteen.

“Haven't those whom I call the forerunners of the Evil One wanted to emulate their master and father in the attempt at proclaiming themselves to be gods and in oppressing the throngs? Haven't they spoken of God with a shameful condescension almost as if the supergods were them? Haven't they arrogated to them-selves the right to dominate what is most sacred, what even God respects in man?²⁵⁰ Not only have they taken the liberty of granting or withdrawing permission to live, but even permission to think.

“The thought which I have given to man and which is free -- for everything God has given you is free from any impositions whatsoever and would have been freer, since not even the flesh would have placed obstacles for that freedom, if the flesh had first remained free from the slavery of sin -- thought is oppressed by this supergod of slime and horror. They do not demand obedience to holy laws of love as I lovingly command you without forcing you to follow that command. They impose cruel obligations which enslave you worse than oxen with their necks oppressed by the yoke and with their noses offended by the constricting ring. They impose them on your whole being, and not one of your three forms -- physical, moral, and spiritual -- are exempt from this slavery.

“Yes, even the spiritual one. The octopuses of the Evil One holding sway penetrate and extend even towards your spirits and, as they please, will or do not will that the spirit should turn to God or his Law. Their acrimony as children of Satan explodes in fierce persecutions. But even when, casting aside the human mask concealing their heads as infernal snakes, they do not arrive at the major persecutions, it is the subtle forms of craftiness, the crumbling of the edifice of Faith, and the ways of life aimed at substituting paganism for religion that envelope your spirits to strangle them.

“And you do not always have the strength to remain faithful, for your spirits are not nourished with love and the Gospel. You bend before forms of

²⁴⁹ NB43, November 19, 1943, p. 493

²⁵⁰ Free will.

human slavery -- you that deem it unworthy of man to obey the commandments of God. And, because of a man or several men, you lose the most beautiful gift of God: 'free will.' You are marionettes moved by one or more men. In this life and beyond, you could have been free men in the kingdom of God, your Father.

"Draw away, separate yourselves from the laws of the Beast, and dissociate yourselves from him while you can. His destiny is already marked out. When God's scythe cuts away the parts of the Beast which are torturing the Earth and which constitute the precursors of the Unity of Evil which will rock the Earth, act so as to be very far from the ones plunging into the oven of the abyss as putrid members of this horrible manifestation.

"Babylon, which is now rising and will have its apogee in ruling, will be succeeded one day by a holy Jerusalem. Act so that on that day and on the unending Day the mark of the powerful in Babylon, of the lesser Lucifers, and of the forms of filiation and excrescence of Satan will not be upon you, but the holy, unmistakable, glorious sign of the Son of God."

▬▬▬▬▬▬				▬▬▬▬▬▬
The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce		End/Judgment

The Father's Words For Christians²⁵¹

Jesus says:²⁵²

"In the face of a God who incarnates part of Himself²⁵³ to make that part salvation for his blameworthy creatures, the Universe is overcome with amazement and prostrates itself in adoring silence before exploding into the canticle of the spheres and worlds, rejoicing over the Perfection that descends to bring Love to the planet covered with sin.

"The Victor, my holy Son, came to hound the forces of Evil, put them to flight, and bring the pact of the alliance and peace between God and man.

"He still passes among you and leaves no other footprint but that of his love, *a footprint that only the pure and honest in heart recognize and follow*, for Peace attracts the peaceful, Mercy the good, Justice the just, and Purity the pure. He still comes and takes you by the hand and says to you, 'Do not fear because I have come to help you.'

²⁵¹ NB43, November 24, 1943, p. 503

²⁵² But on a typewritten copy the writer notes, "The Most Holy Father is speaking. The whole dictation is given by God the Father."

²⁵³ The indivisible Trinity of God is reaffirmed below, as in the examples cited in note 187 [For the indivisible Divine Trinity, See July 1, August 19, October 11, October 25, November 5, November 24, and December 29; for the term "part of God" as applied to the soul, See October 1 and October 7.]

“In all your needs, in all your afflictions, in all your misfortunes, why are you mistrustful? *You have in your midst the One before whose wish the Father is unable to refuse, for my Son has surpassed all my wishes and I owe Him a just recompense.*

“If you reflected, O Christians, children of my Son, who has begotten you to Grace by his sacrifice as Man and as God, if you reflected about the fate He has pulled you out of, I don’t say you ought to worship and love Me throughout your lives, but love Me and worship Me for a hundred and even more lives, if it were granted to you to lead more lives again. Love Me, then, with a super-love and love my Word just as much, who came to give you Life.

“Even if you should be dead, you will live again if you believe in Him; even if you should be arid lands without vegetation, you will be covered with verdure and fresh waters, for wherever my holy Son passes and remains, there flow forth rivers of the Lord’s grace and the lily and the rose bloom, palm and olive trees grow, as do virtues in man’s heart, higher than the cedar.

“When you see a saint arise from the corrupt earth like a flower from a heap of putrid straw, when you see an athlete of Christ arise from a man who is nothing and a light shine where there was darkness, and a voice sound where before there was silence, and enlighten and instruct in the name of God, lift up your gaze and your soul to seek the power creating the prodigy: mine, which, as it drew man out of the slime, so from man can draw the saint, the bearer of God, the tabernacle of God, the holy ark on whom my Glory rests and from whom my Wisdom speaks to spirits.

“Do not be afraid to approach Us, who love you. *Do not divide our Unity by loving One and not the Others.* We love one another and are united by love. *Do the same.*

“The Son must not make you neglect the Father. He does not do so. He teaches you to love Me, and from his holy lips he had the perfect prayer to the Father in Heaven burst forth. The Son must not make you neglect the Holy Spirit. He does not do so. As on the threshold of his preaching He taught you to pray to Me, the Holy Father; so on the threshold of the Passion He taught you to love the Paraclete who would be the Illuminator of the Truth taught.

“Without the Father you would not have had the Son, and without the Son you could not have had the Spirit. Without the Spirit you could not comprehend the Word, and without comprehending the Word follow his precepts as just people and conquer the possession of the Father.

“Like ellipses of light, the causes and effects go from God -- the superior pole -- to you -- the inferior pole -- and from you go back up to God. You cannot put a fracture in the mystical parabola. The Unity is not to be broken. If it should be broken, with a deformed love, you can no longer rise back up to Perfection without danger, for by your disorder you disturb the trail of Charity which like a divine net draws along with it the spirits of those who have under-

stood what God is and love God, the perfect Spirit, only with a love from which humanity is excluded.

“Do not listen to false voices telling you a doctrine different from the one my Son has brought. And how can these criers of ‘new words’ speak words of Life *if Life is not in them, if they are falser than the images of the deceitful gods?* Don’t make them into gods: *it is an abomination to make oneself be believed to be such, and it is an abomination to believe it. One alone is God: He and the One I have sent, who became incarnate out of Love. The others are wicked ones sold to Satan and sell you to the accursed Serpent.*

“Look at my holy Son, at my Christ obedient as a servant -- He, my Eternal Equal -- out of love for the Father. He is the One who removed the bitterness from my breast and reunited to Me the children who had separated from Me. My spirit is in Him, for I am one with Him, who becomes the minister of the Father’s Thought. Compare Him to your deceitful ‘messiahs’ and see how gentle and perfect my Son is, the One Awaited by the peoples, the Savior of the world.

“In Him, filled with every virtue brought to perfection, Justice and Mercy reside, but since He is meek and holy, He does not impose, cry out, threaten, and oppress. The Firstborn of all of you, the One Consecrated to the Lord from all eternity, speaks with the voice of his love, teaches by example, and redeems by his sacrifice. He is like tepid water descending from the skies in April to cleanse and refresh flowers and sod and bring *life* to the places where storms have uprooted fronds. He is like *light* which descends to show *the way* and is so serene that you do not notice it except when you have lost it. He is like a *voice* calling to lead to *Truth*, and there is no harsh word on his lips for the wretchedness of man.

“He left the Father’s embrace to become an ambassador to you of my Law and immolated Himself to an obscure life and a tragic death so that a seal would be placed upon the pact of alliance between mankind and God which no force removes: his Blood, which remains as a splendid signature at the foot of the treaty of forgiveness.

“He used his indestructible power as God, not annulled in his new role as a man, not to reign, but to make you reign: over evil, over illnesses, and over death. He used his Wisdom not to crush you, but to elevate you. He made Himself ransom money, a road, and a bridge to have you overcome the obstacles which barred Heaven from you and acquire Heaven for you.

“And I had to make my hand weigh heavy upon Him, the Innocent One, because your past, present, and future sins were boundless, and the sacrifice offered to annul them had to be boundless. Can you measure this volume of sacrifice? No, you cannot. Only I, who am God, can know it. *I alone know the sufferings of my Divine Son.*

“Do not look at the material torture which lasted a few hours. Not only in that hour did the Word suffer. *For ages and ages the indescribable river of anguish of his pain has been mingled with his beatitude as God.* Pain over the offenses against his most beloved Father, pain over the contempt for the lights of the Paraclete, pain over the offenses against the Word futilely borne to the multitudes, pain over the future sins which would place their filthy feet upon the holiness of his most holy Self, pain over the uselessness of his sacrifice for a great part of those living.

“Do not look at the scourges, the thorns, and the nails with which the Flesh was tormented by the blind at that time. *Look at the spiritual torments you inflict upon my Holy One by your resistance to his entreaties.*

“And who is dearer and blinder than you? *Your eardrums and pupils are not broken, but your spirits are, and the sublime Law which my Son came to bring you, and still brings you, thus does not penetrate into you, or if it penetrates you, it at once departs, as if from a sieve with large holes in the bottom.*

“*Consequently, as a result of this spiritual deformity of yours, which you have created voluntarily, you have the atrocious wars in which you increasingly lose love and thus increasingly lose God, in addition to lives and possessions.*

“But you are not all lepers and possessed by Satan. Among you, as rare as pearls inside oysters, are those faithful to my Son and to Me. To them I say, ‘Remain faithful to Us, and I swear to you that I will be with you. Be the heralds of my Word and the witnesses to our Justice, Mercy, and Holiness. *In this life you shall have Us close to you, and in the other you shall be close to Us and shall see the works of the Divinity. When the One to whom I have submitted all judgment comes to divide the harvest from the darnel and to bless the lambs while cursing the asps and the rams, you shall be around Him, wheels of joyful light around the tremendous and royal Light of the incarnate Divinity. You shall be the new people of God, the eternal people over whom my blessed and most holy Son shall reign, and you shall announce his praises to the stars and the planets, for all that has been made was made to constitute a throne for the Victim, the Hero, and the Holy One upon whom there is no stain and upon whom the Father’s good pleasure rests, and stars and planets, in the hour of his triumph must serve as a carpet of gems for the King of the world passing by, followed by his entourage of saints to enter into the eternal Jerusalem, when this event of the creation has come to an end with the destruction of the Earth and the Judgment of the Peoples.*”

At the beginning of this dictation I wrote, “Jesus says.” But, as you see,²⁵⁴ it is the Most Holy Father who is speaking here, celebrating the Son.

²⁵⁴ Father Migliorini.

Haggai, Chapters 1 and 2

Jesus says:

“When man has separated himself from God and from the supernatural to focus on himself and on natural things, he has always diminished for himself the happiness of possessing even what is natural.

“The first thing to die is supernatural joy, that security and peace which make people strong in the vicissitudes of life, for man does not feel alone, even if he is in a desert, even if he survives in a country destroyed, since he feels the love of a Father over him and around him and the presence of immaterial forces which are, however, perceptible to his spiritual senses. Blessed are those who are in this joy! They possess eternal wealth.

“The second thing to perish is natural well-being. Do not look with an envious eye at those who, though living in disgrace before God, seem to you to have their plates full. You do not know what and how many other things are lacking in their house or how long those plates will remain full.

*“In any event, know that the more current well-being increases for those rebellious towards God, the more their hereafter increases in severity. The rich *Epulones* will not be in the bosom of Abraham, but, rather, the Lazaruses²⁵⁶ with hearts rich in holy works and obedience to the holy Will.*

“The rebellious and also those unmindful of God live endeavoring to increase their purses and granaries, houses and farms, positions and honors. O unfortunate dupes, who, the more they labor to be sated, are gnawed at all the more by the source of sin, as a rodent does in a sack of wheat which always diminishes, even if it is filled, for God’s punishment is upon their work!

“What do you have, you that have made the present, which dies, the aim of your lives and no longer have spiritual eyes to see God or spiritual heart-beats to think of God? Are your enterprises successful? Has your wealth increased? Has your happiness grown? No. Like the blaze of a barn, they went through a swift conflagration which seduced the (not spiritually) simple, but which lasted as long as the burning of straw and perished, leaving a little ash which the wind dispersed and rendered bitter to the palate and inimical to the

²⁵⁵ NB43, December 2, 1943, p. 526

²⁵⁶ ET: Luke 16:19-31.

eye. *Your apparent triumph turned into defeat and pain and overwhelmed you and those seduced by you.*

“Come back to God. I say so once again. *Above individual and even national interests, there is a higher interest -- that of God. And it is that which should always take precedence. If that were so, you would not fall into the errors and crimes, whether individual or national, into which you fall, for God’s interest is not made of wicked, but holy things. And where there is holiness, there is no error or crime.*

“In acting as you do, not only do you spur God to punish you in your fields and in your herds by giving you famine and drought, but you forestall the showering down from the Heavens of a dew which is much more life-giving than the dew of the night which covers the stems of the meadows with pearls and makes harvests and hay grow. *It is the dew of grace in hearts which you keep from being given to you. It is Christ who cannot act in you.*

“It is useless to say, ‘May the heavens rain the Just One down upon the earth.’²⁵⁷ He came down once, but you have remained -- and have increasingly become -- sterile lands and arid flint. You are enclosed in your spirits, wrapped in flesh and blood, killed by flesh and blood, and the Savior cannot enter to save you.

“And yet I will come. I will come tirelessly and to each individual to try the doors to hearts, and wherever I find someone to open to Me, I will go in to make you a dwelling of peace. I will come, for I am still the One Desired by the just of the Earth and by the saints for the Earth; I will come to take up my Kingdom for my second coming and for my final triumph.

“I will attract the world of the spiritually alive to Myself, and races and nations shall converge upon Me to see my glory, which is crowned with a cross. Peace shall flow, for I am the Lord of peace. It shall flow like a river of milk over the world to make it virginal with whiteness after so much blood, which cries out its pain to God on all continents at having been drawn from its veins by the hand of brothers.

“With my blood I washed away from this Earth the blood from Abel²⁵⁸ to the day of my death. But, afterwards, the crime of human hatred, which is the fruit of Satan, has again rendered the earth unclean, and there is no sod on your planet which has not known the taste of blood. *From these pieces of turf soaked with human blood there rises a stench which makes you increasingly wild. There is nothing but my power that can purify what surrounds you and what is within you. And when the times comes, I will come to cleanse you and the Earth of human hatred so that it will be presentable to God, with those living on it.*

²⁵⁷ ET: Isaiah 45:8.

²⁵⁸ ET: Genesis 4:8-10.

“The final battle will involve exclusively Satanic hatred, and Satan and his children will then be the only ones who hate. You all hate now. Even the saints among you more or less hate their enemies and their neighbors. And that facilitates the works of Satan and obstructs the works of God in individuals and nations.

“Have no impulse of animosity or contempt -- you that are dearest to Me, at least you. I died for everyone -- remember this. Italians, French, English, Spanish, Germans, or Romanians -- they are all equally tinged with my Blood. I have bonded all of you to the base of the Divine Vine with my Blood. Why hate each other, then? Neither racial divisions nor divisions in worship justify your animosity.

“I alone am the judge. Those who rage against their fellows in the name of Faith or Country are contrary to Charity and thus to God. I will not curse those sent to fight because I have taught obedience to authority. But my anathema has already been pronounced, and shall fill the firmament with thunder on the day of Judgment, regarding those who, under a deceitful cloak of patriotism and defense of the Faith, arrogate to themselves the right to despoil and kill in order to serve themselves.

“Do not wave a banner in which you do not believe. Do not pronounce a defense of what you scorn in your hearts. Do not say, ‘I am the defender of God and Country, of the cause of God and Country.’ You are lying. It is you that are the first to make an attempt on the Former and the latter and that harm, not God, who is above your attempts, but your Country. Begin to defend God in yourselves and Country in yourselves, and do not exchange Faith and Country for a plate of lentils²⁵⁹ or thirty accursed coins.²⁶⁰

“Destroyers and liars. Adulterers of Faith and Country. Deriders of your doctrine and your minds, for you say one thing and do another, for you know that what you do is evil and do it all the same, for you espouse an idea or Faith and then betray it for a base love, for you lie to yourselves and others, for you destroy what others have cultivated to give to you as a heritage.

“O cruel ones, who destroy even God’s work and slay the temple of your bodies, in which there is a dead soul, and the temple of God, for in the churches there are no longer, except too rarely, faithful and ministers who are ‘alive!’

“Of what use are your rites performed with a dead soul? Don’t You remember that living, perfect, and prime hosts²⁶¹ should be offered to God? And do you offer the leftovers, the crippled, and the dead? Dead, for you kill what you touch with a dead soul; crippled, for you render deformed what you give

²⁵⁹ ET: Genesis 25:29-34.

²⁶⁰ ET: Matthew 27:3-9.

²⁶¹ ET: Leviticus, chapters 1-7, passim; Numbers 15:1-31; Malachi 1:11.

God with a sick soul; left overs, for you reserve for Him what remains after you have fattened yourselves for your own pleasure.

“Come back to God. Come back to Christ. Priests, come back so as to become ‘priests.’ You need his consecration, this oil dripping from the Eternal Priest. Too many of you are reduced to being lamps without oil, and the faithful are lost because they have no light in the darkness. Take the Light to them. I am the Light of the world.²⁶² But you cannot take Me if you don’t have Me in yourselves.

“And do not be insolent to my spokeswoman if she tells you this. Bless her, instead, for she brings you to know the truth and gives you the chance to examine yourselves amidst the wounds of the soul and to remove so much dust which is sullying your soul. If the truth is bitter and displeases you, consider that it is your fault if it is spoken to you. This truth should not have been deserved. It would have been better that way. But since you have deserved it, don’t seethe against my spokeswoman, who is telling it to you with tears. For if I chose her to do this, it is because I love her and see in her spirit a dwelling place where I am always received with the respect of a subject towards a King and with the simplicity of a child towards a father.

“I said this: ‘Whoever loves Me does the same works I do.’²⁶³ For I live in those who love Me, victims who annul themselves in love to the point of dying from it, and I work the wonders of my power in them.”

Immediately afterwards to me.

Jesus says:

“I have taken you like a little child and placed you in their midst, for it is to children that God prefers to speak. Children in years or children in spirit, for there are simplicity and purity in them to receive the revelations of God.

“But if one day you wished to become ‘great’ and equal to them, I would cease to hold your hand and instruct you. Adults have no need to be led, unless they are blind, or instructed, for they ‘know’ and take pride in this.

“What do they know? The Beloved One, whom I love and who loves you as you, his little sister, love him, says that if all the wonders worked by Christ were to be written, the earth would not suffice to contain the volumes. If the hyperbole is marked, it is no less true that if the wonders I have been performing since I came into the world until now and shall perform from now until the end of the world were to be written, the volumes would be as numerous as the stars in the sky, and it is also true that what those who think they know everything know is a handful of sand, compared to all the sand on the shore.

²⁶² ET: John 8:12.

²⁶³ ET: See John 14:12.

“The lights of God are inexhausted and inexhaustible, and not one is useless or imprecise. Those who ‘know’ are thus semi-illiterate, for whom I cannot be the Teacher, for in their foolish pride they think they don’t need a teacher and take the liberty of criticizing the work of God, who takes a child to instruct the learned.

“If they bother you with their pharisaic criticisms and reproaches, answer with my reply: ‘Don’t you know that I must take care of my Father’s business?’ And don’t be discouraged.

“You were in my arms before. Now the Father and the Mother are also holding you. You are safer than a child on his mother’s lap and a little bird under his mother’s wing. But remain ‘little.’ *You shall always have our milk for nourishment.*

“And the blind who are of good will, by placing their hand in your little hand, which does not humiliate, for the help of a child never debases, can receive guidance on the way of Life.

“Go in peace. Rest. I bless you.”

I wrote this first passage between 1 and 2 a.m. I then lay down flat to rest. But after a few minutes Jesus resumed speaking. I confess to you²⁶⁴ that I hesitated to come out from under the blankets now that I was starting to get warm. But the insistence was such that I decided to and, getting chilled again, wrote down the second dictation, entirely for me.

It is now 10 a.m., and, on opening the newspaper, I see the decree on the Jews. Don’t you think it’s related to the sixth and seventh pages of the dictation on the 2nd? (I marked the passage which strikes me as a divine response to this human decree with a red sign.)²⁶⁵

You must have observed that I was happy yesterday. Mary’s voice was singing in my heart and filling me with blessedness. I would have liked to mention this joy of mine to you at once. But I could not. I think, though, that on looking at me you must have grasped that I was immersed in a new rejoicing.

The Lord is really too good to me!

Mary says:

“You must not get too demoralized on thinking about the time you had little love for me. You are not the only one. But I am the Mother, and I understand and forgive. They are the gaps in those who are still imperfect. I do not love less because I am loved little. It is enough for me that you should at least

²⁶⁴ She is addressing Father Migliorini

²⁶⁵ In the handwritten notebook we have found no “red sign,” which the writer may thus have introduced into one of the typewritten copies. The “sixth and seventh pages,” on the other hand, directly correspond to the handwritten pages 1098 and 1099.

love my Son, and you loved Him very much when you still loved me only a little.

“I will have you observe an event in my life as the Mother of God which escapes many and is a certain indication of the future relations between those redeemed by my Jesus and myself.

“When the shepherds came to the grotto, they had looks and expressions of love only for my Child. Joseph and I were secondary figures for them. At the foot of the poor litter where He would sleep, when He wasn't sleeping on my lap, they laid their gifts and acts of tenderness. Nor was I pained at not being praised as, so to speak, the plant that had given the world the Flower of Heaven. It was enough for me that they should love my Child and love Him very much. There would be so many who would hate Him later!

“Among those present at the always new rite of a presentation at the Temple, no one had a thought for me. They looked at my Treasure and praised Him for his superhuman beauty. But they did not praise his Mother, except in human terms. Only the saints knew me for what I was, and Elizabeth, Simeon, and Anna saw in me the Mother of the Savior, giving me the most sublime praise with their recognition. *The former were 'good;' the latter three, 'saints.'*

“The Holy Spirit acts in the hearts of the saints and gives them lights of supernatural knowledge. The Holy Spirit illuminates the hearts of the saints to make them see me. To see me in the light of God means to love me in truth. My Most Holy Son works on his own to attract you to his love. I love you and wait, praying for you.

“I am the Virgin who waits. From my tenderest years I waited for the One Awaited by the peoples. I am the Co-Redeemer awaiting the time to die at the foot of the Cross to give you Life. I am the Mother awaiting your *true* love, not the superficial worship limiting itself to many words. To pray does not mean to say many prayers. *It means to love. It means to make one's heart speak.*

“I am the Silent One. The new Eve, I teach you silence. *From speech Seduction entered Eve. From my silence Redemption entered the world. Learn the virtue of silence from me, for in external silence the heart speaks to God and God to the heart.* My silence was not the inert silence of a dead soul. It was, rather, a most active spiritual working.

“When my Child was in my arms, for Him, who was unable to speak because He was nothing more than a baby able only to whimper -- my Divine Son, the Voice of the Father, the Word of the Father, who had effaced Himself to the point of becoming a wailing infant with the voice of a little lamb -- for Him I spoke the offering to the Father. I said the first ‘Our Father’ in the cold grotto of Bethlehem, holding up in my arms my Lamb, who had come into the world to be slain and to give life to those slain in their souls. I was the first to say *Fiat voluntas tua*, while weeping. And do you know what it means for the Mother to say those words to the Eternal?

“Now, when I see that out of love for my Son a creature carries out the Divine Will, which is, above all, a loving will, I cancel his debt to me and increase my love for him. Jesus then brings that person to me. I leave it to Jesus to take care of having me be loved. *Where He is, the Spirit of God is also present. And where the Spirit is, there is Knowledge and Light.* It is thus inevitable that you should become instructed in love for me as well.

“When, afterwards, you arrive at loving me, then, in truth, I come. And my coming is always joy and salvation.”

 The Forerunners	 Antichrist's Reign	 Peace/Truce	 End/Judgment
--	---	--	---

Christ's Tie To Israel²⁶⁶

Zechariah 8:7, 12, 13, 16, 22

Jesus says:

“As the Savior of the peoples, I cannot fail to be the Savior of my people. Mine because of the old law, mine because of the new law.

“In human terms, I emerged from that race, and if it has derided, denied, betrayed, and killed Me, if it has done so with its soul weighed down, and enveloped by the magma of the sin which my Blood does not wash away; since this race is a branch not wanting to ingraft itself into the stock of the divine vine, it is no less true that I died for it, too, and in regard to it have the rights of a King and the love of a Creator.

“With harshness and ferocity the fathers of the fathers of those now living rejected the Eternal's gift and asked for my Blood to satisfy their hatred of Truth.²⁶⁷ With patience, intelligence, strength, and goodness I will attract them to Myself.

“*Man's good or evil works always serve a supernatural purpose, for human wickedness is gathered in by God and in contact with his hands turns into a tool for good.* God leaves no stone unturned in his far-sighted action to reach the goal, which is to reunite humans in a single core for the last day; as from a single core they spread over the earth, dividing like rivulets overflowing from the cup of a fountain.

“The work has already begin [*sic*], and the persecutors who harm and offend what is human *do not know they are creating the Great Day of the Lord with their iniquities, when I shall gather together my immense flock at the foot of the Cross like sheep gone astray and shall rebaptize with the name of 'lambs'*

²⁶⁶ NB43, December 6, 1943, p. 543

²⁶⁷ ET: Matthew 27:25.

the children of the flock which was mine who have grown wild, expelling those who, under my sign, are the vipers and wolves of human society.

“When you are able to recognize Me and weep with a contrite heart, I will turn the age-old condemnation of you, deicides, into forgiveness and blessing, for I cannot forget the good done by your ancient Patriarchs, who from the Kingdom pray for you in your wandering. Strip yourselves, then -- you as well, that were the first to receive the Law as a gift -- of what is displeasing to God.

“The same commands I give to those born to Me from the mystical labor of the Cross are also given by Me to you that have made the cross into a sacrilegious scaffold and a source of condemnation for yourselves.

“Tell the truth and serve the Truth. Come to It. Beat your breasts for those who have mocked it and hoped to kill it. They have killed themselves alone, for Truth is immortal in its divine nature. Do not wrap yourselves in its colors for a human purpose. But, once you have approached it, love it as a bride you have now known. It is the one that must beget eternal Life for you. But there can be no begetting if two are not made a single reality by pursuing not the pleasure of the senses, but holiness in purpose. Be honest and sincere with everyone and especially with God, whose eye drills into hearts and pierces right through them and sees them as -- or better than the manner in which -- the scientist and the bacteriologist see the diseases consuming you and the germs gnawing at you within your bodies.

“Apply love for truth in relationships with God and man. Do not betray. One of your race betrayed twenty centuries ago, instigated and followed by deceivers and the wicked. Remove that stain which has been crushing you for centuries, by your just and loyal way of acting.

“In order to be loved, one must make oneself loved. You have forgotten this many, too many times. Love peace. It is the sign of Christ whom your fathers killed, drawing down upon you the war which has no end and with the pauses of a truce explodes and reappears like an incurable disease in the Earth’s body and gives you no safety or rest. You must now learn to love this peace so as to be able to belong to Christ and thus end the eternal exodus of your race.

“Every clod of earth trembles under your feet and crushes you. As did your turf of old. But if I, the Lord of the world, extend my Hand and open my Mouth and say, ‘Enough! They are mine again,’ the Earth can persecute you no longer. The supernatural curtains of Heaven shall be over you for protection.

“Remember when I persecuted the powerful for your sake; I opened the sea;²⁶⁸ I made fountains flow forth in the aridity of the desert²⁶⁹ and made food rain down from the sky;²⁷⁰ when I sent my angels to open the way for you

²⁶⁸ ET: Exodus 14:21-31.

²⁶⁹ ET: Exodus 17:1-7.

²⁷⁰ ET: Exodus 16.

amidst your enemies so as to lead you into the Land I had promised to the first saints on Earth.²⁷¹ *I am always that powerful and merciful God. I am doubly such, now that I am not only the Creator Father, but the Savior Son, now that the Third Person has generated the miracle of the Incarnation of a God to make Him the expiatory Victim for all mankind.*

“I await you so as to be able to say ‘Peace’ to the Earth and say to Heaven, ‘Open yourself to receive the living. The time is fulfilled!’ Come. My heart is not different, now that I am in Heaven, from the heart I had on Golgotha when I prayed for your fathers and forgave Disma.”²⁷²

Jesus says to me:

“I have dictated this passage today,²⁷³ when you can write it, instead if tomorrow, when you will not be able to do so. *Introduce tomorrow’s date.*²⁷⁴ The collection of the dictations should be as regular as the movement of a pendulum. *One day the reason why I am ordering it to be done this way will be better understood.* Now rest on my Heart.”

 The Forerunners	 Antichrist’s Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment
--	---	-------------	--------------

Instructions For Christ’s Vicar, The Unity And Veracity Of All Prophecy²⁷⁵

Zechariah 11: 4, 7, 10, 13, 14, 15, 17

Jesus says:

“Never as in this moment must I repeat to the one who represents Me, ‘Feed my lambs.’²⁷⁶

“Many of them have become wild. But it is not entirely their fault, and for this reason they arouse pity in Me.

“I had entrusted them to the powerful so that they would take care of them. I had already given so much to the powerful so that they would not want even more and be good to those subject to them, who are not linked to the powerful except by God’s mandate. In reality, they are God’s flock, God’s children,

²⁷¹ ET: Exodus 23:20-23; 32:34; 33:2.

²⁷² ET: Luke 23:33-43. Dismah is the traditional name of the repentant thief.

²⁷³ Though written on December 5, the text has thus been published here as corresponding to December 6.

²⁷⁴ Indeed, the date, “December 6,” cited at the beginning of the dictation, is written at the margin of the notebook lines, and is thus seen to have been appended later.

²⁷⁵ NB43, December 9, 1943, p. 558

²⁷⁶ ET: John 21:15-17.

and they should be cared for with respect in consideration of the true King -- the Eternal -- whose people they are.

“They have instead used them like a herd without an owner. They have pushed them wherever they wanted to; they have nourished them with whatever food occurred to them, just to becloud their thinking and make them forget Good by corrupting them with doctrines which I curse; they have turned them into their slaves who are denied even freedom of thought, and they have shoved them like sheep to the slaughter for the sake of their criminal purposes regarding all Mankind. *All*. The part which is ‘Country’ to them and the part which is the ‘Country of others.’ They have enriched themselves by exploiting the sacrifice of their subjects, thieves of the goods of God and man, which are the Soul and Existence, assassins of the former and the latter.

“Well then, from the height of the Heavens, because of all the absinth being given as food to the masses and leading them to despair even of God, because of all the hunger the bodies and souls of my children are suffering from, and for the sake of those who in this ruin remain the lambs of God’s flock -- and no passion²⁷⁷ changes them into rebels against God, like their seducers and masters, children of Evil and forerunners of the Antichrist -- I am coming with my Word and my Love to feed the poor of my flock, and I repeat to you, who are my Vicar:

““Feed my sheep by giving them the tireless word and the blessings with which I have filled your innocent hand, which knows no blood except my Blood, which you elevate on the altar as a rite of propitiation, and no gesture except that which was my own in blessing those on whom you have mercy, as I do.

““I have placed two rods in your hand, and you are dear to Me because you used the rod of love. But love, which exercises power even on the Power of God, falls like pebbles hurled against rock when it is directed towards some who resemble men, but are demons with a heart of granite. Strike, then, with the other rod, and may the faithful know that you are not an accomplice to the sins of the great. One also becomes an accomplice when one does not dare to thunder against their foul deeds. Your Master is not fond of curses and thunderbolts. But there are moments when it is necessary to know how to use them *to convince not the powerful*, whose souls, possessed by Satan, are incapable of being convinced, *but the poor of the world that God and God’s just ones do not approve or support the methods and acts of overbearance of those who have overstepped all bounds and think they are gods, when they are just unclean beasts.*

““Speak, in the name of the Justice you represent. It is time to. *And may the masses know that my Doctrine has not changed and that there is one Law,*

²⁷⁷ ET: The reading on Valtorta’s manuscript is uncertain at this point: the word “passion” (Italian “passione”) could also be read as “pressure” (Italian “pressione”).

there is one God alone, and his first commandment is love,²⁷⁸ and He, as in the ages and ages preceding my coming, in which I confirmed the Law, gives the order not to steal, not to fornicate, not to kill, and not to take the belongings²⁷⁹ of others. Say so to the current thieves, who are not content with a purse, but steal souls from God and lands from peoples; say so to the fornicators, the great fornicators at present, whose fornication is not the bestial kind with a female, but the demoniacal kind with political power; say so to the killers at present, who arrogate to themselves the right to kill whole peoples after having killed in other peoples -- their own -- faith in God, honesty of any kind, and love for good; say so to the insatiable at present, who, as avid as jackals, assault wherever what they like is to be found and render all crimes licit for themselves provided they can take what is not theirs.

“To speak means “pain” and sometimes “death.” But remember Me. I am more precious than “joy” and “life,” for I give whoever is faithful to Me a joy and a life which have no end or limit. Remember Me, who was able to purify my House of filthiness and pursue a single goal straightforwardly: “the glory of my Father.” That earned Me hatred, revenge, and death, for those stricken by my fury found a corrupt individual who for thirty pieces of silver handed Me over to their power.

“We always have -- and among the most trusted -- an enemy; a corrupt man. But it doesn’t matter. The disciple is not greater than his Master,²⁸⁰ and if I, knowing that the lash of my words, more than the lash of cords²⁸¹ -- more a symbolic means than a real one -- was bringing Me death, spoke, speak yourself. And if I, out of love for men and love for you [Pius XII], endured an enemy and a corrupt man and the horror of a kiss of betrayal,²⁸² you, the first among my children at present, must not draw back in the face of what your Master suffered before you.

“For if, afterwards, in spite of every means, Justice should perish and both the dominators and the dominated, carried away increasingly by Satan, should, out of malefic mimicry, detach themselves more and more from God, I will then remove Light and Truth. And this shall occur when even in my dwelling -- the Church -- there are too many who, out of human self-interest and unworthy weakness, are among those dominated by the sowers of Evil in their different doctrines. You shall then know the shepherd who does not take care of the abandoned sheep, the idol shepherd Zechariah speaks about.

²⁷⁸ ET: Deuteronomy 6:4-5.

²⁷⁹ ET: Exodus 20:1-17; Deuteronomy 5:6-21.

²⁸⁰ ET: Matthew 10:24; Luke 6:40.

²⁸¹ ET: John 2:15.

²⁸² ET: Matthew 26:48-49; Mark 14:44-45; Luke 22:47-48.

“Remember John’s Apocalypse. Remember the dragon:²⁸³ the Evil One begetting the future Antichrist, who prepares the farmer’s [sic] kingdom not only by unsettling consciences, but by sweeping away a third of the stars in his coils and turning the stars into mire. When this demoniacal vintage takes place in Christ’s Court, among the leading figures in his Church, in the light reduced to a bare glimmer and preserved as the only lamp in the hearts of Christ’s faithful -- for the Light cannot die, I have promised,²⁸⁴ and the Church, even in periods of horror, will preserve just that amount needed to become radiance again after the trial -- the idol shepherd shall come, who shall be and shall remain where his masters will.

“Let whoever has ears to understand understand.²⁸⁵ For those alive at that time death will be a blessing.’”

Later

Jesus says:

“I think I have repeated a number of times²⁸⁶ that *one either believes or does not believe, that my time is not measured by your measure, that those who believe without demanding proofs will be blessed.*

“I now add that prophecy may go through periods of repetition or apparent negation which *later turn out, instead, to be only a trial sent by God for men’s faith.*

“All ancient and modern prophecies (I call those from Adam until my coming ‘ancient’ and those from my coming until the present moment ‘modern,’ for your twenty centuries are a fraction of an hour compared to my Eternity) present points in which they appear to be mistaken, for, in your view, they should have taken place in a given period and did not. But the eye of my servant sees with my Eye. You, on the other hand, see with yours. So that my servant speaks or repeats in my Name, *and what you believe has already occurred may be an event still to take place in the future.* This holds for all prophecies, including those of the greatest spirits.

“Even the perfect Prophecy -- mine -- may seem to be mistaken and contradicted by the facts to those looking with their human eyes. From the reading of the Gospels, wouldn’t it seem that the end of the world follows shortly after the destruction of Jerusalem? But how many centuries have elapsed since then? And yet the end of the world will be preceded by the signs I speak of,

²⁸³ ET: Apocalypse 12:1-4.

²⁸⁴ ET: John 8:12.

²⁸⁵ ET: Matthew 11:15; 13:9; 13:43; Mark 4:9; 4:23; 7:16; Luke 8:8; 14:35.

²⁸⁶ In many dictations. The topics referred to here are found, above all, in the dictations on September 11 and September 16.

which have already seemed to be close, on so many occasions, to your ignorance and fear. I alone know the moment they will begin, and I do not deem it necessary to say when. *Out of goodness, too, towards those living at that time.*

“You would certainly not want to think that I, the perfect Prophet, because I was the repository of the secrets of the Divinity, was mistaken! As you would not want to think that Peter, Paul, and, above all, John -- who remained fused to his Master even beyond the time of my stay among men -- were mistaken. And doesn't Peter say, *'The end of all things is near?'* (1 P 4:7) And Paul: *'... Those of us who remain alive until the Lord's coming,'*²⁸⁷ and, further, 'You well know that the one holding him back is the Lord, so that he will not be manifest before his time comes. *The mystery of iniquity is already at work.*' It would seem, then, that the Antichrist was at work from that time on, and God simply did not let him manifest himself fully so as to be burned to ashes by Me. And he exhorts the Christians *at that time* to remain firm in faith to withstand the iniquity at work. And, finally; doesn't my John -- the most enlightened one, he to whom the Heavens were made known with panoramas of events to come known only to God and to whom my Heart was opened with all the most secret secrets -- end the Book which is so sublime that it seems to have been written with a pen seized from an archangel with the words *'...The time is close... Behold, I am coming soon. The One who attests to these things says, "Yes, I am coming soon"?'*

“Now then, I say the same words to you as my saints said: 'Before the Lord one day²⁸⁸ is like a thousand years, and a thousand years, one day. It is not that the Lord is delaying, but He uses patience... There are things difficult to understand which the ignorant and unstable distort for their perdition.'

“Oh blessed are the believers and those content with no need for excessive proofs; blessed are those who rest on the word of the Lord, even if it seems obscure to them, and do not procure for themselves the torments of Thomas, who suffered for more days than the others because he did not believe in my Resurrection, and for additional days, later, through repenting of not having believed except after having observed!

“*Flee from foolish questions, genealogies, disputes, and battles, for they are useless and vain,*' as Paul says.²⁸⁹ Remember that John, a few lines later, says, *'...Even now there are already many antichrists; hence we can understand that it is the final hour...* I have not written to you as to those who do

²⁸⁷ Referring to this point and the beginning of the following quotation, the writer notes at the foot of the page: “Paul's First Letter to the Thessalonians, 4:14” (but verse 15 is involved) “and the Second Letter to the Thessalonians, 2:6-7.”

²⁸⁸ Referring to this, the writer notes at the foot of the page “St. Peter's Third Letter” (but it is the Second Letter), “3:8-9-16.”

²⁸⁹ Titus 3:9.

not know the truth, *but as to those who know it and know that no lie can come from the truth.*²⁹⁰ Finally, I remind you that whoever repeats God's words or speaks directly does not do so by human will, 'but inspired by the Holy Spirit,' as St. Peter says in his Second Letter.²⁹¹

"On his own²⁹² account, my spokesman is a poor nothing who never feels so much like a nothing as when I place a point of Scripture before him and say; 'Interpret it.' He then resembles a little bird that has fallen into a net and is frightened. I, who scrutinize his heart, see it melt into wonder and trembling, like the heart of a student forced to respond to the examiner concerning what he does not know. And I like this not knowing of his, for it keeps him lowly and flexible, like a silken sail.

"As for the passages, *it is useless to scatter them as food for reptiles, who may make use of them as a harmful weapon and as a gag upon my little christs. I have already stated*²⁹³ *and repeat that a lot of prudence is needed, for you are living amid poisonous reptiles. Why do you want to satisfy foolish curiosity? I do not dictate what I dictate for your amusement or to bend to your unhealthy thirst for knowledge of the future* When you know, do you perhaps change? No. Do not be liars or naive. You do not change. *The upright spirits already have more than enough of what is said for all without lifting the deepest veils. The others... Oh, the others! When they do not make it an instrument to harm many, they make it an instrument to harm themselves, for they study -- do not receive, but study -- my new Word, exclusively with a human light and method.* And didn't I say that this method is a slayer?

"I said -- and if I do not get tired of repeating my Doctrine I do get tired of repeating my commands regarding the 'spokesman' -- *that only when he is no longer in the world will everything be known about his labor.* Don't be impatient to make general expositions. He isn't. He doesn't care about being known and admired because of both the effort and the mass of work. With tears of blood, he goes on letting you use the pages 'entirely his own,' for the good of many and out of love for Me. *He wants nothing else because I don't want anything, and in my 'spokesman' there is only one will: mine.*

"*In the dictations you have coffers with gems sufficient to make the world luminous. Why do you also want to extract the diamonds, which only in a few years can be handled without the forces of Evil appropriating them to destroy them? Don't you realize you are in the hands of the enemies of Christ?*

²⁹⁰ 1 Jn 2:18-21.

²⁹¹ 2 P 1:21.

²⁹² *Maria Valtorta.*





²⁹³ The orders on Valtorta's writings which are referred to here and further on are found in the dictations of August 15, August 23, and October 26.

“The one who writes is led. But the one who copies²⁹⁴ must be able to understand what should be made available to one alone, who, since he is, in turn, led by Me, can understand and bless. Conserve, then, all the work of my ‘spokesman’ until the time I indicate and give the world’s poor, according to their condition, what should be given. And pray so as not to let yourselves be carried away by humanity in your choice.

“For the events of the day, P.M. has already been able to observe the concomitance²⁹⁵ and can testify to it. Aside from this, I repeat, act as did the director of Benigna, who was in better times than these and was holding less explosive material in his hands, I would say, so as to remain in character with the present time, full of explosions which do not involve so much chemical powders as infernal substances.

“Do not repeat the questions because I will not answer. Do not seek to depart from the rule because I will not bless. Take your work and give it to my Spokesman. He will give you the points which should not be made available to the curious and the wicked. I will guide him by the hand in choosing.

“It is children who instinctively sense danger like little birds. And my ‘spokesman’ is no less a child than I was in my Mother’s womb. I love him for this reason.”

 The Forerunners	 Antichrist’s Reign	 Peace/Truce	 End/Judgment
--	---	--	--

Periods In The Life Of The Church, Authenticity Of God’s Word, Maria As A Fount, Prayers To The Word²⁹⁶

Zechariah, Chapters 12, 13, and 14

Jesus says:

“My Church has already known periods of obscurantism due to a number of different things. It should not be forgotten that, if the Church, taken as an

²⁹⁴ Father Migliorini, to whom the abbreviation “P.M.” also refers a few lines on.

²⁹⁵ See note 104, for example. [July 24, 1943: 104 On a typed copy the text continues with the following passage in parentheses, at the end of which the writer specifies, with a pencil annotation, that it is a Note by Father Migliorini: “The preceding dictation was hard to apply the day it was given, July 24, 1943. On the 26th the news became known that Mussolini had handed his resignation to the King, and what happened and threatened to happen on that same day of disapproval for the man who had fallen into decline not only amply justifies the Lord’s recommendations, but makes it credible that He was really the one who dictated what was written.”]

²⁹⁶ NB43, December 11, 1943, p. 564

entity, is a work as perfect as her Founder taken as a group of men, she presents the imperfections proper to what comes from men.

“When the Church -- and I am now referring to the gathering of her high dignitaries -- acted according to the dictates of my Law and my Gospel, she experienced radiant times of splendor. *But woe when, placing earthly interests before those of Heaven, she contaminated herself with human passions! Woe three times over when she worshipped the Beast John speaks of²⁹⁷ -- that is, political Power -- and made herself its slave.* The light then darkened, necessarily, into more or less obscure twilights either because of the deficiency proper to the Heads who rose to that throne by human arts or through their weakness in the face of human pressures.

“These are the times in which there are ‘idol shepherds,’ about whom I have already spoken²⁹⁸ -- the *consequence, at root, of the errors of all. For if Christians were as they should be, whether powerful or humble, abuses and intrusions would not take place, and the punishment of God, who withdraws his light from those who have rejected it, would not be provoked.*

“In past centuries, the antipopes and schisms came from those errors, and both the former and the latter divided consciences into two opposing camps, provoking incalculable ruins in souls. In future centuries those same errors will manage to provoke Error -- that is, the Abomination²⁹⁹ in God’s house, the sign preceding the end of the world.

“What will it consist of? When will it occur? It is not necessary for you to know this. *I tell you only that from a clergy cultivating rationalism excessively and serving political power excessively there can only come, fatally, a very dark period for the Church.*

“But do not fear. The prophecy of Zechariah is joined, like one ring to another, to John’s. After this period of painful travail in which, persecuted by the forces of hell, the Church, like the mystical Woman John speaks of,³⁰⁰ after having fled to save herself by taking refuge in the best and losing the unworthy members in the mystical (I say *mystical*) flight,³⁰¹ will give birth to the saints destined to lead her into the hour preceding the last times.

“Those who will have to gather the races around the Cross to prepare Christ’s assembly will have the hand of a father and a king. Nor will any race fail to respond to the appeal, with its best children.

²⁹⁷ ET: For instance Apocalypse, chapters 12, 13, & 20.

²⁹⁸ ET: In the December 9, 1943 message to Pope Pius XII (ET:98).

²⁹⁹ ET: Matthew 24:15; Mark 13:14; Daniel 9:27.

³⁰⁰ ET: Apocalypse, chapter 12.

³⁰¹ ET: The flight: Zechariah 14:5; Apocalypse ch.12, v.6 (& v.14?).

“I will then come, and over against all the snares and stratagems, attempts and crimes of Satan directed towards my earthly Jerusalem -- the militant Church -- I will set my power for her defense.

“I will pour *my spirit* upon all the redeemed of the earth.³⁰² And even those who now suffer, expiating the sins of their fathers, and who are unable to find salvation because they do not dare to turn to Me will encounter peace, for, beating their breasts, they will call down -- in a way quite different from that of their fathers -- upon themselves that Blood already shed, which drips inexhaustibly from the members their fathers pierced.³⁰³ Like a fountain I will stand in the midst of my flock, entirely reassembled, and will wash in Myself all the base actions of the past which repentance will already have begun to cancel out.

“Then, as the King of Justice and Wisdom, I will disperse the idols of the false doctrines; I will purge the Earth of the false prophets who have drawn you into so many errors. I will take the place of all the doctors, all the prophets, more or less holy or more or less wicked, for *the final teaching must be cleansed of imperfection, for it must prepare those who have no time for purgation and who are to be called quickly to the tremendous review for the Last Judgment.*

“*Christ the Redeemer*, whose goal is to redeem you and who leaves no stone unturned to do so and who is already beginning and accelerating his second teaching to counter the cultural, social, and spiritual heresies which have arisen everywhere with his voice of truth, *will speak with the signs of his Torment. Rivers of light and grace shall emerge from my Wounds, wounds which killed the Son of God, but heal the children of man.*

“*These living rubies of my wounds shall be a sword for the impenitent, the obstinate, and those sold to Satan and a caress for the ‘little ones’ who love Me as a loving father. This caress of Christ shall descend upon their weakness to fortify them, and my hand shall carry them towards the trial in which only those who love Me with a true love withstand.* A third. But this portion shall be worthy of possessing the City of Heaven, the Kingdom of God.

“Then I will come, *no longer as the Teacher, but as the King*, to take possession of my militant Church, now rendered One and Universal,³⁰⁴ as my Will made it.

“The centuries-long travail shall be over for her. The Enemy shall be defeated forever. The Earth shall be cleansed by the rivers of Grace descending one last time upon it to make it as it was in the beginning, when Sin had not corrupted the altar of this planet, destined to sing the praises of God with the

³⁰² ET: Joel 2:28-29 (Vulgate's numbering; according to other systems, 3:1-2).

³⁰³ ET: The fathers' blood-calling: Matthew 27:25. Their sons' looking upon the pierced One: Zechariah 12:10 (see John 19:34-37).

³⁰⁴ ET: “Universal” is the original meaning of the word “Catholic,” in accordance with its Greek roots.

other planets, which, because of man's sin, became the base for the scaffold of its Lord, made flesh to save the Earth. With all the seducers overcome, all the persecutors who, at an insistent pace, have disturbed the Church, my bride, She shall know tranquillity and glory.

"We will rise together for a final ascension, my saints and I to take possession of the City without contamination, where my throne is prepared and where everything shall be new and without pain. Immersed in my light, you shall reign with Me forever and ever.

"This is obtained for you by Him who, for your sakes, became incarnate in Mary's womb and was born in Bethlehem of Judah to die on Golgotha."

Jesus then says to me:

"Do not be disturbed, Maria. Say with Me, 'I thank you, O holy Father, for You have hidden these things from the powerful and have revealed them to me, who am little.'

"Let the thought of others muse as it pleases. You know that the source of your writings is God, that this comes from God. That's enough for you.

"Are you working for human glory? No. You are working for my glory. And so do not be busied or concerned about human quibbles and human praises. Do your share. The reward shall be yours. The others, if they are unable to do their share and do not take my gift into account, shall receive appropriate compensation.

"Be serene in your happiness, which is the most beautiful sign of the origin of these writings. *Your happiness comes from your transformation in Good.* Your angel looks at you contentedly, for he sees you are changed in Me. Assist the work of your Jesus however you can, as much as you can. Work continuously upon yourself. You must tend towards Perfection. *Suffer so as to be able to and suffer for your brothers and sisters who are so deaf to the voices of love.*

"If I have made you a reservoir of my word so that the thirsty may drink from it, you must breathe in the Word, at the cost of a continuous sacrifice. Sufferings of the flesh, sufferings of the heart, sufferings of the mind, and sufferings of the spirit -- everything must be of use to you for this purpose. I permit all because I want your power as a victim who conquers souls for Heaven by her suffering to grow more and more.

"I reassure you about the doubt which Satan is trying to inject into you, the only weapon he has left to disturb you, the doubt as to whether you are in error. Live securely in Jesus.

"Go in peace. Even if the world were to reject your gift, I would not take away from you the honey of my Word, and it would remain entirely in you as in a royal coffer of which you would be the absolute queen. Sleep with my blessing."

Jesus says:

“When the Creator made the Earth, He brought it out of nothingness by gathering together the gasses of the ether -- already created to become the firmament -- into a rotating mass that became solidified into a collection of meteors growing and growing around a central core.

“Even your Denial (I call the science seeking to provide explanations by negating God ‘denial’) admits centripetal force, which enables a body to rotate without losing part of itself, but, rather, while attracting all parts to its core. You have machines which, though grandiose, microscopically repeat the centripetal power created by God to make the worlds and oblige them to revolve around the sun, a fixed pivot; without rushing out of the heavenly paths assigned, to them, disturbing the order of creation and provoking cataclysms of incalculable destruction.

“The Earth, thus being formed in its race as a nebular projectile solidifying by traversing space, necessarily had to take from space radiation and elements proceeding from other sources which remained enclosed within it in the form of volcanic fire, sulfur, water, and different minerals, which emerge on the surface, bearing witness to their existence and to the mysteries of the Earth, a planet created out of nothing by God, my Father, which with all your science you are unable to explain with precise truth.

“How many good forces you still do not know, you that are masters in discovering and using wicked forces! You ask Evil for the latter, and he teaches them to you to make you his tortured ones and the torturers of your fellows in his name and for his service. But you do not ask for good forces from Good, who would paternally teach them to you, as He taught the first men -- though they were blameworthy and condemned by Him -- the means for their earthly existence and how to use them.

“There are beneficent fountains and salutary juices which you still do not know and which would be so useful for you to know. And not only this -- there are some which you know, but do not want to use, preferring others, real hellish drugs which ruin your bodies and souls.

“For this reason do they cease to exist -- those founts in whose drops there are dissolved salts taken from minerals enclosed in the depths of your planet and emerging from the strata and through veins in the ground up to the surface, whether icy cold or boiling hot, tasteless, colorless, and odorless, or with a taste, color, and odor perceptible to your senses? No. They continue to be created, like the blood in your bodies, within the Earth, by a process of continuous assimilation and transformation, as with the food which in your stomachs becomes blood nourishing tissues and marrow, organs and cells, which are then producers of blood. They go on trickling, just as sweat goes on emerging through the tissues. They obey. If that were to exist no longer, explosions in the

terrain would take place, and the Earth, like a boiler without outlets, would burst, causing your death.

“Maria, I want you to be like one of these founts.

“I nourish you by a process of assimilation to Myself which my goodness has willed. But, without being concerned about whether or not the spiritually sick come to you to imbibe what is trickling out of you, which is my Word, or being disturbed if those to whom it is particularly offered and who most ought to do not draw from it, because they do not believe it is healthful and holy, and those who happen to be brought into contact with it benefit from it, you must continue your mission as a fount which is filled and allows itself to be drawn from.

“I will always nourish the fount of my Word in you. *It is enough for you to give Me love, humility, will, and a spirit of sacrifice. But if you have love, you already have everything, for it is the generator of every virtue.* Those who love are humble towards the one loved, in I whom they see every perfection. Those who love are willing to content the one loved. Those who love do not feel repugnance at sacrifice, if that sacrifice may be useful to the one loved. This is also valid for human loves. This is, moreover, multiplied a hundredfold when love is superhuman.

“And you, that already know the fruit of humility and sacrifice, two powerful magnets attracting Me with all my supernatural gifts, increase your humility and sacrifice to the point of annihilation and delirium.

“Long live the victims who are delirious with divine love, who are carried off in it, *the victors over the world*, which they place beneath their feet, and the conquerors of God, of Christ, the Supreme Victim!”

*Prayer of the Virgin to the Word*³⁰⁵

“O Holy Word! Gift given to God’s beloved, a robe of fire which You encircle with splendors, Life who become the Life of those to whom You give Yourself, may You be loved more and more by them (as I loved You) in ardor and humility.

“Work in these children of yours, O Most Holy Word, for I took them as my own at the foot of the Cross to bring comfort to my agony as a Mother whose adored Son was slain, and lead them to Heaven along a way of shining truths and ardent works. Lead them onto my Heart, where You slept as an infant and rested when slain, where there are still drops of your Most Holy Blood and my tears, so that the rest of their humanity will vanish on contact with it, and

³⁰⁵ We include the two texts of the prayer according to the logical order of the draft, and not according to the order of the numbering (perhaps reversed by error) of the two pages. The same prayer was already in the dictation of December 7.

they, luminous in your Light, may enter with You into the City where everything is eternal perfection and You reign and will reign, my Holy Son.”

The Same Prayer, Said by the Faithful

“O Holy Word! Gift given to God’s beloved, a robe of fire which you encircle with splendors, Life who become the Life of those to whom You give Yourself, may You be loved more and more with ardor and humility.

“Work in these children of yours and of Mary, who took them as her own at the foot of the Cross to bring comfort to her Heart as a Mother whose adored Son was slain and to give glory to your Divine Heart, O Most Holy Word of my Lord God. Lead them to your Heart and to the Immaculate Heart of your Mother, where You slept as an infant and rested when slain, where there are still drops of your Blood and of her motherly tears, so that the rest of their humanity will vanish on contact with them, and they, luminous in your Light, may enter with You into the City where everything is eternal perfection and You reign and will reign, Holy Son of God, Incarnate Word of the Father.”

The Forerunners	Antichrist’s Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment

Obedience To God³⁰⁶

Numbers 23:12, 19, 21

Jesus³⁰⁷ says:

“The true servant of God, in the face of any pressure by human forces which would like to divert him from the wars of the Lord, responds, ‘Can I perhaps say or do anything but what the Lord has commanded me?’

“Obedience to God’s command -- whatever this command may be -- is the sign of the servant of God. The divine exigencies are limitless, and all of them are justified by a loving purpose. On one I will impose keeping silent; on another, speaking; on one, to isolate himself; on another, to become the leader of souls. To one I will give supernatural sight, and to another, a supernatural voice. Well then, let my servants act according to my will, and to Me they will be equal in merit.

“I do not compel in such a way that you cannot refuse Me obedience. No, not even those who are as soft in my hand as a tuft of flax ready to be spun

³⁰⁶ NB43, December 16, 1943, p. 582

³⁰⁷ At least from the beginning of the fifth paragraph, however, the words seem to have been uttered by the Eternal Father.

are compelled by Me to obey. But the more they are ‘mine,’ *the easier and dearer obedience is for them*, in such fashion that even at the price of their being in danger -- for the world hates those who are God’s -- and their suffering -- for the world makes its hatred sprout into suffering for my ‘saints’ -- they remain faithful to my command.

“Mouths cleansed by love and hearts made into mirrors of God by charity, which is their life, they do and repeat only what I suggest to them. Blessed followers of my Son, they copy their Master, whose obedience was infinite because it was divine and because He did not use his nature to choose the easy forms of obedience, but He tasted them all and made them his own, including the ones that are repugnant to man, a creature inferior to God, which God the Son also embraced to be an example for you.

“But I, who do not lie and do not change, swear to you that my blessing is upon them, for in their hearts there is not any idol at all, but a single altar is set up -- mine -- from which there thunders -- but for them it is a Father’s voice which does not terrorize, but, like a heavenly organ, ravishes their spirits in holy rejoicing -- my Will, as sacred to them as I Myself.

“I am with these servants of mine.³⁰⁸ And my presence is like the blare of victory of which the Book speaks, for it sets all the enemies of the spirit to flight and makes the spirit a secure conqueror of Heaven.

“After having glimpsed the Face of God, benign and smiling, during life, through the veils of distance and the Will, they shall know ‘the Star born of Jacob,’³⁰⁹ my Holy Son, the Just One in whose hand I have placed the kingly scepter, the sacred rod which on the Day of Judgment shall mark the blessed and accursed and which for my servants shall be as gentle as a caress.

“From now on follow the Eternal Dominator. He leads you on a safe way to the possession of the Kingdom of God, *provided, with obedience* -- regarding which the man the Book speaks of is an example for you -- *you do not want to do either good or evil on your own, but only what the Lord tells you.*”

The Forerunners

Antichrist’s Reign

Peace/Truce

End/Judgment

The Father’s Lesson On The Name Of His Son, Christ’s Warning And Words For His Vicar, A Vision Of Jesus And Mary, An Explanation Of The Wounds On Christ’s Hands³¹⁰

The Eternal Father says:

³⁰⁸ On the line the writer adds, “Chapter 24, verses 13-17.”

³⁰⁹ ET: Numbers 24:17.

³¹⁰ NB43, December 29, 1943, p. 613

“Write, for there is someone who so desires and thinks of this.

“Paul of Tarsus, at one time a supporter of the synedrium and a relentless persecutor of Christ’s disciples, having returned to the Light by way of a divine thunderbolt and become the tireless Apostle of my Son, in the Areopagus of Athens announced to the Athenians that unknown God to whom they had dedicated an altar.³¹¹

“Now as well, many living altars are deprived of their God and could write on their religious nudity *at least* these words: ‘To the Unknown God.’

“They do not write even this, inferior in their paganism to the Athenians of old, who, not satisfied with their images without true life and not beclouded by religious apathy, as you are, felt that above the deceitful Olympus of their gods, to whom they had lent their passions and their vices, there was a true and holy God, and they called upon Him to make Himself known through that altar dedicated to Him, upon which there was not yet a statue or a name, as they waited for Divine Revelation to affix them to it.

“But you know the true God, for I have been revealing Him to you for ages and ages, and, not satisfied with revealing Him to you, I sent you God Himself, not by a deceitful apparition or fleeting dwelling, but robed in human Flesh and living among you for a whole lifetime.

“I gave a name to that Perfection of God’s *Perfection -- remember, O men, that God is Charity, and the compendium and perfection of Charity is had in Christ, who became incarnate to give you Life --* who had descended to act in your midst. A holy name willed by Me, for in his Name there is the compendium of his Perfection and his sublime mission. A Name known to God alone in its true meaning. A Name before which the Divinity throbs with more lively ardor, Paradise shines with more beatific splendor with all its processions of angels and saints, the abyss trembles, and the forces of the Universe bend their powers, for they recognize the name of the King through whom all things have been made.³¹²

“In the thrice holy and powerful name of Jesus is the splendor and glory of the Triune God, for He is the Holy of Holies, in whom there is found, as in the Temple of God, the living, true, and perfect God as He is in Heaven, eternal and active, like a wheel which undergoes no welding and does not cease its movement in the ages and ages preceding man and the ages and ages following man. Hence the Book rightly states, ‘You, man, will not build the house for my

³¹¹ ET: Acts 17:22-33.

³¹² ET: John 1:3; Colossians 1:15-17.

Name, but your son, who will emerge from your entrails, will be the one who will build a house for my Name.³¹³

“The Son of Man, born of a woman of a holy lineage, consecrated to Me, by the will of the Holy Spirit conceived without the weight of carnality, but by an infusion of love alone, the One Born of Mary, who did not open the virginal womb at birth, as at his conception no one violated that womb consecrated to Me -- your son through the Mother, O Humanity, and my Son by his divine origin, *shall be the One who shall make Himself the House upon which the Glory of my Name is engraved.*

“For We are inseparable in our Trinity, and in Christ there are the Father and the Son and the Divine Spirit. The Son is nothing but the Word of the Father, who has taken on a form to be Redemption for you. But his annihilation does not break the union of the Three Persons, *for the Perfection of God knows no limitation or separation.*

“How could you contain God in such an infinite and holy temple as the Divinity requires? *Only God Himself could be a temple for God and bear his Name without this being an irony and offense. Only God could dwell in Himself and make the temples of man alive with Himself, upon which the name affixed by man is no longer fallacious because I have given you that Name.*

“*Only God, O Christians, could give you his Name as a sign of salvation upon all the races of the Earth, that Name which the angels will read on the brows of those who will not die eternally and preserve them, through that Name, from the scourges of the final hour, as it has already preserved from the second death the elect who are singing the holiness of my Son in the heavenly dwelling.*

“Woe to those who deny the Name and offend it by substituting the demoniacal sign of Satan for this Name, which is holy, *or who simply allow spiritual languor to forget it as if a corrosive substance were erasing it from their self, which has Life through that Name. Death, true Death, awaits the deniers of the name of my Son, to whom I have submitted all power and all judgment and in whose Name my Majesty bows at each miracle, as in the Universe every creature ought to bow in holy and loving worship.*

“Oh, children of my Son -- who carried his Name to be reddened with Divine Blood on the steep ascent of Calvary and to shine as the only light of the obscured world in the darkness of Good Friday,³¹⁴ so that it would be a warning pointing to Heaven, for which you have been made, and it has been shining for centuries to go on reminding you of Heaven, and never as now does it flash out to call you to Itself in this wrath created, incited, and willed by you, wherein

³¹³ The writer adds in pencil, “The Third Book of Kings, chapter 8, verse 19. [2 Paralipomenon (2 Chronicles) 6:9; 3 Kings (1 Kings) 8:19.]” (This is according to the Vulgate’s numbering; another system calls it 1 Kings.)

³¹⁴ ET: Matthew 27:45; Mark 15:33; Luke 23:44.

you are perishing amidst gurgles of blood and the laughter of demons -- O children of my Son, *graze [sic] once more the Holy Name of Jesus Christ, on the altar of your hearts without God, on the profaned temple of your minds, with your pain turning back to God, with your hope rising up again to God, with your faith being rebaptized by tears, and with your love rediscovering the way of Charity.* Free heart and mind from the images of a cult bringing you spiritual death. Place the true God in them and upon them. Love, sing, invoke, bless, and believe in the Name of my Son.

“In the Name of the Just, Holy, Strong One, the Dominator, the Victor. In the Name of Him before whom the Father does not resist and for whom the Spirit effuses his rivers of sanctifying grace. In the Name of the Merciful One, who loves you to the point of having wanted to endure earthly life and death and become Food to nourish your weakness and a Sacrament to remain in your midst beyond his return to Heaven and to bear God into you.

“I swear to you by my Holiness: there is not, was not, and shall not be a greater name than This One. I, Triune, am in It with my supreme manifestation of power and love.”

He further states:

“Introduce tomorrow’s date. Jesus Christ, the son of David, ought to have celebrated his Name on the day of the royal Prophet from whom Mary proceeds.”

Jesus says:

“And the word of the Lord is addressed to you in these terms, even if you do not want to hear it because it makes your heart tremble with both fear and compassion over the days in store for you and over your brothers and sisters who in the days of terrible wrath will not have Me in their hearts for their comfort and will see only the horror of Satan and will hear only the blasphemies of Satan and will know only the despair of Satan.

“I have introduced this gap as a warning to the inquisitive, showing and demonstrating that I am the Lord and Master, on whom limitations or theories are not to be imposed, who knows no limit, to show that I am the one who am speaking and not you, a creature, and I lead you wherever I want to: from the revelations and contemplations of eternal truths and heavenly visions to the considerations concerning this Satanic hour, in which every reflection of Heaven is annulled, and the fruits which this hour brings you.

“O my people, listen.

“I had chosen you for the highest destiny and had entrusted to you the gems of my Redemption and my Doctrine in the Church, flourishing on your soil like a palm tree and a cedar from which honey and wine flow and in which

all the living who want to receive shelter in the true ark of eternal salvation find shelter.

“Out of you there had come, as if from a sun, rays of a perfect civilization, for it was the Civilization of Christ, which is not robed in discoveries suitable for making life soft and fate cruel, but in holy laws aimed at elevating man, relieving his misery, and instructing his ignorance, for they are laws coming from the Divine Fount of Holiness, Charity, and Wisdom.

“I had given you a mission like mine as the Light in the world.

“You have denied Me. New Jerusalem, you have betrayed the Christ and raged against his saints and his prophets, and you are preparing to rage even more. You have put up with the cross and churches as art and as a means to obtain your neopagan goals. You have rejected the Food to sate your heart with mire.

“You have wanted to experience and sample all the mire, and with your corrupt taste, like that of an unclean animal, it now seems sweet to your palate. And lust, abuse of power, ferocity, avidity, deceit, corruption, and satanism are the dishes with which you cover your table. You draw punishment after punishment after punishment upon yourself, made by your own hands, and inflicted by you upon yourself, and you call upon the one who ruins you and do not call the one who would still forgive you.

“I have continued to use mercy after mercy towards you and have warned you not to turn this mercy of mine to your additional harm by using it for an unworthy purpose. And over and over again you have continued to make God’s gift a sin by using it for an illicit purpose.

“Just as the Prophet says, ‘The rod has blossomed; pride has sprouted.’³¹⁵ I had given you an olive shoot for you to cultivate so that it would become a leafy branch of justice and peace, informing you that the soil had to be cleared of error so that my holy shoot would not grow wild on contact with impurity and not bud into branches and fruits of greater guilt. But you have not listened to the Lord, who -- as Father and Master -- was giving you counsel, and *the crop has become poison, and pride has given birth to crime. And other crimes will follow, and still others.*

“I thus say to you that not one of you shall remain without tears. Those who possess and those who are naked shall weep. For those who possess shall lose and those who are naked shall no longer find anyone to dress them. Famine, the sword, and pestilence shall grasp your bodies with their ropes; and despair and terror, the blind souls.

“Yes, you shall be like the blind, walking in the darkness filled with ravines and debris, knowing that every step you take may lead you to betrayal and death; you shall walk on ground which seems to be shaken by a tremendous

³¹⁵ ET: Ezekiel 7:10.

earthquake. And the Earth really does tremble under your steps, for, although it is only a planet, it is more of a child of the Creator than you are, and it sees the irate face of God staring at this ground, as when He looked at the children deserving of the flood³¹⁶ and fire,³¹⁷ and it gets agitated in its depths with fear over its punishment.

“Material and intellectual values are thrown into disorder and stripped of their proper substance. Knowledge has become an obstacle and not a help; *even that holy knowledge of God has become a condemnation because, though knowing Him, you deny Him. Light and Word stick in your throats, unable to descend to enlighten and nourish the spirit, for the noose of your perverse passions keeps you from receiving them.*

“On seeing the collapse of the idols of mud which you had set up in place of the true God, you shall know you have worshipped uncleanness and shall no longer have faith. *No more faith in anything. In either the true or the false.*

“And to punish the deniers, those without faith, the haters of the Roman Christ shall come upon them, the wicked of the Earth, those ever closer to Satan, the demolishers of the Cross, not so much on the domes of temples *as inside the hearts that still bear in themselves a trace of my Sign.*

“*And you, the new Peter, watch and watch without deluding yourself.* It is true that to suffer for Christ is a dignity surpassed by no other. But I tell you, ‘Watch and pray.’

“In the hours of a great storm it is necessary not only to have a purple banner high on the mast, *but for the hand of Peter to be healthier and surer than ever at the helm. The Disorienter makes use of everything to cause confusion. And in the hours of a gale which assails on all sides to sink the holy values, hated by the perverted, in a shipwreck, it is enough for the hand to be removed for an instant, through an irreparable misfortune, from the wheel of the tiller in order for the waves to come athwart the mystical boat more forcefully.*

“*Watch over yourself so that you may watch over others. Peter, now more than ever it is necessary for you to feed these lambs of mine and these little sheep of mine. There is no one but you that remains as a holy Shepherd, and if you fall, many lambs will be led by imprudent sheep outside the pastures, and other shepherds with wicked doctrines will work their way even into my dominion to contaminate it with their human -- and to say human is indeed a merciful judgment -- pressures.*

“No, this is not the time to die for Christ. *This is the time to watch, defend, instruct, and act as a barrier against what seeks to enter to corrupt ever more broadly and deeply.*

³¹⁶ ET: Genesis 6:17.

³¹⁷ ET: Genesis 19:23-25.

“And believe Me, O Christ on earth, *believe Me, the sore is already gnawing deeply and obscuring minds and hearts and, as the misfortune of misfortunes, extinguishing the lanterns which had been placed on the mountaintops so that they would illuminate the way for the pilgrims seeking Heaven.* Many are already extinguished; many are smoking; many languish, and others are preparing to languish. If the faithful are icy, the pastors are cold, and *the death of the spirit comes by frostbite.* An imperceptible death bringing on a sleep without the light of resurrection.

“Consider this, O Christ on earth, born to such a destiny. And *without growing weary, insist, preach, exhort, reproach, and evangelize.* There are too many temples in which the Gospel has lost value and too many hearts that hear an untrue sound in the Gospel which separates them from it.

“Like the first Peter, make up for the deficiencies of ministers and cause the throngs to hear again, through your lips, the sweet, holy, and salutary doctrine of Christ, and cause those not yet slain to be saved and come back to Me, and peace to return to this earth, on which there is not a clump of sod which does not know the dew of the martyrs.”

After having written this passage, which my good Jesus dictated to me without delay after your visit, I was thinking again of the conversation I had with you³¹⁸ regarding that person who felt “nothing good could come out of Nazareth.”

The Master joined in, “Are you perhaps involved and concerned about it?”

I replied, “No, Jesus. Not at all. I was just thinking.”

“Don’t even think about it. *Let the dead bury themselves.* Busy yourself with my cradle. I will come with it to give you so many Eucharistic kisses. *This is what counts: my love, and not the lovelessness of creatures.*”

And³¹⁹ it seemed to me that Jesus was placing his hands on my shoulders (standing with his arms behind my back). I distinctly felt Jesus’ two long, strong hands, which were embracing me and shaking me a little, drawing me to Himself in a hug of love, and I saw his sweet, majestic smile.

Then, last night, before drowsiness set in, when I was already feeling it come upon me, I had a vision of the Virgin and Jesus, but an adult Jesus, as He was at his death. Still in his white clothing. Both of them were dressed in white. But *Our Lady’s* dress was a silvery white like a lily’s, and the veil as well

³¹⁸ Father Migliorini.

³¹⁹ At this point the writer again introduces the date, December 29, which she adds as if not-ing it down.

-- just as She was in the visions at the Grotto, whereas *Jesus*' attire was an ivory white, like woolen cloth.

I was able to compare the two Bodies and the two Faces carefully, as they were close to each other, on the right side of my bed. Jesus at my side, Mary on his right, towards the foot of the bed.

Mary was shorter than her Son by the whole height of his head, so that the Virgin's head reached the shoulder of her Son, who was *very* tall. She was much thinner, whereas He had broad shoulders and a body which was entirely robust without being fat. The shade of the face was an ivory white. Only the lips were accentuated in their color, which stood out from that colorless color of the skin, and blue eyes: light in the Virgin, darker in her Son and larger. The eyes of a dominator, but so gentle! Lighter hair in the Mother, brighter in the Son, but still a blond tending towards copper, and equally delicate, soft, and forming waves which in Jesus ended in curls; in Mary, I don't know, for the veil allowed me to see only the hair over her forehead down to her ears. I don't know if it was loose, braided, or pinned at the nape of her neck.

In both the face was an elongated oval, slender without being bony. More delicate in Mary and smaller, for it was in proportion to her body. But the forehead, nose, mouth, shape of the cheeks, and contour of the eyes, with smooth eyelids appreciably lowered over the eyes, were the same. It was, I repeat, only that Jesus' eyes were bigger and their gaze was that of a dominator.

Mary's hands were extremely white and minute; her Son's were more virile, and the skin was darker; but the hands of both were markedly tapering in shape in relation to their width.

Jesus and Mary looked at one another from time to time with an indescribable love. Mary looked with an adoring love. Jesus looked at his Mother with an infinite, venerating, and protective love -- grateful, I would say. And I would also say that they were speaking to each other with their gaze and their smile. They would look at me and then at each other. I saw the movement of their heads distinctly.

Then everything was effaced in drowsiness. But when I recovered awareness, the first thing I saw was my two Loves still in the same place.

Then, since I was alone, in the dark, while the others were eating or talking (I don't know) in the dining room, I carefully refrained from letting it be known that I was awake. I put up with heat and the need to be moved (I felt pins and needles all over) to savor that sweet vision in peace. With my half-numb hands I took my rosary, which was lying on my breast, where I always put it when I feel myself being overtaken by sleep or a collapse, and I began to say the rosary. The sorrowful mysteries.

When I had barely begun the invocations of Fatima -- 'Jesus, it is for the sake of your love, for the conversion of sinners, for the Holy Father, and to make reparation for the offenses committed against the Immaculate Heart of

Mary. Jesus, forgive us our sins, preserve us from the fire of hell, and take all souls to Heaven, especially those most in need of your mercy” -- I saw the Two look at one another, beaming with mutual love. *Beam* is the right word and barely expresses the radiance of the two Faces.

Then, when I said the mystery of “Jesus’ Prayer in the Garden,” Mary’s face looked at her Son with love and affliction, and She took her Son’s right hand, which was hanging at his side, in her little hand and kissed it with supreme veneration. And She did the same at each of the five sorrowful mysteries. The grace of that act was indescribable, as was the gaze which Jesus lowered over the bent head of his Mother as She kissed Him on the back of the hand.

I did not see the stigmata. Really, if I must state the truth, even when I saw Jesus in agony,³²⁰ I saw blood on his hands, but never the open wound. I thus cannot say the exact point where it is located.

Afterwards the people in the house came and disturbed me. *I continued to see, but I was disturbed in the peace of contemplating.* I had the face typical of when *I see*, and Paola³²¹ realized and said, ‘How beautiful we are tonight!’

I then worked because I felt happy. I put together the “Cradle” Jesus wants.

And then -- I felt ill with heart trouble and had a tremendous crisis which is still continuing. Life and Joy rush into me with excessive violence, and my extenuated body suffers therefrom. But I am willing to die with that vision. Oh, you can bet I’m willing to...!

I have given you³²² such an exact description that it is almost a painting. May you, too, take delight in it. I am sorry I cannot make you see as I see, but I do all I can to make you share as well in the treasures Jesus gives me. I apologize if I am more illegible than ever, but I am wavering between life and death, to the point that I have taken drops and so on repeatedly, and as soon as Paola gets up, I will have injections given because the crisis is not over. I wanted to write, in spite of my condition, since, if I should die, I want you to know what has made my final hours luminous.

Later, during the day, when I was half unconscious from suffering, I was thinking about what I said concerning the wounds on Jesus’ hands. And this is what the Master now tells me.

Jesus says:

“The wounds in my palms, which you have not seen because I rarely move my left hand, both because of the habit contracted in work and because it is more wounded, were inflicted in the following way.

³²⁰ In the texts of June 28 and August 2.

³²¹ Paola Belfanti.

³²² She is addressing Father Migliorini.

“The executioners’ idea was to hang Me by the wrist joints, immediately above the carpus, to make the attachment more secure. And, in fact, after having extended Me on the cross, they pierced my right hand at this point.

“But, since the builder of the scaffold had marked the hole on the left (he usually marked the place for the nails to enable them to enter more easily into the thick wood and make the hanging of a body placed not horizontally, but vertically, and with no other support but three long nails, more secure), more distant than the point which my wrist joint could reach, after having stretched my arm to the point of producing the tearing of my tendons, they decided to hammer the nail into the center of my palm, between the bones of the metacarpus.

“This is not observed in the Turin Shroud because the right hand covers the left hand.

“The wounding of the members, suffered intensely; was more immense because, once the cross was raised, when the weight of the Body shifted downward and forward, the nail greatly cut towards the thumb, expanding the hole more than on the right, where the carpus withstood the hanging better than the metacarpus. And it was also the most tormenting, both because it was on the side of the heart and because the nail, on entering, broke the nerves and tendons in the hand, causing an atrocious agony which spread to my head.

“Painters and sculptors who out of a sense of art have depicted Me or sculpted Me with my right hand half open and my left hand closed in a fist have, without so desiring, borne witness to a physical truth of my martyred Body; for the left hand really closed into a fist, both in agony and because of the breaking of the cut nerves, and it closed increasingly because the agony and the contraction of the nerve fibers augmented with the passing of the hours.

“My agonies on the Cross were numerous. I will tell you about them one day.³²³ But this agony of the hands was one of the cruelest.

“The wound on the right hand is almost completely hidden by the sleeve and is smaller and more regular.

“When I appeared to you as the Man of Sorrows heading for Calvary,³²⁴ you did not see the wounds on my hands because, as I was not yet crucified, I consequently did not yet have them. On my hands was the blood dripping from my crowned head and my skin, lacerated by scourges, but not the wounds. I will show them to you at a time more consistent than this Christmas period with such a vision of pain.

“As regards those words whose true meaning you do not understand, know that they mean “trafficking with Satan.”³²⁵ It is carried out in many ways,

³²³ In her monumental work on the life of the Lord.

³²⁴ See May 28, June 28, August 2, and August 13.

³²⁵ A similar phrase is found in the text for July 22.

all of them cursed by Me. I will also talk to you about this one day. For the time being, know that it is frequently practiced in the world and is the cause of many misfortunes and inexorable punishments here and in eternity.

“That’s enough for now. Rest. I am here, and I bless you.”

The Forerunners

Antichrist’s Reign

Peace/Truce

End/Judgment

Commentary On Colossians: The Truth Of The Gospel And Falsity Of Human Doctrines³²⁶

Colossians, Chapters 2 and 3

Jesus says:

“Take into consideration -- more than for yourself and for many like you -- that this dictation falls within the group of the ‘seven dictations.’^{327 328} When one has begun to undermine a system, it is good to continue with the blows of a battering ram. And this form of thought³²⁹ is a steel-hard system. One must persist to overcome.

“There is only one Faith which is true. Mine. Just as I have given it to all of you -- a divine gem whose light is life. It is not enough to remain in that faith nominally, just as a piece of marble placed in a room by chance remains. *But it is necessary to fuse oneself with it and make it part of yourselves.*

“Is the clothing you wear life for you? Does it perhaps become your flesh and blood? No. It is attire which is useful for you, but if you take it off to don other apparel, you remove nothing from your interior. Whereas the food you eat becomes your blood and your flesh, and you can no longer remove it from yourselves. It is a part -- and an essential one -- of yourselves, for without blood and flesh you could not live, and without food you would not have flesh and blood.

“The same occurs with Faith. It must not be something resting upon you at certain hours, like a veil for the purpose of appearing more attractive and seducing one’s brothers, *but it must be an intrinsic part of you, inseparable from you, vital in you. Faith is not just hope for things believed in; faith is a life*

³²⁶ NB44, January 17-18, 1944, p. 84

³²⁷ On reincarnation or metempsychosis, as in the final passage for January 11.

³²⁸ ET: Jesus is referring to a group of seven dictations addressed to those who believe in the false teachings of reincarnation and related forms of Satanism, such as spiritism (Q44:26-55).

³²⁹ ET: Namely the false doctrines of reincarnation, etc.

reality. A life beginning here, in this chimera of human life, and fulfilled in the hereafter, in that eternal life which awaits you.

“Today a great heresy is taking place, a supremely sacrilegious heresy. The son of Satan, one of the sons, whom I could call one of the greatest, not the greatest one in the past, who is Judas, not the greatest one to come, who will be the Antichrist, but one of those living now³³⁰ for the punishment of man, who has worshipped man and not God, dealing out death to himself by way of man, whereas I, God, gave man Life by way of *my* death -- meditate on this difference -- the son of Satan proclaims a new faith which is a tragic, sacrilegious, accursed parody of my Faith. A new gospel is proclaimed; a new church is founded; a new altar is raised up; a new cross is set on high; a new sacrifice is celebrated. Man’s gospel, church, altar, cross, and sacrifice. *Not God’s.*

“There is one Gospel: mine.

“There is one Church: mine, Roman Catholic.

“There is one Altar: the one consecrated by oil, water, and wine, the one founded upon the bones of a martyr and saint of God.

“There is one Cross: mine. The one from which the Body of the Son of God -- Jesus Christ -- is hanging, the one reproducing the figure of the wood I bore with infinite love and such great fatigue up to the summit of Calvary. There are no other crosses. There may be other signs, hieroglyphics like the ones sculpted upon the Pharaohs’ hypogea or upon the Aztecs’ stems -- signs, nothing more than signs, of man or Satan, but not crosses, not a symbol of a whole poem of love, redemption, and victory over all the forces of Evil, of whatever kind.

“From the time of Moses until now, and from now until the moment of Judgment,³³¹ there will be *one* cross: *the one like mine, the one* which first bore ‘the serpent,’³³² a symbol of eternal life, *the one* which bore Me, *the one* I shall bear with Me when I appear to you as the Judge and King to judge everyone: you, O my blessed ones who believe in my Sign and my Name; and you, accursed ones, parodists and sacrilegious, who have forcefully removed my Sign and my Name from churches, states, and consciences, replacing them with your Satanic symbol and your name as Satanic ones.

“There is one Sacrifice: the one mystically repeating my own, and in the bread and wine it gives you my Body and my Blood immolated for you. There is no other body or blood which can replace the Great Victim. And the blood and the bodies that you immolate, O ferocious sacrificers of those who are subject to you and at your disposal -- for you have turned them into the bodies of galley slaves condemned to row, marked with your sign as if they were beasts to be slaughtered, rendered unable even to think, for you have robbed, sup-

³³⁰ ET: 1944.

³³¹ Matthew 25:31-46.

³³² ET: Numbers 21:4-9, John 3:14-15.

pressed, and stricken this sovereignty of man over the brutes, and you crack the whip over them and threaten them with 'death' if they so much as *dare, even inwardly alone, to judge you -- and this blood and these bodies do not celebrate, do not substitute, and are not of use, no, for sacrifice.*

"Mine obtains graces and blessings for you. *This one obtains condemnation and eternal curses for you.* I hear and see the moans and the tortures of the oppressed whom you slaughter in soul and mind even more than in body. Not one of your subjects is safe from your knife, which empties them of freedom, peace, serenity, and faith and makes them moral dimwits, frightened, desperate, and rebellious. I hear and see the death rattle of the slain and the blood bathing 'your' altar. *Poor blood, for which I have a mercy surpassing all measure and whose error, too, I forgive, for man has already punished himself thereby, and God does not rage where there has already been expiation.*

"*But I swear to you that I will make that blood and those moans your eternal torment.* You shall eat, regurgitate, and vomit blood; you shall choke in it; your souls shall be deafened by those death rattles and those moans to the point of madness, and you shall be obsessed by millions of ghostly faces that will shout at you the millions of crimes you have committed and curse you. You shall find this in the place where your father, the king of deceit and cruelty, is awaiting you.

"And where among you is the Pontiff, the Priest for the celebration of the rite? *You are executioners and not priests. That is not an altar -- it is a scaffold. That is not a sacrifice -- it is a blasphemy. That is not a faith -- it is a sacrilege.*

"Come down, O accursed ones, before I fulminate you with a horrendous death. At least die the death of beasts, that withdraw into their burrows to die, sated with prey. Do not wait on that pedestal of yours as hellish gods for Me to hand you over to expiation -- not of the spirit, but of your beastly bodies -- and have you die in the midst of the mockery of the throng and the cruelty of those who are now being tortured. *There is a limit. I remind you. And there is no mercy for those aping God and becoming like Lucifer.*³³³

"*And you, O peoples, manage to be strong in Truth and Justice.* Human philosophies and human doctrines are all contaminated with dross. *The current ones are filled with venom.* One should not play with poisonous snakes. The time comes when the snake emerges from the charm and administers a fatal bite. *Do not let yourselves be poisoned.*

"*Remain united to Me.* In Me there is justice, peace, and love. *Do not seek other doctrines. Live out the Gospel.* You will be happy. *Live by Me, in Me.* You will not experience the great bodily joys. I do not confer them -- *I confer the true joys which are not just the enjoyment of the flesh, but also of the spirit,*

³³³ ET: Isaiah 14:9-15.

the honest, blessed, holy joys which I have granted and sanctioned, the ones in which I did not refuse to take part.

“The family, children, an honest well-being, a prosperous and peaceful homeland, real harmony with one’s brothers and sisters and with the nations. *This is what I call holy and what I bless.* Therein you also possess health, for family life, *when honestly lived out,* gives health to the body; therein you possess serenity, for a business or a profession, *when honestly engaged in,* provide tranquillity of conscience; therein you have the peace and prosperity of your homeland and town, for, *when living in real harmony* with your countrymen and with neighboring peoples, you avoid resentments and wars.

“In your blood Satan’s venom ferments, I know, my poor children. But I have given you Myself as an antidote. I have taught you to engrave my Sign, which overcomes Satan, upon yourselves, in yourselves.

“*Circumcise your spirits with Me.* A much higher and more perfect circumcision! *It removes from your flesh those cells in which the germs of death settle and implants in you the Life that I am. It strips you of animality and robes you in Christ. It buries you as children of blameworthy Adam -- and you are also blameworthy yourselves because of original sin and your own sins -- in Baptism and the Confession of Christ and makes you rise again as children of the Most High.*

“*Do not separate from Me. Oh, I shall certainly take you into the Heavens if you remain part of Me, and, in addition -- since not all of you are ‘heaven,’ but a little of the Earth’s mire always remains in you -- look, I promise you that the Father’s blessing will not be lacking even upon your mire, for the Father can only bless his Son, and my Power shall overshadow you to such a degree -- if you remain in Me, if you pray with Me, saying ‘our Father’ just as I taught you*³³⁴ *-- that the Father will give you both the Kingdom of Heaven, as is requested in the first part, and your daily bread and the forgiveness of sins, as is requested in the second.*

“*If you remain in Me, like children in their mother’s womb, our Father will be able to see only the robe which robes you: Me, your Redeemer, the one generating you for Heaven and his Son; and upon his Son, the object of all his pleasure, for whom He has made, in addition to all things, forgiveness and glory, too, for the joy of his Son, who wants you to be forgiven and glorious, He will make his graces rain down.*

“I destroyed your death with mine. I annulled your sins with my Blood. I redeemed them beforehand for your sake. I have made everything powerless to harm you in the future life by nailing your sin -- from Adam on to every one of you -- to my cross. I can say I consumed all the world’s poison by tasting of the sponge soaked in gall and vinegar on Golgotha and turned that Evil into

³³⁴ ET: Matthew 6:9-13, Luke 11:2-4.

Good for you, since, in dying thereby, I distilled it, and made the deathly mixture water of Life flowing from my torn chest.

“Remain in Me with purity and fortitude. Do not be hypocrites, but sincere in Faith. It is not external practices that constitute faith and love. Even the sacrilegious have these and make use of them to deceive you and obtain human glories for themselves. You must not be like this.

“Remember that, as I have regenerated you to the Life of Grace, to which you were dead, so I have raised you up with Me to eternal Life. Look, then, at that place of Life. Seek all the things which are currency for you to enter therein. All the things of the spirit: Faith, Hope, Charity, and the other virtues which make man a child of God.

“Seek the unerring Science: the one contained in my doctrine. This is the one which makes you capable of orienting yourselves in such a way that Heaven will be yours.

“Seek Glory. Not the ludicrous and often blameworthy glory of the earth, which I frequently condemn and never deem to be true glory, but only a mission which God gives you so that you will turn it into a means to reach heavenly Glory. True Glory is obtained by overturning the world’s values. The world says, ‘Enjoy, stockpile, be proud, overbearing, heartless, hate in order to overcome, lie in order to be successful, commit cruelties in order to domineer.’ I say to you, ‘Be moderate, continent, without thirst for flesh, gold, or power; be sincere, honest, humble, loving, patient, meek, and merciful.’³³⁵ Forgive those who offend you, love those who hate you, help those who are less fortunate than you. Love, love, love.’

“In truth, I tell you that not a single act of love, though minimal, such as a sigh of compassion for someone suffering, shall go unrewarded. A boundless reward in Heaven. And now a great reward, not comprehensible except for the one experiencing it, even on earth. The reward of the peace of Christ for all my good ones, of the luminousness of the Word for the ‘very good ones’ into whom I come to find my comfort.

“My dear children, whom I love with a love much greater than all the hatred circulating like a hellish liquid over the Earth, love Me, in turn; whatever you do or say, do it in the name of your Jesus, thus giving thanks, by means of Him, to God your Father, and the grace of the Lord will remain over you like a shield on earth and a secure halo for Heaven.”

That “address”³³⁶ was delivered about eight days ago -- around the 10th or 11th of this month, then. The following declaration was made therein, after other, varied statements: that priests are not necessary for either God or souls

³³⁵ ET: Matthew 5:3-12, Luke 6:20-23.

³³⁶ [Maria Valtorta comments on the deadly heresy.]

because they are moneygrubbers and so on and so forth and that, when the war [World War II] is over -- with the victory of Germany, of course -- a new, *true* worship will be established and new, *true* temples will be opened, and there the faithful of the new religion will go to witness the consummation of the sacrifice in which the bread given to the Germanic people and its blood will be brought.

Hitler's words and promises for his subjects.


The Forerunners Antichrist's Reign Peace/Truce End/Judgment
Commentary On Daniel, Chapter 12³³⁷

Daniel, Chapter 12

Jesus says:

“The archangel who overcame Lucifer and who stands guard over my Kingdom and the children of it will be the one to rise up as a heavenly sign in the last time. This will be the time when Israel is rejoined to Christ's Rome and there are no longer, the two branches of the people of God: the blessed one and the one accursed for its deicide, but one single trunk to be called *Christ's* because it is living in Me.³³⁸

“Then, since the number of the saved will be complete, the resurrection of the flesh will come, and, like a sleeping multitude which a trumpet awakens to call to muster, the dead, lying in numberless cemeteries, in the deserts, and in the seas -- wherever there lies someone who was a man -- will rise to come to Me, the supreme Judge.

“Oh, light, that are an attribute of mine and that will render radiant as stars those who knew Wisdom and taught Justice and lived it out, how joyfully you will shed yourself upon my blessed ones on that day!

“The last time of three years and six months, the most tremendous time ever known by man, will be when Satan, by way of his son, burning with supreme hatred (for the split between the two branches of the people of God will be over and, with it, the cause of so many material, moral, and spiritual evils), uses his perfect and ultimate acts of craftiness to harm, ruin, and slay Christ in hearts and hearts for Christ.

“The wise will comprehend Satan's trap -- *the numberless traps of Satan, for those who possess true Wisdom are illuminated* -- and through their fidelity to Grace will become snow-white and tested like fire, worthy to be cho-

³³⁷ NB44, January 23, 1944, p. 105

³³⁸ ET: Daniel 12:1-13; Matthew 25:31-46.

sen for Heaven. The wicked will follow Evil and do evil, unable to understand Good, for by their spontaneous will they will fill their hearts with Evil.

“Then the time will come when, trampled under foot to a point never reached before, the Church will no longer be free to celebrate the perpetual Sacrifice, and the abomination of desolation will be upraised over the Holy Place and over the holy places, just as is stated by the prophets and repeated by Me, who do not err.

“Daniel says, ‘There will be 1290 days [of this trampling under]. Blessed is he who waits and arrives at 1335.’³³⁹

“This means that in the three years and six months which will precede the end, a short time will finally be reserved for the faithful to gather together and listen to the last Word, resounding in their spirits, as an invitation to Heaven, while Michael with his angels overcomes Satan and his demons. ‘Blessed is he who waits and arrives at 1335 days’ means ‘Blessed is he who has persevered until the end,’ for he will be saved.”³⁴⁰

“And I say to you, ‘Go to the limit established ([sic] for your time as one living on earth, and you shall have rest, and shall remain in your destiny until the end of days.’”³⁴¹

The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment
-----------------	--------------------	-------------	--------------

Commentary On Daniel, Chapter 7³⁴²

Daniel, Chapter 7

Jesus says:

“Daniel is the one who has the same note as John, and John is the one who gathers in and amplifies Daniel’s initial note. That is why you, little John,³⁴³ like him so much.

“Like a fish in a clear fishpond, you are happy when you move in the atmosphere of your Christ, who will have his supreme triumph in the hour when Satan, his son, and his courtiers are rendered powerless forever. And in Daniel this atmosphere is present. If Isaiah is the pre-evangelist who speaks of my com-

³³⁹ ET: Daniel 12:11-12.

³⁴⁰ ET: Matthew 10:22.

³⁴¹ ET: Daniel 12:13

^{342,342} NB44, January 25, 1944, p. 107

³⁴³ ET: “Little John” is the nickname which Jesus gave Maria to express the fact that in some respects her love for Jesus and her mission were not unlike those of St. John the Apostle and Evangelist.

ing into the world for the salvation of the world,³⁴⁴ Daniel is the pre-apostle, the pre-John who announces the glories of my eternal triumph as King of the everlasting Jerusalem.

“Now see the way the signs of the diabolical ministers of the Apocalypse³⁴⁵ are foreshadowed in the four beasts described by Daniel.³⁴⁶ The commentators have labored to provide a historic-human meaning for those four monsters. *But it is necessary to project one’s gaze much further ahead and much higher. When you meditate on the holy books, lift yourselves above the earth, detach yourselves from the present moment, and project your gaze into the future and the supernatural. The key to the mystery is there.*

“The four beasts: *the four errors which will precede the end. The four errors which will be four horrors for mankind and which will give birth to the final Horror.*

“Man was a demigod through Grace and Faith. Like an eagle and a lion, he was able to face and overcome the dangers of sense and raise himself to soar in the atmosphere of God, where the soul is joined to her Lord in a supernatural marriage, in continual, swift unions of burning passion, from which she descends to the earth each time renewed in strength, joy, and charity, which she pours upon her brothers and sisters, and she then rises again, even more impetuously, towards God, for every union is an increase in perfection which is fulfilled when union becomes eternal in my Paradise.

“*Atheism* tore away man’s wings as an eagle and heart as a demigod and made him an *animal* walking in the mire and bearing over the mire, towards the mire, his oppressive heart, entirely of flesh and blood. In his selfhood, deprived of the spiritual wings of the spirit, man bears a weight heavier than lead, a weight bending him over, knocking him down, and plunging him into the mire.

“Man was a demigod because of the Charity living in him. In loving God and his Law, which is the law of Charity, he possessed God and, with God, Peace, which is one of God’s main attributes, and, with peace, so much universal and individual good.

“Man rejected the Law of God to take up many other doctrines. But *none of them was or is of God*, and true Charity is thus not in any of them. Hence man, who had embraced atheism, changing from an eagle and a lion into a mere man, through a hellish sorcery *gave birth to himself* turned into a *bear*, the fierce devourer of his fellows.

“But horror produces horror. By an ascending ladder. Horror is ever greater, for in accursed unions with Satan man, whom Christ brought back to

³⁴⁴ ET: Isaiah 2:1-5; 7:10-17; 9:1-6; 11:1-9.

³⁴⁵ Revelation 13; 17; 19:11-20:10.

³⁴⁶ ET: Daniel 7:1-8, 11-12, 15-25.

his nature as a demigod, generates increasingly monstrous monsters. And they are the children of his erring, sold to Satan to receive his earthly assistance.

“From *man the demigod* came *man*; from *man*, the *bear*; from the *bear*, the *new monster, ferocious and false as the leopard*, endowed by Satan with multiple wings so as to be swifter in doing harm. I told you³⁴⁷ ³⁴⁸ that Satan is the aper of God. He, too, thus wanted to give wings to ‘his’ child -- by *now his child* -- to humanity without Faith and without God. Not the wings of an eagle, but of a vampire, so that it would be a nightmare for humanity itself and be quick to rush down upon its own parts, the victims of itself, to suck their blood.

“The mystical pelican, I have opened my heart to give you *my* blood. Satan makes man -- to whom I have given my blood -- the vampire that sucks parts of itself and slays itself with torment.

“Doesn’t it sound like a nightmarish legend? It is, however, your reality. It is not a mythical monster. It is you that with diabolical hunger devour part of yourselves, bleeding yourselves to death, mutilating yourselves so as to generate afterwards the new parts, while you devour those already formed, with a continuity which has a maniacal aspect to it -- diabolically maniacal, however.

“*Power which is willed, pushed forward, and imposed to the point of crime is the third beast. Since it is human power -- that is, sold to Satan just to become increasingly powerful, going against every divine and moral law -- it begets its monster, whose name is Revolution and which, in keeping with its nature, bears in the protuberances of its monstrosity all the fiercest horrors of revolutions, the social shipwreck of Good and Faith.*

“Honesty, respect, morality, religion, freedom, and goodness die when this monster exhales its hellish breath upon a nation, and like a pestiferous emission it expands beyond these confines, infecting different peoples with itself until it infects the whole world, preparing -- over the tatters of the victims slain and torn to pieces by it, over the ruins of the nations reduced to rubble -- the cradle for the final monster: *the Antichrist*.

“I told you³⁴⁹ that he will be the son of man’s lust, born of the marriage of lust with the Beast. I told you. *I do not change* in my mode of expression. What I say *is true*. I know it with no need to read it; I remember it with no need to reread it. *It is Written in my mind as God, before which there incessantly flow over each other all the events of man in time, without one’s impeding the vision of another.*

“This Antichrist, the perfection of Horror, as I was the perfection of Perfection, with his numberless weapons, symbolized by the ten horns, his jaws

³⁴⁷ On January 8.

³⁴⁸ ET: In the June 19, 1943 and August 22, 1943 dictations (ET:7 & 46) -- as well as in a January 8, 1944 dictation (Q44:28) not quoted in this book.

³⁴⁹ On July 23, 1943. See *The Notebooks. 1943*.

toothed with iron, his savage feet, and, finally, his small horn, a symbol of the extreme hatred with which Satan will endow his son to corrupt humanity as he seduces it with his lying mouth, having himself worshipped as a god, will excessively torment those who, as a little faithful flock, will remain my followers. The little horn will grow by the hour to do harm; the Satanic intelligence will grow to make the mouth tell the most distressing lies; he will grow in power as I grew in wisdom and grace,³⁵⁰ armed with eyes to read the thought of holy men and kill them through that thought.

“Oh, my saints of the last time! If the life of the early ones amidst the persecutions of paganism was heroic, three times, seven times, and seven times seven times as holy will be the life of my last saints! Only those nourished with the crumb of Faith will be able to have a lion’s heart to face those torments and the eyes and feathers of an eagle to gaze steadily at Me as Sun and fly to Me as Truth, as the darkness overwhelms them on all sides and Deceit tries to persuade them to worship it and believe in it.

“After the forerunners of the Antichrist, the Antichrist himself will come. The anti-Christian period, symbolized by the Beast armed with ten horns -- the ten *servants*, who are believed to be *kings*, of Satan, three of whom (*note carefully*) will be torn away and cast into nothingness (that is, into the abyss where God is not present and where there is thus *Nothingness*, the opposite of God, who is *All*) -- will culminate in the birth and growth of the eleventh horn *to the point of its maximum power*, the reason for the fall of three forerunners, and *seat of the true Antichrist*, who will curse God as no son of man ever did, trample upon God’s saints, and torture the Church of Christ; since he will be the son of the union of demoniac pride with human lust, he will think ‘he can do great things and change the times and laws,’ and for three and a half years he will be Horror reigning over the world.

“Then the Father will say, ‘Enough,’ before the immense choir that will be formed in Heaven through the ‘sound of the solemn words’ of the saints; and the wicked Beast will be slain and cast into the well of the abyss and, along with it, all the lesser beasts, to remain there with Satan, their begetter, for eternity.

“I shall then be called by the Father to ‘judge the living and the dead,’ as stated in the Symbol of the Faith. And the ‘living,’ those who preserved life in themselves by having kept Grace and Faith alive, will inherit ‘the kingdom, the power, and the magnificence of God.’ The spiritually dead will receive eternal Death as their will has chosen to receive.

“And there will no longer be the Earth or fleshly man. But there will be only ‘children of God,’ creatures freed from all pain, and there will no longer be sin, and there will no longer be darkness, and there will no longer be fear.

³⁵⁰ ET: Luke 2:40.

But only joy, joy, immense, eternal joy inconceivable for men. The joy of seeing God, of possessing Him, and of understanding his thought and love.

“Come, O men, to the Fount of life. I open its source to you. Draw from it, fortify yourselves in it so as to be intrepid in trials and come to immerse yourselves completely in it, in Me, the source of blessedness, in the lovely Paradise which my Father has created for you and in which the threefold Love of the One God and the Purity of ‘our’ Mother await you and, along with them, those who, by having been faithful, have already obtained Life.”

Jesus then says to me:

“When I see you so attentive to my lessons, you strike Me as a diligent student fond of her teacher, who, for her, represents all knowledge. When, on the other hand, you discover new parts on your own and make observations (and you do this in the visions), you make Me think of a good child whose little hand is held by a father and who is led by him before what he wants the child to *see* so as to grow in intelligence, but at the same time he does not intervene so as to give his tot the joy of discovering something new and getting the sensation of growing in self-esteem.

“To do this, you must always be free from human cares. Increasingly free. You must be more and more secure to walk at ease along the paths of contemplation and ever more peaceful and trustful of Me, who am holding your hand.

“A father does not let himself be noticed, but with a thousand loving arts acts to the point where his child sees *that* certain thing which he wants the child to see. Oh, I am the most loving of fathers and the most patient of teachers for my little ones, and when I can hold the hand of one who is docile and attentive, I am happy. Happy to be a Teacher and Father.

“It is so hard for my creatures to place their hand in mine trustingly so as to be led and instructed by Me and to say to Me, ‘I love You above all things and with my whole self!’ To those few who are so entirely *mine*, without reserve, I open the treasures of revelations and contemplations and give Myself without reserve.

“However, Maria, I choose you for the role of making known my Divinity, in its different manifestations, among those who need to be awakened and led to glimpse God: remember to be scrupulous to the utmost in repeating what you see. Even a single trifle has value, and it is not *yours*, but *mine*. It is thus not licit for you to hold it back. It would be dishonest and selfish. Remember that you are the reservoir for the divine water³⁵¹ into which that water is poured so that *all* may come to draw therefrom.

³⁵¹ In the dictation on June 21, 1943 and the two dictations on December 11, 1943, in *The Notebooks. 1943*.

“As regards the dictations, you have arrived at the most faithful fidelity. In the contemplations you observe a great deal, but in the haste of writing, and on account of your special conditions in health and surroundings, it happens that you omit some details. You must not do so. Place them at the foot of the page, but write down *all* of them. This is not a reproach -- it is sweet advice from your Master.

“Some days ago you said to Me, ‘For men to love You a little more by way of me justifies and repays all my effort and my life; even if *one* single man were to return to You by means of your “hidden violet,”³⁵² she would be happy.’

“The more attentive and precise you are, the more numerous those who come to Me will be, and the greater your present spiritual happiness and your future eternal happiness will be.

“Go in peace. Your Lord is with you.”

	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment
--	--------------------	-------------	--------------

The Perfect Priest As A Shepherd And The Idols To Which Priests Are Prey³⁵³

Jesus says:

"This is a page which is painful to dictate, write, and read. But it is true and should be uttered. Write. It is for the priests.

"The faithful are accused a great deal of being *not very* faithful and *very* lukewarm. Men are accused a great deal of being without charity, without purity, without detachment from wealth, and without a spirit of faith. But since children, with only rare exceptions, are the way they are trained by parents, not so much by repression as by example, *in the same manner the faithful*, excluding the exceptions which always arise, *are as they are trained to be by priests, not so much by words as by example*.

"The churches scattered in the midst of man's houses ought to be like a beacon and a purifier. From them there ought to issue forth a gentle, powerful light which penetrates and attracts, and, in spite of all locks, as happens with daylight, enters into the depths of hearts.

"Observe a lovely summer day. A glorious light flows from the sun and embraces the earth -- so victorious and powerful that even in the most thoroughly closed room darkness is never complete. It may be a beam as slender as the hair of a child, a tremulous point on a wall, or a mote of golden dust dancing

³⁵² In the vision described on the evening of Holy Thursday 1943, in *The Notebooks. 1943*.

³⁵³ NB44, January 27³⁵³, 1944, p. 113

in the atmosphere, but a little sign of light remains in that room to testify that outside there is the blazing sun of God.

"Similarly, if from the churches scattered among the houses there issued forth a 'light' as I have indicated it to you as your sign, O priests, whom I call the 'light of the world'³⁵⁴ -- I called you that when I created you -- a thread, a point, or a dust mote of light would penetrate into the most tightly closed hearts, just enough to recall that upon the world there is 'a Light,' just enough to prompt a hunger for light, for 'that Light,' in hearts.

"But how many churches are there from which there emanates such a bright light that it forces open the closed doors of hearts and penetrates them and brings them God, the God who is Light? How many souls in churches are there -- you, pastors and curates, priests and monks, all of you whom I have called to be bearers of Me to hearts -- that are so inflamed by Charity that they can overcome the frost in souls and bear into men's hearts God's love and love for God, for the God who is Charity?

"Men in their sorrows -- and I alone know how many there are -- in their sorrows, different from yours -- or, at least, yours ought to be different from theirs, for yours ought to be only afflictions which come from your zeal concerning your Lord God, not sufficiently loved, the faithful who are lost, the sinners who are not converted; *these and no others ought to be your sorrows*, for I, in calling you, did not show you a royal palace, a table, a purse, or a family, *but a cross, my Cross*, on which I died naked, on which I breathed my last alone, onto which I rose after having detached Myself, *stripped of everything*, even of my poverty, which was wealth compared to my wretchedness as a condemned man for whom there remained only a scaffold made of a little wood and three nails and a handful of thorns woven into a crown; *and this serves to tell everyone, and you in particular, that souls are saved through sacrifice, through generosity in sacrifice which goes as far as total, absolute stripping of affections, comforts, necessities, and life -- men*, in their sorrows, ought to be able to see their church as a mother to whose lap one goes to weep and hear words of comfort, after having recounted one's cares, with the certainty of being listened to and understood. Men, in their moments of obscurity prompted by *so many* factors -- not always originating in their will, but imposed by the will of *others*, by *a whole set of circumstances leading them to believe in error or doubt* God -- ought to encounter you, bearers of light, of *my* light; you, merciful as the Samaritan,³⁵⁵ you, masters like your Master; you, fathers like your Father.

"The earth, corrupted by so many things, ferments like a rotting body and contaminates souls with its stench. But if the churches scattered among the houses were incense burners where a priest lives burning and burns himself by

³⁵⁴ Matthew 5:14-16.

³⁵⁵ Luke 10:29-37.

loving, the world's stench would be counterbalanced by the perfume of God issuing *from the hearts of the priests living in total 'fusion' with God, effaced in God to the point of being only like Me, who am in the Sacrament at man's disposal at all hours -- I, God, am there without weariness, without pride, without resistance -- and hearts would be purified.*

"Such priests, *perfect ones*, are like the sun. They breathe souls into Heaven as if they were drops of water; they purify them in the atmosphere of Heaven and then are like clouds delicately dissolving into beneficent dew, during the night, *in concealment*, to bring refreshment to the parching thirst of souls, poor flowers wounded by so many things.

"They breathe in: to breathe into oneself it is necessary to possess great strength. Only very energetic love for the Lord and one's brothers and sisters can give it to you. Gazing steadily at God, on high, very high above the earth, you can, if you wish, attract souls to you -- that is, to God, in whom you live. It is an operation requiring generosity and constancy. Even a blink must serve this end. All of your actions must have this as their goal. There are looks which can convert a heart when God shines forth in them.

"To dissolve oneself: to sacrifice oneself, in all ways, in concealment, bearing to parched souls heavenly refreshment which issues forth so sweetly that they do not know when it has flowed out, but they find themselves covered with dew. Just as the silent, demure dew acts, which descends while all is at rest -- men, animals, and flowers -- and cleanses the air of the impurities of the day, quenching the thirst of the stems and fronds and covering them with beads.

"Sacrifice, sacrifice, sacrifice, O priests. Prayer, prayer, prayer, O pastors.

"I called you *'shepherds'*.³⁵⁶ I did not call you *'solitaries'* or *'captains.'* The solitary lives by himself. The captain marches at the head of his men. *But the 'shepherd' remains in the midst of his flock and watches over it. He does not isolate himself because the flock would be dispersed. He does not walk at the head because the absent-minded in the flock would be left behind along the way, prey to wolves and thieves.*

"The shepherd, if he is not a madman, lives in the midst of his flock; he calls it and gathers it together; he tirelessly goes back and forth along its extent; he precedes it at difficult junctures and is the first to examine obstacles, leveling them as much as possible; he makes rough ways safe by his efforts and then remains at the troublesome spot to oversee the passing of his sheep, and if he observes that one of them is fearful or weak, he takes it on his shoulders and carries it beyond the point of danger; and if a wolf comes, he does not run away, but hurls himself against it, in front of his sheep, and defends them, even at the price of dying to save them. He immolates himself for them to satisfy the beast's

³⁵⁶ ET: John 10:1-21.

hunger so that it will no longer feel the need to tear anyone to pieces. How many beasts attacking souls there are! The shepherd does not waste time on useless chatter with passers-by and does not get distracted with matters which are not his concern. He takes care of his flock, and that's all.

"Now observe. Doesn't it seem we are reading the eighth chapter of Ezekiel?

"The first idol: jealousy.

"You should be charity, shouldn't you? Charity to lead others to charity. What are you? Jealous of each other. You get offended if a layman criticizes you. But don't you criticize each other, and often unjustly? The superior criticizes his inferiors. The inferior criticizes his superiors. You are jealous if one of you attracts attention, if one of you is more successful, if one of you becomes wealthier. *Furthermore, this aspect, which ought to cause you horror, is, on the contrary, what you most covet.* But was I, the eternal Priest, wealthy? Be perfect, and you will be noted and praised, *though the praise of your God should be your only spur.*

"The second idol -- rather, many idols: the different heresies which in you take the place of the worship you should possess.

"Each of you as well, like the seventy elders named by Ezekiel,³⁵⁷ is incensing the idol he prefers. And you do so in the darkness, hoping the eyes of men will not see you. But they see you. And you scandalize them. For the faithful, and men in general, are like the children who seem not to observe, but who never cease to keep their eyes and ears set upon those who are their elders.

"Why, don't you know that, even if man does not see, God sees you? *And why, then, do you cast your incense before the power of gold or the power of man? From the height of my throne, don't I see too many of my priests devoting their time -- the time I give them so they will spend it on their priestly mission -- on human commerce aimed at increasing their well-being? Yes, I see this. Don't I observe -- and my heart turns -- too many of my priests abjuring my Law to obey the law of wretched men, hoping to receive honor and gain from them? Yes, I see this.*

"Oh, the politician priests! *The current members of the Synedrium! Let them remember, however, what the lot of the Synedrium was at the hands of those at whose feet they had prostrated their consciences and violated my Law.* And I will say no more. This is for the affairs of men. *The rest will come afterwards from the eternal, just Judge.*

"The third idol: sensuality.

"Yes, there is this, too. And I will say no more out of respect for my 'spokesman.' *But let each examine himself to see if in the place where the only female creatures to be remembered licitly with love by a priest are my Mother*

³⁵⁷ ET: Ezekiel 8:11.

and their mothers there is not a pagan goddess. Consider that you touch Me and receive Me. And that's all. Do not place the Most Pure One in contact with flesh stained by lust.

"The fourth idol: the adoration of the east."³⁵⁸

*"Sects."³⁵⁹ Yes, this, too. And shouldn't I gaze at many of you with disdain and use the same apostrophes for many as I used for the Pharisees and doctors in my time?³⁶⁰ And shouldn't I raise up 'lights' among the lay people who love Me as many of You do not love Me, out of mercy on the souls you leave in the cold, in the dark and in impurity for the sake of the souls for whom you are not a way to God, but a path leading downwards? And how do you dare to repeat my Word and preach my Law when Word and Law are a condemnation for you? *Let whoever is clean become cleaner and whoever is unclean be cleansed.**

"Mankind stands at a major fork. Two roads branch off there-from: one leads upwards to God; the other leads downwards to Satan. At the fork there is a rock. It is you. If you act as a bulwark and spur towards the first road, Satan will not burst forth, and souls will be propelled towards God. But if you are the first to roll towards Satan's slope, you will drag mankind towards the horrors of the Antichrist ahead of time.

"And if he must come, woe to those who hasten his coming and prolong it, for he will cease to be at the eternally pre-established hour and the longer he remains, the more souls will be lost. Not one of them shall go unavenged -- remember this. For, if your God sees the dying sparrow, how can He fail to see a dying soul? I will call those who slay it -- whoever they are -- to account and pronounce my sentence."

The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment
-----------------	--------------------	-------------	--------------

A Vision Of The Last Judgment³⁶¹

³⁵⁸ ET: The Italian original has: "l'adorazione dell' oriente." Here the word "oriente" taken at face value simply means "east," as in Ezechiel 8:16: "about twenty-five men having their backs towards the temple of the Lord, and their faces to the east: and they adored towards the rising of the sun." "Oriente" in Italian can also refer to the Masonic Lodge.

³⁵⁹ ET: The Italian original has "le sette," which can mean "sects," as for instance Protestant sects, or again "secret societies," a meaning which would tie in with the word commented upon in the previous footnote (" oriente"). If we take the word "sette" to mean "sects," Our Lord's allusion could be taken as a rebuke against the now prevalent false sense of ecumenism, which amounts to indifferentism and the loss of Catholicism.

³⁶⁰ ET: Matthew 23:1-32; Luke 11:37-54.

³⁶¹ NB44, January 29³⁶¹, 1944, p. 118

There are two points I would like to tell you about here which are certainly of interest to you and which I decided to write down as soon as I emerged from drowsiness. But since there are other more pressing matters, I will write later.

What I am seeing this evening:

An immense expanse of land. As boundless as a sea. I say "land" because there is earth, as on fields and roads. But there is not one tree, stem, or blade of grass. Dust, dust, and more dust. I see this in a light which is not light. A barely outlined, leaden brightness of a green-violet hue as is seen at the time of a very heavy thunderstorm or a total eclipse. *A light* prompting fear, *of burnt-out stars*. That's it. The sky is devoid of stars. There are no stars, no moon, no sun. The sky is empty, as the earth is empty. The former is stripped of its flowers of light; the latter, of its plant and animal life. They are two vast remains of what was.

I have every opportunity to see this desolate vision of the death of the universe, which I think will have the same appearance as at the first moment,³⁶² when heaven and earth already existed, but the former was devoid of stars, and the latter, deprived of life -- a now solidified globe, but still uninhabited, flying through space, waiting for the Creator's finger to give it grass and animals.

Why do I understand that it is the vision of the death of the universe? Through one of those "*second voices*" -- I don't know who they come from, but in me they do what the chorus does in ancient tragedies: the role of indicators of special aspects which the main actors do not clarify on their own. This is exactly what I want to say to you and what I will say to you later.

As I turn my gaze over this desolate scene, for which I do not grasp the need, I see Death,³⁶³ springing from I don't know where, standing upright in the middle of the boundless plain. A laughing skeleton, with her teeth bared and empty eye sockets, the queen of the dead world, wrapped in her shroud as if in a cloak. She does not have a scythe. *She has already cut down everything*. She is turning her gaze over her harvest and leering.

Her arms are joined over her breast. She then separates these skeletal arms and opens her hands with nothing more than naked bones and, since it is a giant, omnipresent figure -- or, rather, *omniproximate* -- sets a finger, the right index finger, upon my forehead. I feel the chill of the pointed bone, which seems to perforate my brow and penetrate into my head like a needle of ice. But I understand that this has no meaning other than to seek to call my attention to what is happening.

³⁶² ET: Genesis 1:1-2.

³⁶³ ET: 1 Corinthians 15:26.

Indeed, with her left arm she gestures, indicating to me the desolate expanse we -- she, the queen, and I, the only living being -- are dominating. At her silent command -- given by the skeletal fingers of her left hand and by turning her head rhythmically to the right and the left -- the earth splits into thousands and thousands of clefts, and in the depths of these dark furrows scattered white objects appear. I don't understand what they are.³⁶⁴

As I strive to figure out what they are, Death continues to plough the glebes with her gaze and her command, as if with a ploughshare, and they go on opening increasingly as far as the distant horizon; and she furrows the waves of the seas devoid of sails, and the waters open in liquid eddies.

And then from the furrows of earth and the furrows of sea there arise the scattered, disconnected white objects I saw, which are being recomposed. They are millions and millions and millions of skeletons surfacing from the oceans, rising straight up from the ground. Skeletons of all heights. From the minute ones of infants with little hands like small dusty spiders to those of adult men, and even giant ones, whose mass brings to mind certain antediluvian beings. And they stand in astonishment, as if trembling, like those who are suddenly awakened from a deep sleep and do not grasp where they are.

The sight of all those skeletal bodies standing whitely in that apocalyptic "nonlight" is tremendous.

And then around those skeletons there slowly condenses a nebulosity like mist rising from the open ground, from the open seas; it takes on shape and opacity and becomes flesh, a body like the one we who are alive have. The eyes -- rather, the eye sockets -- are filled with irises; zygomas are covered with cheeks; gums extend over the exposed jaws, and lips form again, and hair appears once more on the craniums, and arms become shapely, and fingers, nimble; and the whole body becomes alive again, just the way ours is.

The same, but different in appearance. There are very beautiful bodies, with a perfection in shape and color which make them resemble artistic masterpieces. There are other horrible ones, not because of any real crippling or deformity, but because of their overall appearance, which is more proper to a brute beast than a man. Grim eyes, contracted faces, a savage appearance, and, what strikes me most, a darkness emanating from their bodies and increasing the lividness of the air surrounding them. Whereas the very beautiful ones have laughing eyes, a serene visage, and a gentle appearance and give off a luminosity which forms a halo around their being from head to foot and radiates out on all sides.

If they were all like the former, the darkness would become total to the point of concealing every object. But by virtue of the latter the luminosity not only endures, but increases, to the extent that I can observe everything.

³⁶⁴ ET: Ezekiel 37:1-14.

The ugly ones -- concerning whose destiny of accursedness I harbor no doubt, since they bear this condemnation as a mark on their brows -- remain silent, casting frightened, surly glances up and down around them, and group together on one side at an inner command which I do not understand, but which must have been given by someone and perceived by the risen ones. The very beautiful ones also gather, smiling at one another and looking at the ugly ones with pity mixed with horror. And these lovely ones are singing -- they are singing a slow, sweet chorus of blessing for God.

I see nothing else. I understand I have viewed the final resurrection.³⁶⁵

What I wanted to say to you at the outset is the following. You asked me today how I had been able to know the names of Hillel and Gamaliel and that of Shammai.³⁶⁶

It is the voice which I call the "second voice"³⁶⁷ that tells me these things. A voice even less perceptible than that of my Jesus and of the others who dictate. These are voices -- I told you before,³⁶⁸ and I repeat -- which my spiritual hearing perceives as *just like human voices*. I hear them as sweet or irate, loud or soft, laughing or melancholy. As if someone were speaking right next to me. Whereas this "second voice" is like a light, an intuition speaking in my spirit. "*In,*" *not* "*to,*" *my spirit*. It is an indication.

Accordingly, as I approached the group of those disputing and did not know who that distinguished personage arguing so heatedly alongside the old man was, this inner "something" said to me, "Gamaliel. Hillel." That's right. First Gamaliel and then Hillel. I have no doubt. As I wondered who they were, this internal indicator alluded to the third unpleasant individual just when Gamaliel was calling him by name. And I was thus able to know who the one with the pharisaical appearance was.

Today this internal indicator has me understand that I was seeing the universe after its death. And so it often happens in the visions. It is what leads me to comprehend certain details which I would not grasp on my own and, which need to be comprehended.

I don't know if I have made myself understood clearly. But I will stop because Jesus is starting to speak.

Jesus says:

³⁶⁵ ET: 1 Corinthians 15:35-58.

³⁶⁶ The reference is to the episode mentioned in note 126. [*We omit the text written on January 28, which contains the episode involving "Jesus' Discussion with the Doctors in the Temple;" it is found in the Preparation cycle.*]

³⁶⁷ Referred to above in this entry.

³⁶⁸ For example, see the entry for May 13 in *The Notebooks*. 1943.

“When time is over and life is to be exclusively Life in the heavens, the universe, as you thought,³⁶⁹ will again become as it was at the beginning, before being dissolved completely. This will take place when I have judged.

“Many think that there will be just an instant between the moment of the end and the universal Judgment. But God will be good until the end, O daughter. *Good and just.*

“Not all of those living at the final hour will be holy, and not all of them, damned. There will be some among the former who are destined to Heaven, but have something to expiate. I would be unjust if for them I annulled the expiation which, however, I had inflicted on all those preceding them who were in the same state at their death.

“Therefore, while justice and the end come for other planets and, like torches upon which one blows, the stars in the sky fade out one by one and darkness and cold progressively increase in my hours, which are your centuries -- and *the hour of darkness has already begun, in the firmaments as in hearts* -- those living in the final hour, dying in the final hour, deserving of Heaven, but in need of cleansing themselves further, will go into the purifying fire. I will increase the heat of that fire so that purification will be more expeditious and the blessed will not wait too long to take their holy flesh to glorification and have it, too, rejoice on seeing its God, its Jesus, in his perfection and in his triumph.

“That is why you saw the earth devoid of grass and trees, animals, men, and life, and the oceans devoid of sails, a still expanse of still waters, for movement will no longer be necessary for them to give life to the fish of the waters, as warmth will no longer be necessary for the earth to give life to crops and beings. That is why you saw the firmament empty of its stars, with no more fires, no more lights. Light and heat will no longer be necessary for the earth, now an enormous cadaver bearing in itself the cadavers of all the living from Adam until the last son of Adam.

“Death, my last handmaiden upon the earth, will perform her last task and then cease to exist as well. There will be no more Death, but only eternal Life. In blessedness or in horror. Life in God or life in Satan for your selves, recomposed in soul and body.

“That is enough for now. Rest and think of Me.”

And this evening, too, when I did *not* want to write because I was exhausted, I had to write twelve pages...! No comment.

I forgot to tell you that the bodies were all naked, but there was no sensuality, as if malice had also died: in them and in me. And, furthermore, the bodies of the damned were shielded by their darkness, and those of the blessed

³⁶⁹ At the point in the text where note 134 is inserted. [*Genesis 1:1-2*]

were robbed in their light itself. Therefore, what is animality in us disappeared under the emission of the inner spirit, the quite joyful or quite wretched lord of the flesh.

*Ezekiel, Chapters 10 and 11*³⁷¹

Jesus says:

“The sign of *Tau*: a pollarded cross, as is proper for the one marking subjects, who may not bear a canopy over their throne, with the name of a king. The children of God, but not the ‘firstborn of the Father.’ Only the Firstborn sits on his kingly throne only Christ, whose earthly throne was the Cross, bears his glorious sign at the top of it, on the board rising above his head: ‘Jesus Christ, King of the Jews.’³⁷² Christians bear Christ’s sign, humbly incomplete at its summit, as is appropriate for the children of a royal lineage who are not, however, the firstborn of the Father.

“What does the sign of *Tau* consist of? Where is it affixed? Oh, leave aside the materiality of forms when you immerse yourselves in knowledge of my kingdom, which is entirely spiritual!

“It will not be a material sign that will make you immune to the verdict enforced by the angels. *It will be written -- in letters invisible to the human eye, but quite visible to my angelic ministers -- upon your spirits, and it will be with your works -- that is, yourselves -- that during your lives you will engrave that sign, which makes you worthy to be saved for Life. Age, social position -- everything will be a nonentity in the sight of my angels. The only value is that sign. It will equalize kings and beggars, women and men, priests and warriors. All will bear it in the same way, if in their respective ways of life they have equally served God and obeyed the Law, and the reward will be the same -- to see and enjoy God eternally -- for all those who present themselves to Me with that splendid sign in their spirits.*

“Just to be very convinced of the need, of the duty, to give God all glory and all obedience engraves upon your souls that holy sign which makes you *mine* and which communicates to You a gentle likeness to Me as Savior, whereby you, like Me, grieve over the sins of men and the offense they cause

³⁷⁰ NB44, January 31, 1944, p. 125

³⁷¹ More specifically, from 9:1 to 11:21.

³⁷² ET: Matthew 27:37; Mark 15:26; Luke 23:38; John 19:19-22.

the Lord and the spiritual death they bring to their brothers and sisters, Charity is set inflame, and where charity is, there is salvation.

“Ezekiel says he heard the Lord order the man dressed in linen to take the burning coals which were between the cherubim and cast them upon the city to punish the blameworthy, beginning with those in the sanctuary, for the eyes of the Lord were weary of seeing the works of man, who thinks he can do evil with impunity because God lets him do it and deludes himself into believing that God does not see anything but the hypocritical outward appearance.

“No. With his infinite power, God reads the depths of your hearts -- O ministers of the sanctuary, O powerful of the earth, O spouses who sin, O sons and daughters who infringe upon the fourth commandment, O professionals who lie, O merchants who steal, O all of you that disobey my ten commandments.³⁷³ All veils are useless. Like your X-rays, which you are so proud of, the eyes of God probe, penetrate, pierce, read, and examine you *much more still*, as regards what you really are. Remind yourselves of this.

“The taking of the fire from between the cherubim to punish is not a symbolic action.

“In what are you at fault in your failings? In charity. I have already explained this to you when speaking of Purgatory and Hell,³⁷⁴ these two *realities*, which you think are fables. Charity towards God -- the first three commandments. Charity towards one’s neighbor -- the other seven.

“Oh, you will often hear Me come back to this topic! It would be better if there were not so much need to! It would mean that you are improving. You are instead plunging at meteoric speed towards anticharity.

“Your actions -- or, rather, your ‘bad actions’ -- regarding Charity are teeming in ever greater numbers like mushrooms emerging from the decomposition of a field. I observe this increasingly vast, intensive germination, this thriving of bad actions upon previous bad actions, as if from layers of putrescence there were to arise other increasingly unhealthy ones in succession. It is the atmosphere of sin and crime; it is the terrain of sin and crime; it is the layer of sin and crime in which you live, on which you settle and from which you arise that with its corruption nourishes each new layer, terrain, and atmosphere, increasingly corrupt and bloodthirsty. It is a perpetual movement; it is a revolving chaos of evil resembling certain pathogenic microbes which go on reproducing unceasingly and with growing virulence in contaminated blood.

“Now *it is proper for you to be punished for the sins against Charity with the fire of Charity, which you have rejected. It was Love. Now it is Punishment.* God’s gift is not to be disdained. You have disdained it. *The gift turns into punishment. God withdraws his Charity from you and leaves you in your an-*

³⁷³ ET: Exodus 20:1-17; Deuteronomy 5:1-22.

³⁷⁴ In the dictation on January 15.

ticharity. God hurls the Charity you have disparaged at you, like arrows, and punishes you. To call you still -- if not many of you, at least those who are capable of repentance and meditation.

“The cherubim -- that is, the symbol of supernatural Charity -- guard the embers of Charity in their midst. This action, which seems only symbol, conceals an actual truth.

“When you are summoned to the great Judgment, *those who lived in Charity will not be seen to be burned by the punitive fire*. Already burning on their own, through the holy love which filled them, they will not experience the bite of the inflamed divine punishments, but only the divine kiss, which will make them more beautiful. Whereas those who were flesh, flesh alone, on their flesh will bear the scars of the divine thunderbolts for the flesh, only the flesh, can be marked by such a scar, not the spirit, which is fire living in the Fire of the Lord.

“At this Judgment, at either side of the Judge who I am, my four Evangelists will be. They consumed themselves to take the law of Charity into hearts, and after death they continued their work with their Gospels, from which the world receives life, since to know Christ is to have Life in oneself. It is proper, then, for John, Luke, Matthew, and Mark to be with Me when *you are Judged for having or not having lived out the Gospel*.³⁷⁵ I am not a jealous, miserly God. I call you to share my glory. Shouldn't I, then, enable these faithful servants of mine, who spread my Word among you and subscribed to it with their blood and their afflictions, to take part in the glory of the Judgment?

“I will judge you, not in life, but for the life you have led, ‘at the boundary’ of life -- that is, in the place where life will cease so as to turn into eternity. I will judge you all, from the first to the last, definitively, for the good you have done or failed to do, and -- as you saw³⁷⁶ -- on rising again you will all be equal, poor disconnected bones, poor smoke recondensing into flesh, and you are now so proud of these things, almost as if those bones and that flesh were such as to be superior to God.

“As matter you are nothing. Only my spirit, infused into you, makes you something, and only by conserving within you my spirit -- becoming a soul in you -- do you deserve to be clothed in that unperishing light which will be the robe for your flesh, rendered eternally incorruptible.



“I will judge you, and, among yourselves, in yourselves, you will already judge yourselves, even before my appearance, for *you will see yourselves*. When the Earth, for which you are so greedy, is dead, and, along with it, all the tastes of the Earth, you will emerge from the drunkenness you sate yourselves with and *see*.

³⁷⁵ ET: Matthew 25:31-46.

³⁷⁶ In the vision on January 29.

“Oh, a tremendous ‘seeing’ for those who lived only by the Earth and its lies! Oh, a joyful ‘seeing’ for those who, beyond the Earth’s voices, ‘wanted’ to listen to the voices of Heaven and remained faithful to them.

“With the former dead and the latter alive, they will be darkness or light, according to their way of life, which is either with the Law or against the Law because of having replaced it with human or demoniac law, and they will go into the tremendous embrace of eternal Darkness or into the beatific embrace of the Triune Light, which burns in expectation of fusing you with Itself, O my holy ones, O those who love Me, for all Eternity.”

			
The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment

Commentary On Ezekiel, Chapter 47: The Importance Of Divine Grace³⁷⁷

Ezekiel, Chapter 47

Jesus says:

“I said, ‘[In whoever accepts Me] I am a spring of living water welling up for eternal life.’³⁷⁸

“Whether it is a man or a nation, blessed are those who receive Me and possess the prodigies of the Water of True Life in themselves. But there are now too few men who receive Me and even fewer nations. And the fruits of this rejecting -- or even just neglecting -- Jesus Christ are visible. They are visible in their full tragic appearance and are savored in their poisonous taste, which leads you to despair, to death, after having made you delirious with a fear of the future which nearly drives you mad. And you are right to become mad.

“If you saw the full truth of the advancing future, not one of you -- except someone supported by Satan -- would resist. I say, ‘Satan,’ for you do not think of seeking support in Christ. On the contrary, the more you need merciful support, a light in the darkness, or a word to console and guide you, the more you turn your hostile gaze to these things, accusing God and directing towards Him the antipathy which you ought to direct towards those who are the cause of so much evil: Satan and your wicked passions.

“Observe what you have already become, and *tremble, tremble*, considering what you will become. Worse than the arid salt sands, in which every form of life is impossible and which are found in the most desolate parts of deserts -- a desolation lacking even the poor robe extending over the barrenness of deserts, which, with its frail grass, thorny bushes, and the few animals dwell-

³⁷⁷ NB44, February 6, 1944, p. 135

³⁷⁸ ET: John 4:13-14.

ing there, bestows on that solitude a life of flights, chirps, and darts and shows that this patch of land is not dust which has been dead for centuries -- worse than these salty areas, where nothing lives and no seed can sink its roots in and no bird can halt its flight and no reptile can pause on the ground or even slide its shiny skin over it in swift motion, *you will become, are becoming, and have already become like this to a great extent because you have rejected the Christ, the Water bringing fecundity.*

“From my heaven, I, the Head of the Mystical Body composed of all Christians, pour forth my waves of life and from my Church shed them upon the world. *I would shed them. But the world erects embankments and dikes and prevents Me from pouring Myself forth; the world shoves these dikes against the Church to engulf her, to bury her -- and Me, along with her.* It is a struggle with no respite. *It is the true War, the one from which all the wars in the whole of mankind in the Christian era come. The struggle against Christ.*

“Be aware of this: it is not necessary to engage in major persecutions or schisms to fight against Christ. Even the small, individual, interior struggle by each of you against my Law and the hidden, crafty struggle by the government of a country against the voice of Catholic Rome, against the voice speaking in my name from the lips of my Vicar and calling men -- especially leaders -- to the law of honesty, duty, and love are fights against Christ. They are the guerrillas. You are so familiar with the terminology of warfare that you understand Me if I characterize them in this way. They are the guerrillas. The real assaults, the major advances, the imposing maneuvers, and the cruel massacres then originate from them.

“*Satan is the Captain of this army, which began in Jerusalem, within the Synedrium, in the caste of the Pharisees, scribes, and Sadducees, which found its standardbearer in Judas, which has become increasingly numerous in the course of centuries of antiChristian persecutions, which, like an avalanche, has become laden with ever-new elements, with schisms, demagogic doctrines, political parties, and new forms of government, and which will culminate in the Antichrist, who against my torrent of Grace will set a torrent of cruelty and blood in which you will wallow and fall, and only a few will fall as holy victims invoking Christ. Most will fall like slaughtered beasts, sated and fattened with vices, disturbed, poisoned, and bedeviled by accursed doctrines, devils in their blaspheming words, negating minds, and abjuring hearts.*

“Oh, Water of Divine Grace, that on passing would have brought life, that would have purified and nourished the sands, that would have removed saltiness and corruption from the waves with which you would have mingled, enabling the former to be a cradle for strong trees laden with fruits of every kind and the latter to be a dwelling place for fish of every kind! O flowering language

of my Prophet!³⁷⁹ The purifying water is the Water issuing forth from my Heart, opened out of love for mankind. It brings with it the essence of this divine love, in contact with which every impurity falls, as if through a blessed filter.

“Your humanity filtered through mine! And can there be a greater poem of love than this -- of a God who becomes man to save all mankind through Himself?”

“The sands: souls, as numerous as the grains of sand, rendered fertile, good, and capable of yielding a tree of life by contact with Me, fusion with Me.

“And, again, the plants: souls, once more, that, because they live on land watered by Grace, thrive to the point of touching Heaven and bearing upon themselves fruits of every kind -- that is, all the virtues.

“The waters, which were bitter and which Grace makes healthy in such fashion that numerous fish can flourish in them: good works.

“Comprehend the language of my Prophet. It is so transparent when observed with eyes rendered clear by the love of God. And, furthermore, do not wish to be putrid swamps and low-lying shores, where the acridity of salt -- that is, evil -- stagnates and where corruption -- that is, the greatest evil -- reigns. For if the evil of slight charity, lukewarmness, and negligence is salt hindering life for good works, the corruption of the great evil -- that is, the seven vices -- of anti-Christianity negates even the swift passing of a good thought.

“Do not descend to corruption. Try to climb back up from your base-ness. Rise again towards the fount of God. Mingle with it. Ever advancing towards Me, have it submerge you, impose itself on you, and annul your poor selves under its great power for Redemption and make you holy, blessed, and happy. Even in this life, children, where there is already so much unhappiness, where, in order to weep, it is not necessary to add on the unhappiness of being against Christ, provoking so many individual and collective ruins.

“Listen to the Voice calling you. Listen to the voice of the One who loves you. There is not; no, there is not anyone else who loves you as your God does, and there is no one else who utters words for you truer than mine. Open yourselves to receive them. Open yourselves to Grace. It comes to heal your maladies; it comes to dry your tears. It comes... and waits on the threshold for you to say, ‘Come in,’ in order to rush into you with all its graces of peace, tranquillity, salvation, and, in short, eternal life, for the sum of all joy resides therein.”

I remark that I have written after a *black* day of desolation, during which it seemed to me that heaven and earth were nothing but a single punishment for me. For whose sake am I suffering like this? Jesus does not tell me. But He pours his word into me to introduce a balm into my chalice today.

³⁷⁹ ET: Ezechiel, as mentioned just before the dictation.

Commentary on Psalm 93

Jesus says:

“How often man, especially in these times, asks, ‘Why, Lord, don’t You intervene to punish? Give the proud, the wicked, what they deserve. If You are just, how can You let the wicked triumph and your faithful suffer?’

“Children, I shall remind you of some words in the Gospel: ‘Before removing the splinter from your brother’s eye, take the beam out of your own.’³⁸¹

“It is true that you are tormented by the ‘great sinners.’ But not even you are without sin. Your sins, much smaller than the enormous ones of the corruptors of the world, have continually been building up until provoking God’s indignation.

“You must consider that God, Perfection and Justice, judges the great and the small, and He is repelled by the great sin of the great and the lesser sin of the small. If, then, He were to intervene to punish the great, as you implore, why is it not licit for Him to punish you for your repeated and numerous sins?

“They are the sins of whole nations. Their citizens have forgotten God and replaced Him with numberless other gods, ranging from a ‘man’ to an idea, from an idea to a set of moral -- that is, amoral -- habits, among which there is not one that is approved by God.

“What has happened, then? What happens with a landslide involving sand. There are places on the earth where, because of a special structure and composition of the terrain, sands transported slowly but continually by the winds build up at one specific point. Centuries are required, but the time comes when the build-up is such that it can no longer be supported by that furrow in the earth, and it shakes it off, provoking catastrophes which swallow up towns and sometimes whole cities.

“If man were careful, he would take steps to counterbalance the work of the winds with his own work and sweep away these deposits with a tenacity equal to that of the elements. He does not pay attention, however, but, rather, is glad that they bring layers of earth where there was previously rock or cover an estuary with sand, increasing the area which may be cultivated; and he exploits

³⁸⁰ NB44, February 26, 1944, p. 168

³⁸¹ Matthew 7:3-5; Luke 6:41-42.

the pseudogift of the treacherous wind and the deceitful current, turning it into a source of gain for the sake of greater pleasure and success, perhaps to the detriment of the nearest town.

“Take a look at that grain of dust? Why, of course not! What harm can it do? So much harm in its minuteness, which becomes large through the cooperation of numberless other minor factors, that it provokes a catastrophe. There is nothing smaller than a grain of sand. But put millions and billions of them together and then have them plunge down, and you see what a horrible death they cause.

“What is that defect? That amoral habit? Nothing -- a trifle. A serious sin? Why, no! A venial sin? Not even that! A single imperfection due to the fast pace of life today, the pressures of a set of circumstances. You tell yourselves, ‘We are no longer in the middle ages. One has got to be up-to-date. With broader views. I mustn’t think God is always there with a pen and paper to note down my omissions, my acts of self-seeking, and my compromises. Today I preferred to devote myself to a business deal rather than go to Sunday Mass or even engage in those ten minutes of conversation with God which constitute morning or evening prayer. But if I had not taken advantage of this morning, I would not have had another chance to meet that customer or that professional; why, if I had wasted those ten minutes, I would have missed the occasion to arrive on time. Tomorrow...’

“Ten minutes! You were snuggling in bed for half an hour and arguing with your wife and servants for another half hour almost an hour preening yourself like the effete. And then you don’t find ten minutes for your God. You have six days to deal with business affairs, and you dawdle about without bringing anything to a close. Only on Sunday morning do you find it urgently necessary to do those things. But that professional or customer is free only on Sunday! Why? If no one were available because of his bad habits, he would have to decide to devote himself to business on the other six days.

“Both of you are amoral and have no concern for God. That’s all there is to it.

“And, similarly: ‘What’s so bad about my little calumny? It isn’t even calumny -- it’s gossip. Not even that -- it’s a joke told behind Tom’s and Dick’s back, just for a laugh, to show that one is well informed, to get into the good graces of superiors and the influential. But you really esteem that person at heart. You know -- you’ve got to handle bosses with kid gloves to win their protection and good jobs. You know -- it’s a dog-eat-dog world, and if I, who have a family with a lot of needs, occupy your post, all the better. Anyway, you, friend, are able to live on a more modest scale.’

“And you thus steal someone’s reputation and job. You are thieves, O hypocrites, to fulfill your requirements and satisfy the whims of family epicureanism and social or female vanity.

“And, similarly: ‘What’s so bad about courting that woman a bit or her letting herself be wooed? It means taking the monotony out of life. We later go back to being just friends, as before. Matters with no consequences. We mustn’t be Puritans.’

“You are adulterers, O hypocrites. And you sometimes are in the sight of your children, who seem not to see, but who see everything, and whom you scandalize and force into judging you.

“‘What’s so bad about becoming emancipated from one’s parents or husband, being independent, leading one’s life as one pleases? What does it matter if marriage is rendered an asset in having a wife as a nurse and servant or a husband as someone who works for our needs and whims, but not a mission of procreation and child-rearing? It is fine for children not to arrive or to arrive in small numbers. They are a cause for concern, an expense, and a source of acrimony among relatives and among the very children who have preceded them. No more children after one or two who have really insisted on being born -- who knows how. And once they have been born, we won’t go wearing ourselves out over them -- a wet nurse, baby sitters, a governess, and boarding school.’ That’s the way you talk.

“You are assassins, O hypocrites. You suppress lives or souls. For, you must realize, no matter how good a boarding school is or how perfect a governess is, they are never a mother, a father, and a family. How can those children, who have been the children of everyone except you, love you with the great love which continues to remain united to your interior as if it were rooted in you? How can those children understand you if you are strangers to them, and they to you? What society can emerge from peoples in which the first form of society, the family, is an arid, dead, dismembered entity? A state of anarchy in which each thinks of himself, even if he does not think of harming the others?

“And that money you save in denying birth to a child -- what do you think it means to your pocketbook? Woodworm destroying the substance, for what you do not spend on a child is spent three times over on amusements and useless, harmful luxuries. And why do you get married, then, if you don’t want to have children? What do you reduce the marriage bed to? Respect for my ‘spokesman’ leads Me to silence my reply. Tell yourselves the answer, unworthy ones.

“They are so many little matters, if compared to the crimes of the great sinners. But they provoke the avalanche. The one submerging you.

“I have already stated³⁸² this: *‘If the great had been faced with (I don’t speak of opposition, but of being faced with) a healthy people in a moral, Christian sense, solidly obedient to the law of God and of human morality as well, they could not have arrived at their crimes. Their Satanism would have broken*

³⁸² See July 28, in *The Notebooks*. 1943.

like a glass sword against a block of granite and been pulverized. And God would have blessed and protected you.

“But you have admired the major criminals, in whom you saw that perfection in crime which you could not reach, that perfection in amorality which you liked because it justified your own. You said, ‘If he, whom we admire, acts like this, I, too, can act this way.’ You said, ‘If God protects him, who is like this, He will also protect me, who am much less.’

“O fools! Why, do you really think that I protect one who, to succeed and manage to make someone else an accomplice so as to triumph by any means, ‘has slain the widow and the guest and slaughtered orphans?’ (verse 6) One who has betrayed the trust of others? One who has lied to whole peoples? One who has not hesitated to push whole nations to disaster? But I see and hear and note. And it is my sorrow not to be able to intervene, for when I intervene, you frustrate the intervention with your wickedness. You are so poisoned that you turn a good into an evil.

“I shall now speak to you as if you were all upright in heart -- all of you, even those who are not upright. I want to invite you once more.

“My people, come to the Lord. I, the Lord, will not reject the people that comes to Me, and, if it remains close to Me, I shall provide for it ‘until justice becomes judgment -- that is, until time comes to an end and eternity begins’ (verse 15). I shall open my arms to shield those who believe in Me and invoke Me with a contrite heart trusting in my mercy, and ‘I shall defend them from those hunting down the just and condemning innocent blood’ (verse 21). There are few of this kind on earth, but for the sake of those few I shall still grant grace.

“But -- and it is your God who is imploring you -- come back to Me. Please come back to Me. Free yourselves individually from your sins of lack of faith, moral disobedience, and sevenfold vice, and I shall then free the collectivity from its scourges.”

The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment

Commentary On Isaiah: The Father's Words On Jesus As The Light Sent Into The World³⁸³

Isaiah 7:10-16

Jesus³⁸⁴ says:

³⁸³ NB44, March 25, 1944, p. 235

³⁸⁴ It is, however, the Eternal Father who speaks, as is stated at the end of the dictation.

“What my son of old, out of holy fear of God, prudently did not want to do, resisting the temptation I had sent him as a trial, is what you are now requesting, not because of a temptation coming from Me, but through a regurgitation of your rebellious Spirit guided by the forces of Evil, instigated by your Enemy, whom you love more than you love Me, your Most High Lord, above whom there is no other.

“You ask for a sign. You ask for it with your impure heart and your blasphemous lips. And you thus request it in a way that is derision of my power, negation of my existence. You badger Me to show Myself with a sign because you doubt my existence.

“In the time of my Son, the Jews also badgered Him to give them a sign about his Nature,³⁸⁵ for they denied in their hearts that He was the Son of God. And the only sign which made them aware of their decide was the one that came after the death of my Word. An unavoidable punishment for those who were deaf and blind to the prodigies and words of my Christ.

“You do not receive a sign from your God because I do not manifest Myself to those who deny Me. You instead receive the multiple signs of the one you worship as slaves. He, the Enemy, multiplies his signs, and you, now close to the time of worship of the apocalyptic Beast,³⁸⁶ remain seduced by them and consider that the creator of such signs is greater than I, is the only one that exists. You wonder, ‘Who is God? Who is He?’ And inside yourselves, to justify your acts of wickedness, you reply, ‘God does not exist.’

“I am who I am.³⁸⁷ I am so superior to you that no manifestation of mine would now be understood by the world, which has plunged into the most terrible darkness and foolishness. What you think is progress is your regression to the twilight of the early times, when men, having lost God and his Paradise, were only slightly superior to beasts and pushed their corruption to such a point that I decided to exterminate the race, at which I was indignant.³⁸⁸

“The end will be like the beginning. The circle closes by joining the two dark stumps to each other. The new flood -- that is, God’s wrath -- will come in another form. But it will still be wrath. Faithful to my word,³⁸⁹ I will

This entry is preceded in the Italian edition by a vision of the resurrection of Lazarus (March 23), which was written again in definitive form in 1946 for the life of Christ. See note 148 [*Entries for February 3 and February 4, involving, respectively, “The Baptism of Jesus at the Jordan” and a commentary on this episode, have been omitted here and are included in the Gospel cycle on the First Year of the Public Life.*] for references to the Italian edition of *The Notebooks*.

³⁸⁵ Matthew 16:1-4; Mark 8:11-13; Luke 11:29-32.

³⁸⁶ Revelation 13:1-18.

³⁸⁷ ET: Exodus 3:14.

³⁸⁸ ET: Genesis 6:7.

³⁸⁹ ET: Genesis 9:11.

not send the flood again. *But I will let the Satanic forces send the flood of the Satanic acts of cruelty.*

“You have received the Light. I sent you my Light, so that the parabola of humanity would be illuminated by It. I sent It so that it could not be said that I wanted to keep you in the twilight of expectation. If you had welcomed It, *the whole other part of the circle which will join together man’s way*, from his beginning to his end, *would have been illuminated by the Light of God, and humanity would have been enwrapped in this Light of salvation, which would have led you without shocks and pains into the City of Eternal Light.*

“But you have rejected the Light. And It shone at the summit of the circle and then remained increasingly distant from you, that have descended by the other way, not saying to It, ‘Lord, remain with us, for the evening of the ages is falling and we do not want to perish without your Light.’ As in the course of the day, you men came to meet the Light, received It, and then returned to the darkness. It, my Light, my Word, has remained as the Sun set in his Heaven, where He returned after, *not death, but your rejection of Him* sent Him back.

“It, my Light, my Word, has remained the Teacher for those few who love Him and have welcomed his Light into themselves. And no darkness can extinguish It, for they defend this Light, their love, even at the cost of their lives. Because of this faithful love of theirs they shall have Life in Me, for they already possess my Emmanuel and thus have God with them already. That Emmanuel whom the Virgin, joined to Me, conceived and gave birth to. The only sign given by God to the house of David, to the kingdom of Judah, to make it sure of its duration, which would have been eternal if my people had not rejected my Emmanuel.

“In the prophecy of my prophet it is stated, ‘He will have butter and honey as food until he is able to reject evil and choose good.’³⁹⁰

“By his wisdom, enduring in Him even in his condition as Man, in which his divine Nature had been annihilated, under the exigency of a love so great as to be incomprehensible for you -- a love which spurred Him to humiliate Himself, the Infinite, in the circumscribed wretchedness of mortal flesh -- He was always able to distinguish between Good and Evil. He did not need years to arrive at the possession of reason and the faculty of discernment. And if, so as not to violate order, He wanted to follow the common stages of human life under that appearance of an infant’s incapacity, of the semi-incapacity of a child, He possessed in concealment the treasures of his infinite Wisdom.

“But that prophetic word means that He would feed on humility and concealment until the moment in which, when the time came, He would become the Teacher of Israel, the Teacher of the world. My testimony, the Defender of the Father’s cause and, like a flame free from concealment, He would shine in

³⁹⁰ Isaiah 7:15.

the power of his Light and his Messianic Nature, showing gentleness to the good and severity to the wicked, shaking, watering, and fecundating hearts, and giving to man -- not to Himself, for He had no need of that gift -- discernment to distinguish between Good and Evil, removing every doubt, every nebulosity in this regard.

“He came to perfect the Law and make it clear for you with his teaching and capable of being followed with his example. He came and loved Good and rejected Evil so much that He agreed to die so that Good would triumph in the world and in hearts and Evil would be defeated by his divine Blood.

“No more butter and honey for my Christ when He arrived at manhood. But vinegar and gall. Vinegar and gall in the final hour, preceded by the metaphorical vinegar and gall of three years of public life continually combatted by his enemies and rendered difficult by the burdensomeness of his friends and disciples.

“The lips of my Christ are still afflicted by the gall and vinegar of this insolent race. And the Father is saddened over the pain of his Son. And his affliction turns into wrath towards you, men who no longer have a spirit faithful to your God. The sacrifice which is repeated on the altars of the earth is no longer salvation for you. But as from Golgotha the Blood of my Son fell on his slayers, crying out his pain to Me and provoking my punishment, so now it falls upon you -- hypocrites and blasphemers, deniers and debauchees, haters of God and of man, your brother -- and marks you with blood and fire for condemnation.

“The Earth howls like a creature afraid of the monsters inhabiting it; the Universe trembles with horror at the sight of the crimes covering the Earth. I, your God, burn with divine wrath at your corruption in flesh, mind, and spirit. Neither the mercy of the Savior nor that of the Virgin and the Saints appease my wrath with their prayer.

“Truly, as in the times of Moses, I say, *‘I will erase those who have sinned against Me from my Book, and if I were to enter into your midst just once, I would exterminate you.’*³⁹¹ Truly, I say that *only to my remaining children do I speak as a friend, for by their faithfulness they have found grace in my sight, and I will show them my Good and have mercy on them.* And even more benign than with my servant Moses, for my most holy Son has brought you his benignity and established the Kingdom of Benignity, without waiting for the day you come to Heaven, *I will make the Face of my Christ shine in you,* O my faithful children who adore Me with holy respect and with filial love.

“Love It, for whoever loves It loves Me. Love It, for it is your salvation. The Star did not appear only for Jacob.³⁹² *But for all those who love God with all their strength.* And Christ the Star, after the earthly struggles, will lead them

³⁹¹ Exodus 32:33-34.

³⁹² Numbers 24:17.

to Me in Heaven, where your place is ready -- O you blessed ones, for whom my Word did not take on Flesh in vain, and my Christ did not die to no purpose.”

After so long I have heard the Father’s voice again. I thought it was Jesus, who since this morning had made me feel He had something to say about this passage from Isaiah, not commented on in November, when the Master commented on the Prophets for me.³⁹³ It was, however, the Eternal Father. It has brought me blessedness, though the dictation is severe as regards mankind in general.

May the Father increase my love for Him more and more so that I, too, may reach Heaven.

After having written this dictation, I began to rest. It was then 2 a.m. on the 26th. I saw the Mother again, not in a vision but as if She were alive in my room. It had been so long since I had seen Her that way, for me alone, and I was so saddened by that. I fell asleep, feeling Her close to me, just like a mother, and I woke up still smiling at the sweet presence, which continues here.

How beautiful She is! More and more beautiful, the more one looks at Her and loves Her!

The Forerunners	Antichrist’s Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment
-----------------	--------------------	-------------	--------------

Jesus’ Mercy On The Saints In Holding Back The Father’s Justice³⁹⁴

Easter Day in the Evening

Jesus speaks, and He speaks to me so painfully, and it is such a sad subject that I am writing it separately.³⁹⁵

Jesus says:

“Last year I said to you³⁹⁶ -- and it was the first dictation -- ‘The Father is weary, and to cause the human race to perish He will let the punishments of Hell be unleashed.’ I said -- it was Good Friday -- ‘I would like to come a second time to die to save them from an even more atrocious death... But the Father

³⁹³ See *The Notebooks. 1943.*

³⁹⁴ *NB44, April 9, 1944, p. 262*

³⁹⁵ The dictation was in fact written on separate sheets which were later attached to the notebook.

³⁹⁶ See April 23 in *The Notebooks. 1943.*

does not allow this... He knows it would be useless... Oh, if only men were still able to turn to Me, who am salvation!

“I refer you to all my dictations preceding the most recent ones. I have spoken by employing the prophecies of the Holy Book, explaining them to you, applying them to the present times, and if I was later silent on this note, it was because I understood that it was useless for the purposes of Good and dangerous, for those divine words could become a weapon for diabolical torture against my servants who heard, repeated, disseminated, and accepted them. But my Thought, even if not expressed by the Word, is this *and does not change*.

“Maria, I told you at the end of last May, ‘As regards the future... What do you want to know, poor soul?’ (The dictation on May 31, 1943) ‘Thank my Mercy, which, for the time being, in large measure conceals from you the truth about the future.’³⁹⁷ Poor, poor soul!

“On another occasion, I said, ‘You would like Me to appear and show Myself... But, even if I showed Myself, where is that residue of faith and respect in hearts which would make them bend with their faces to the ground to ask Me for forgiveness and mercy?’ (Dictation on June 5, 1943).³⁹⁸

“Even now you ask Me for a sign of power, which, since it is the Power of a Holy One -- of the Holy of *holies* -- *ought to be inexorable, tremendous punishment of an incalculable number of people, for* -- I repeat what I have said a thousand times³⁹⁹ -- *the great sinners exist because the mass is all more or less guilty of the same sins as they are.*⁴⁰⁰

“But -- and I say this to you, poor soul, to whom I have granted the vision of Me as triumphant⁴⁰¹ to infuse strength into your being, weakened in your dying flesh and desolate in spirit because of the trial you have endured and the horrors surrounding you -- I *cannot* give this sign. Not because God has lost his capacity to act. *Nothing is impossible for Me as God. But it is the hour of the power of Darkness. And men have spontaneously wanted it. The kingdom of Evil is already established. Anything I were to do would be rendered null by man’s will. Any Good would be destroyed by Evil.*

“I impotently witness all humanity’s race towards spiritual death. There is no gift, benefit, call, or punishment by Me that will serve to arrest this spontaneous shipwreck in Satan of mankind, redeemed by Me. Like an enraged bull, humanity is demolishing everything: reason, morality, and faith, and it is heading for a crash against what slays it. The profaning hand of man *rises up*

³⁹⁷ ET: In a passage not quoted in this book (Q43:13).

³⁹⁸ [See that date herein.]

³⁹⁹ ET: The latest time had been March 28, 1944 (Q44:296), in a passage not quoted in this book.

⁴⁰⁰ See the section, **Commentary on Psalm 93**, above, February 26, 1944.

⁴⁰¹ ET: During a January 10, 1944 apparition described in Q44:43 but not in this book

for a new crime which does not deserve forgiveness. And the Father does not want to forgive. He lets you perish as you have wanted to.

“The only thing I can do and do -- and I do it out of mercy on the saints, who, as rare as flowers in the desert, still pray; *they pray*, not making an avowal of custom and hypocrisy -- is to hold back the wrath of my Father, who, weary of the crimes of a race for which my Blood has been shed to no avail, goes on wanting and wanting to apply Justice to you. And justice, since you are blame-worthy, would mean tremendous punishments which my Mercy does not want to be added to those you cause yourselves on your own.

“Maria, I know I am wounding and demoralizing you. You had hoped for joy from my Easter. Roses after the thorns. Smiles after the tears. *You are a victim.* The thorns and tears remain even in the time of Easter, for it is necessary to stay on the cross for the sake of this perverse humanity.

“I ask you to remain on the cross for Me. To save the world has been my dream. To save souls, my joy. The world is lost for God, but souls can still be saved -- those who still have a soul, languishing, but alive. I ask you for charity in their regard. It is Jesus, a beggar for love in his role as the glorious Risen One, who asks you for this offering of souls so that his Kingdom will still have subjects.

“Go in peace.”

Easter Sunday

The Holy Spirit says:

“I am the Consoler. I console those who are demoralized by consternation and tortured by the present. I am the One who nurses and sweetens the bitterness of the Word that speaks the truth, which is quite bitter today.

“On this day, which is the triumph of Charity, as Christmas is its highest manifestation -- for Christmas is the beginning of the Redemption, which is Charity at work, whereas Easter is the fulfilled Redemption, the Victory of Life over Death, through Love sublimely elevated into voluntary holocaust to give you Life, and the act by which it was possible for Me to descend into you, resanctified by the Blood of God the Son, to reunite you to God the Father with the Charity without which God cannot be in you or you in God -- I come to say to you, ‘Go on trusting.’ Even if everything seems lost, trust. Even if the abyss of Evil launches its demons forth to torture the Earth and fecundate it to beget the Antichrist and the abyss of the Heavens seems to close by the decree of the Father, from whom We proceed, We, the Word and the Spirit, are still working and loving to save and defend you. I as Charity and the Word as Charity, I as Sanctification and the Word as Redemption do not cease -- the Latter, to pour forth the merits of his Blood, and the Former, the charisms of his power for your good.

“Trust. Love has always won out.”

...⁴⁰²

The Forerunners

Antichrist's Reign

Peace/Truce

End/Judgment

Encouragement For Christ's "Voices"⁴⁰³

Jesus says:

“I have prepared you to meditate on my Glory. Tomorrow⁴⁰⁴ the Church celebrates it. But I want my little John⁴⁰⁵ to see it in its truth to understand it better.⁴⁰⁶ I do not choose you only to know the sadness of your Master and his sorrows. *Those able to remain with Me in pain must share with Me in joy.* I want you, before your Jesus, who shows Himself to you, to have the same sentiments of humility and repentance as my apostles.⁴⁰⁷

“Never pride. You would be punished by losing Me. Constant remembrance of who I am and who you are. Constant awareness of your faults and my perfection in order to have a heart washed by contrition. But at the same time great trust in Me. I said, ‘Do not fear. Rise up. Let us go. Let us go among men because I have come to be with them. Be holy, strong, and faithful through the memory of this hour.’ I say this to you as well, and to all my beloved ones among men, those who possess Me in a special way.

“Have no fear of Me. I show Myself to elevate you, not to burn you to ashes. Rise up: let the joy of the gift give you vigor and not dull you in the sopor of quietism in thinking you are already saved because I have shown you Heaven. Let us go together among men. I have invited you to superhuman works with superhuman visions and lessons so that you can be of greater help to Me. I associate you with my work.

“But I have known and know no rest. For Evil never rests, and Good must always be active to cancel out the work of the Enemy as much as possible. We shall rest when the Time is fulfilled. One must now proceed tirelessly, work constantly, and consume oneself indefatigably for the harvest of God. Let con-

⁴⁰² Eight pages of Maria's descriptions of her agonies beginning on Easter and lasting until April 30 are omitted.

⁴⁰³ NB44, August 5, 1944, p. 499

⁴⁰⁴ August 6, Feast of the Transfiguration.

⁴⁰⁵ See Note 190 [“Little John” is the nickname which Jesus gave Maria to express the fact that in some respects her love for Jesus and her mission were not unlike those of St. John the Apostle and Evangelist.].

⁴⁰⁶ ET: Jesus did show Valtorta a vision of His Transfiguration on the same day. This vision is found in *The Poem of the Man-God*, vol.3, pp. 406-411.

⁴⁰⁷ ET: Matthew 17:1-8; Mark 9:2-8; Luke 9:28-36.

tinuous contact with Me sanctify you, my ongoing teaching fortify you, and my special love make you faithful in the face of every trap.

“Do not be like the rabbis of old, who taught Revelation and then did not believe in it to the point of not recognizing the signs of the times and the messengers of God. Recognize the forerunners of Christ in his second coming, *for the forces of the Antichrist are marching*, and, while reserving the measure I have imposed on Myself -- for I know you drink in certain truths not out of a supernatural spirit, but with the thirst of human curiosity -- *I tell you in truth that what many will think is a victory over the Antichrist, the peace which is now near,*⁴⁰⁸ *will be only a pause to give the Enemy of Christ time to recover his strength, heal his wounds, and gather together his army for a crueller battle.*

“You that are the ‘voices’ of your Jesus, the Faithful and Truthful One who judges and combats with justice and will be the Victor over the Beast and his servants and prophets -- recognize *your Good and always follow Him. Let no deceitful appearance seduce you and no persecution terrify you. Let your ‘voice’ say my words. Let your lives be for this work.*

“*And if, on earth, you have the destiny common to Christ, his Forerunner, and Elijah,*⁴⁰⁹ *a bloody destiny or one tormented by moral tortures, smile at your future, certain lot, which you will share with Christ, his Forerunner, and his Prophet.* The same in work, pain, and glory. Here, I am the Teacher and Example. There, I am the reward and King. To possess Me will be your blessedness. It will be to forget pain. It will be what every revelation is still insufficient to make you understand, for the joy of the future life is too superior to the possibilities for imagining of the creature still joined to the flesh.”

The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment

The Sacrifices Maintaining The World's Existence⁴¹⁰

Jesus says:

“The end of the vision⁴¹¹ could be the dictation given for all. For now, as twenty centuries ago, I say those words to all. But there are too many pharisees who do *not* want to receive them.

⁴⁰⁸ A probable reference to the conclusion of the second world war.

⁴⁰⁹ For the Forerunner: Matthew 14:3-11; Mark 6:17-28; Luke 9:9. For Elijah: 2 Kings 2:1-14 [*or in some versions, 3 Kings 17:1 to 4 Kings 2:18.*].

⁴¹⁰ NB44, September 12, 1944, p. 546

⁴¹¹ See note 686 [*There follows the episode involving “Ishmael Ben Fabi,” written on September 11 and included in the cycle on The Third Year of the Public Life.*].

“The world moves towards *its* peace, which is not *my* peace. For mine is a peace of holiness and justice. The world’s, of tyranny and corruption. What has happened and is happening is horrendous, isn’t it?”

“I refer you to my first dictations. I have always said⁴¹² that this was not a war of peoples. But of Satan against God. One of the wars preparing for the advent of the Antichrist, whose precursors they now are. I have always said that Satan waged war against spirits through the horrors inflicted on bodies and that many would yield because the spirits of men, no longer nourished with grace and faith, are very weak in the face of evil. I said that my angels, through the sacrifice of the good, would fight to impede a general scything in the human race by the demons.

“In the particular case of the Italians, I said that if they proved unable to use the first grace uprightly and, after having worshipped someone less than a [*sic*] idol as a god and having served him with a beastly servility, went on to using his own cruel methods, punishment would descend. For a grace deserves an effort towards goodness and not towards iniquity on man’s part, And you have enjoyed, cursed, hated, and become Judases towards your little master and his most intimate associates. Yesterday, only yesterday, prostrated as slaves, and today already, with your fists clenched and cursing and with rapacious claws to seize what yesterday it pained you to see in the possession of others. I said that this punishment would be to experience horror throughout the country. A horror which, if you had considered it among yourselves, you would have believed to be a nightmare from a fever. Do you see that it’s true? But will you correct yourselves?”

“The Pharisees, scribes, and Sadducees in my time got firsthand proof of the fruit of their repeated sins. Israel, disheartened, dominated, and dispersed, spoke in a tearful voice, saying, ‘This is the punishment for not being *true* sons of God.’⁴¹³ And yet none of the leaders -- very rarely, one of the leaders -- was converted to Me. Invitations and rebukes, sweetness and severity, condescension and intransigence, smiles and dejection, promptness in working a miracle or insensitivity in the face of their desire for a miracle -- I used everything to rouse them and persuade them. I obtained nothing but their deepest, their most complete trafficking with Satan, to the point of arriving at trampling on the prophets and denying that I was the Christ, as events manifested, confirming the prophecies, and killing the Christ, the Word of God.

“Now the same thing is happening. In the great and the small, socially or individually, ninety percent live like the Pharisees at that time and act with the same methods. Self-interest, pride, hardness of heart, lust, avarice, gluttony, and all forms of selfishness are the bases for your lives and the code for your

⁴¹² Especially on May 16, but also in certain passages in *The Notebooks*. 1943.

⁴¹³ As in Lamentations 5.

actions. Do not be horrified at the hardness of Ishmael.⁴¹⁴ You, too, do the same with those who are no longer of use to you. Charity and charity are dead in you. You love only yourselves.

“But now I tell you: Charity, which you do not want, is being poured precisely on those you disdain, abandon, and mock, perhaps after having exploited them. They are those who live only for Charity and, loving God more than themselves, love you more than themselves. They love you as God loves, coming to your aid in your souls and in material things. You know nothing, understand nothing, and ask yourselves nothing. But God knows, sees, and comprehends without asking. He knows why supreme mercy is still upon you. Because of them, these charitable ones, who love Me and love you and make love the purpose of their lives. Not for the sake of who you are, but to do something pleasing to Me.

“Do you know how many tears, sorrows, penances, and sacrifices are the price of your existence? You think you have life through the mother who generated you and the father who has given you bread. Yes, if you calculate by the measure of the beasts, you have life through them. But Life, *true* Life, lasts for you *to give you time to be converted*, through their work. And many of you do not die eternally because these heroes, unknown to you, placing themselves between you and God, with their arms upraised, ward off the divine punishments and transfuse into you a little of that spiritual blood, drained out of you by moral illnesses, which circulates in the great Mystical Body and which is the blood of grace. But it is through the sieve of their sacrificed *self* that this good filters through to you wicked ones.

“A severe dictation. I am pained over it for the sake of my little John [*Maria Valtorta*]. But I shall comfort him with a caress. This one: even if they all should abandon you, I will remain. Even if they all should hate you, I will remain. Do you see how I come to your aid even materially with physical strength when the time comes? You are in my hands, a beloved, precious instrument. Do not be afraid.

“Live *in* and *for* your mission. Act like the children who are given a toy displaying wonderful scenes when they press their eyes against the sights, but which is nothing but a black box if they disengage their gaze. Remain with your eyes fixed on Me and your mission. The world is around you. *It must remain around you*. But *not* within you. Within is *my* world. Give the world, the poor, ignorant, blind world, the teachings and lights coming to you from *my* world. If only you could see how much Heaven is around your work...!

“Ah, how happy you will be when you realize you are in my world forever and have come there, from the poor world, without even realizing, pass-

⁴¹⁴ See note 686 [*Repeated in footnote 415 above.*].

ing from a vision to reality, like a child dreaming of his mother and waking up with his mother clasping him to her heart. I will do this with you.⁴¹⁵

“Be good, patient, and charitable, and do not fear. I give you my peace. I give you rivers of it, today, the Name of Mary,⁴¹⁶ and may it be the gift of grace for little John.”

The Forerunners

Antichrist's Reign

Peace/Truce

End/Judgment

59. The Demoniac Of Capernaum Cured In The Synagogue.⁴¹⁷

...⁴¹⁸

A bearded sumptuously dressed Israelite stands up to contradict Him. He says: «Master, what You have stated appears to be in contrast with what is said in the sacred book of Maccabees, glory of Israel. It is said there: “Indeed when evildoers are not left for long to their own devices but incur swift retribution, it is a sign of great benevolence. In the case of the other nations, the Lord waits patiently for them to obtain the full measure of their sins, before He punishes them.” According to what You said, instead, the Most High would appear to be very slow in punishing us, waiting, as for the other nations, the time of Judgment, when the measure of sins is full. Events, indeed, give You the lie. Israel is punished as stated by the historian of the Maccabees. But if what You say is correct, is there no conflict between Your doctrine and the sentence I have quoted? »

«I do not know who you are, but I will give you My answer, whoever you are. There is no conflict in the doctrine, but only in the interpretation of the words. You interpret them in a human sense, I, instead, in a spiritual one. You see everything as referred to the present time and transient things, and you represent the majority of people who think likewise. I represent God and I explain and apply everything to eternal and supernatural matters. It is true, Yahweh did strike you at present because of your pride and because you considered yourselves a “nation” according to the world. But how much He loved you and how

⁴¹⁵ ET: These words take on a touching prophetic value if we recall that Maria Valtorta died (on October 12, 1961) after several years of gradual and growing psychic isolation which led her to become irremediably estranged from the external world, as if she were entirely absorbed by the inner life, thus passing, at death, from a contemplated vision to a reality which she would experience forever.

⁴¹⁶ This liturgical commemoration was on September 12. [*And, From ET, It was the feast of the Name of Mary according to the Church Calendar of the Roman Rite (September 12).*]

⁴¹⁷ Gospel, Vol. 1, November 2, 1944, p. 377 (Poem, Vol. 1, p. 316)

⁴¹⁸ Maria's beginning narration of the setting and then Jesus' teaching in the synagogue are omitted.

patient He is with you, more than with anyone else, granting you the Saviour, His Messiah, that you may listen to Him and be saved before the hour of the wrath of God! He does not want you to be sinners any longer. But if He struck you in the fleeting worldly things, seeing that the injury does not cure your souls, nay it makes them duller and duller, He does not inflict a further punishment, but He grants you salvation. He sends you Him Who cures and saves you! I, Who am speaking to you.»

«Do You not consider Yourself bold in avowing Yourself a representative of God? None of the Prophets dared so much and You... Who are You, Who are speaking? And by whose order do You speak?»

«The Prophets could not say of themselves what I state of Myself. Who am I? The Expected One, The Promised One, the Saviour. You have already heard His Precursor say: "Prepare the way for the Lord... Here the Lord God is coming... Like a shepherd He will feed His flock, although He is the Lamb of the true Passover." Many amongst you heard these words from the Precursor and they saw the heavens brighten with a light that descended in the shape of a dove and they heard a voice speak and say who I am. By whose order do I speak? By the order of Him Who is and Who sends Me.»

«You say that, but You may be a liar or a dreamer. Your words are holy, but Satan sometimes uses deceitful words painted with holiness, to deceive people. We do not know You.»

«I am Jesus of Joseph of the House of David, I was born at Bethlehem Ephrathah, as was promised, named Nazarene, because I live at Nazareth. And that according to the world. According to God I am His Messenger. My disciples know.»

«Oh! They! They can say what they like or what You tell them to say.»

«Another will speak, who does not love Me, and will say Who I am. Wait till I call one of the people present here.»

Jesus looks at the crowd, who are astonished and annoyed at the dispute, and divided between the two opposite doctrines. He looks for someone with His sapphire eyes, and then in a loud voice He calls: «Aggaeus! Come here. It is an order.»

There is great excitement in the crowd. They open out to let a man pass, who is violently shaking all over his body and is supported by a woman.

«Do you know this man?»

«Yes, he is Aggaeus, of Malachi, of Capernaum. He is possessed by an evil spirit which tortures him with sudden fury-fits.»

«Does everybody know him?»

The crowd shout: «Yes, we do.»

«Can any of you say that he has spoken to Me, even for a few minutes?»

The crowd shout: «No, no, he is half-witted, he never leaves his house, and nobody has seen You in it.»

«Woman, bring him here in front of Me.»

The woman pushes and drags him, while the poor man trembles more than ever.

The head of the synagogue warns Jesus: «Be careful! The devil is about to torture him... and then he rushes at people, scratches and bites them.»

The crowd moves away thronging against the walls.

Jesus and the man are now facing each other. There is a moment's struggle. The man, usually mute, seems to have difficulty in speaking, he moans, then his voice turns into words: «What is there between us and You, Jesus of Nazareth? Why have You come to torture us? Why do You want to destroy us, You, the Lord of Heaven and Earth? I know who You are: the Holy of God. No one, in human flesh, was ever greater than You, because in Your flesh of man is enclosed the Spirit of the Eternal Winner. You have already beaten me in...»

«Be quiet! I order you to come out of this man.»

The man has a fit of strange convulsions. He is tossed about by jerks and thrusts, as if someone pulled and pushed him, violently ill-treating him, he shouts in a wild voice, foams at his mouth, and is then thrown down onto the ground. He gets up, astonished and cured.

«Have you heard? What do you say now?» Jesus asks His opponent.

The bearded sumptuous man shrugs his shoulders and, obviously beaten, goes out without replying. The crowd scoff at him and applaud Jesus.

«Silence! This place is sacred!» says Jesus and He orders: «Bring Me the man to whom I promised help from God.»

The sick man comes forward. Jesus caresses him: «You believed Me! Be cured. Go in peace and be just.»

The young man lets out a yell. I wonder what he feels. He kneels down before Jesus, kisses His feet thanking Him: «Thanks from me and from my mother!»

Other sick people come: a little boy with paralysed legs. Jesus takes him in His arms, caresses him and puts him down... and leaves him. The child does not fall, but runs to his mother, who clasps him to her heart, weeping, and in a loud voice blesses «the Holy One of Israel.» A little old blind man comes, led by his daughter. He also is cured with a caress on his diseased eyes.

There is a roar of blessing from the crowd.

Jesus makes His way through the crowd smiling, and although He is tall, He would not succeed in pushing through, if Peter, James, Andrew and John did not work generously with their elbows, to make their way and reach Jesus, and then escort Him to the exit onto the square, which is now dark.

The vision ends thus.

Ezekiel 37:1-14

Jesus says:

“I ask you, as the Lord asked Ezekiel, ‘Do you think these bones will live again?’”

Like Ezekiel, I answer, “You know, Lord God,” for I understand the meaning of the word “bones” when used to say “men” -- that is, I understand that Jesus is not asking me if the dead will rise again on the Last Day. This is faith, and there is no question about it. But He is applying the term “bones” to this poor humanity at present, so entirely material and not at all spiritual. I understand this because, as I have already explained to you so many times, when God takes me so that I will be his spokesman, my intelligence is amplified and raised to a power far superior to that permitted to human beings. And I “see,” “hear,” and “understand” according to the spirit.

Jesus smiles because He sees I have understood his question and explains:

“That’s the way it is. Humanity is now nothing but bones, calcined, heavy, dead ruins sinking into the fetid furrows of vices and heresies. The spirit no longer exists. The spirit that is life in flesh and life in eternity. The spirit that is what differentiates man from animals. Man has killed himself in his best part. Is he a machine? Is he a beast? Is he a corpse? Yes, he is all of this.

“A machine, for he goes through his day with the mechanicalness of a device that works because it must work by virtue of its parts set in motion, but does so without comprehending the beauty of what it is doing. Man, too, rises and goes to bed after having eaten, drunk, worked, strolled, and spoken without ever grasping the beauty and ugliness of what he does. Simply because, deprived as he is of spirit, he no longer distinguishes beauty from ugliness or good from evil.

“He is a beast because he contents himself with sleeping, eating, and accumulating fat on his body and reserves in his lair, exactly like a beast that makes these operations its life goal and the joy of its existence, and justifies everything -- selfishness and ferocity -- through this base and brutal law of the need to plunder so as to be sated.

⁴¹⁹ NB45, April 15, 1945, p. 61

“He is a corpse because what enables a man to be called ‘alive’ is the presence of the spirit in the flesh. When he breathes his last, man becomes a corpse. In reality, man at present is a corpse kept upright and in motion by the sorcery of mechanics or the devil. But he is a corpse.

“Well then, I tell you, ‘Behold, I will infuse the spirit into you, dry bones, and you shall live again. I will make your nerves rise up again upon you and your flesh grow again and your skin spread out again over you, and I will give you the spirit and you shall live again and know that I am the Lord.’⁴²⁰ Yes, I will do this. The time shall come when I will have a people of the ‘living’ once more and not corpses.

“In the meantime, behold that to the best ones, not dead, but reduced to skeletons for lack of spiritual food, I give the nourishment of my word. I do not want your death by consumption. This is the substantial manna which gives you strength with sweetness. Oh, feed upon it, children of my love and my sacrifice! And *why must I see that so many are hungry and there is so much food prepared for them by the Savior and it is not drawn upon for those who are hungry?* Take nourishment, get to your feet, and come out of your graves. Come out of inertia, come out of the vices of the age, and come to knowledge, come to ‘recognize’ the Lord your God.

“I told you at the beginning of this work and in the middle of this tragic war^{421 422} and I repeat, ‘This is one of the wars paving the way for the times of the Antichrist.’ Then the era of the living spirit will come. Blessed are those who prepare to receive that age.

“Do not say, ‘We won’t be here.’ You won’t, *not all of you will be here*. But it is foolishness and a lack of charity to think only of oneself. Atheistic children are born of atheistic fathers. Lifeless children, of lifeless fathers. And they, your children and the children of your children, will *greatly* need spiritual strength for that hour! At heart the law of human love is to provide for the good of one’s children and grandchildren. Do not be inferior, as regards what is spiritual, to what you are in regard to the things of this world, and as you give wealth to your children or endeavor to provide it so their days will be happier than yours, work to give them an inheritance of spiritual strength that they can develop and multiply in order to have an abundance when the hailstorm of the world’s and Lucifer’s last battles scourges Humanity so fiercely that it will wonder whether Hell is not better.

⁴²⁰ ET: See Ezekiel 37:5-6.

⁴²¹ See, for example, the entry for July 29 in *The Notebooks. 1943* and the entry for August 5 in *The Notebooks. 1944*.

⁴²² ET: “At the beginning of this work”: “this work” means Q43, Q44, and Q45 taken as a whole. “I told you”: see ET 8, 44 & 140 (as well as Q43:24-25 and Q44:353, not quoted in ET).

“Hell! *Mankind will experience it.* Afterwards, for those faithful to the spirit, Paradise shall come, the earth which is not earth shall come: the Kingdom of Heaven.”⁴²³

The Forerunners Antichrist’s Reign  Peace/Truce  End/Judgment

181. The Parable Of The Wheat And The Darnel.⁴²⁴

...⁴²⁵

«Gather round Me and listen. I will explain the full meaning of the parable to you, as it has two more meanings, besides what I told the crowd.

In the universal sense the purport of the parable is as follows: the field is the world. The good seed is the children of the Kingdom of God sown by God in the world, while they wait to reach their end and be cut by the Mower and be taken to the Master of the world Who will store them in His granaries. The subjects of the Evil one are the darnel, which has also been spread in the field of God for the purpose of causing grief to the Master of the world and damage to the corn of God. The enemy of God has sown them deliberately, through witchcraft, because the demon really perverts the nature of man making him a creature of his own and then sows it to lead astray other people whom he has not been able to enslave otherwise. The harvest, that is the tying of the sheaves and carrying them to the granaries, is the end of the world and that is accomplished by the angels. They are given instructions to gather together the creatures which have been cut, to separate the corn from the darnel, and as in the parable the darnel is burnt, so the damned will be burnt in the eternal fire, at the Last Judgment.

The Son of man will have all scandalmongers and performers of iniquity removed from His Kingdom. Because the Kingdom then will be on the earth and in Heaven and many sons of the Enemy will be mixed among the citizens of the Kingdom. And, as prophesied also by Prophets, they will reach the perfection of scandal and abomination in every ministry on the earth and will be of great annoyance to the children of the spirit. The corrupt will have already been driven out of the Kingdom of God in Heaven, because no corruption will enter Heaven. And now the angels of the Lord, brandishing their sickles among the

⁴²³ We pass over the following thirty-six handwritten pages, dated April 15-18, 1945, containing the last four episodes in *The First Year of the Public Life*, and five Pages, dated April 19, 1945, containing the first episode in *The Second Year of the Public Life*.

⁴²⁴ *Gospel, Vol. 3, June 18, 1945, p. 183 (Poem, Vol. 2, p. 212)*

⁴²⁵ Almost four pages are omitted, disembarking off a boat, and the telling of the parable to an assembled crowd in a kitchen garden.

group of the last harvest, will mow down and separate the corn from the darnel and will throw the latter into the burning furnace, where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth. The just, instead, the chosen seed, will be taken to the eternal Jerusalem, where they will shine like the sun in the Kingdom of My Father and yours.

That is the universal sense. But there is another sense, which is the answer to the question which you have been asking yourselves many times and particularly since yesterday evening. Your question is: "Can there be traitors in the mass of disciples?" and your hearts tremble with horror and fear. Yes, there may be some. There are certainly some.

The Sower sows the good seed. In this case, instead of sowing, he could say that He "picks." Because the master, whether it is I or the Baptist, chose his disciples. How were they, therefore, led astray? No, I did not use the right word saying that the disciples are the "seed." You may misunderstand. I will call them "field." As many disciples as fields, chosen by the master to form the area of the Kingdom of God, the wealth of God. The master tires himself cultivating them so that they may yield one hundred per cent. He takes care of everything with patience, love, wisdom, working hard and perseveringly. He also sees their wicked inclinations, their barrenness and avidity, their stubbornness and weakness. But he hopes all the time, corroborating his hope through prayer and penance, because he wishes to lead them to perfection.

But the fields are open. They are not gardens enclosed in walls of protection, of which the only owner is the master, who is the only one who can go in. They are open. Placed as they are in the centre of the world, among the world, anyone can go near them and into them. Everybody and everything. Oh! darnel is not the only bad seed sown! Darnel could be the symbol of the bitter frivolity of the worldly spirit. But all the other seeds, scattered by the Enemy, come up in them. There are nettles, couch-grass, dodder, bearbines, and finally hemlock and poisonous herbs. Why? What are they?

Nettles: stinging untameable spirits which hurt through their excess of poison and cause so much trouble. Couch-grass: parasites who wear out the master as they can only creep and suck, taking advantage of his work and injuring the willing ones, who would make much more profit if the master were not upset and distracted by the cares required by the couch-grass. The sluggish bearbines rise from the ground only by making use of the efforts of other people. Daddlers: they are a torture on the already painful road of the master and a torment to the faithful disciples who follow him. They twist, pierce, tear to pieces, scratch, cause mistrust and pain. The poisonous ones: the criminal disciples, who go as far as betraying and killing as hemlock and other poisonous plants do. Have you noticed how beautiful they are with their little flowers which later become white, red, blue-violet berries? Who would say that the white or pinkish star-shaped corolla, with its little golden heart, or the many-coloured corals, so

much like other little fruits which are the delight of birds and children, can cause death, once they are ripe? No one. And the innocent ones fall into the trap. They believe that everybody is as good as they are... they pick and die.

They believe that everybody is as good as they are! Oh! The truth that makes the master sublime and condemns his traitor! How? Does goodness not disarm wickedness? Does it not make ill-will harmless? No. It does not, because the man who has fallen a prey to the Enemy is indifferent to what is superior. And what is superior changes aspect, as far as he is concerned. Kindness becomes weakness on which is lawful to tread and it stimulates his ill-will as the scent of blood stimulates a beast to slaughter.

Also the master is always innocent... and he lets his traitor poison him, because he cannot possibly believe that a human being can murder an innocent person.

The enemies come into the fields of the Master, that is to His disciples. They are many and Satan is the first one. The others are his servants, that is, men, passions, the world and the flesh. The disciple who is more easily struck by them is the one who is not entirely close to the Master, but is between the Master and the world. He is not capable and does not want to part completely with the world, the flesh, passions and demons, to belong entirely to Him Who wants to take him to God. And the world, flesh, passions and the demon scatter their seed in him: gold, power, women, pride, the fear of an unfavourable opinion of the world, the spirit of utilitarianism. "The great ones are the strongest. I will serve them so that they will be friendly to me." And they become criminals and damned for such miserable things!...

Why does the Master, Who sees the imperfection of a disciple, not cast him away at once, even if He is not prepared to submit to the thought: "He will be My murderer?" That is what you are asking yourselves. Because it is useless to do so. If He did so he would not avoid having him as an enemy, a double and more dangerous enemy, because of his anger and his sorrow at being found out or at being driven away. Yes, because of his sorrow. Because sometimes a bad disciple does not realise that he is such. The demon's action is so subtle that he is not aware of it. He becomes wicked without even suspecting that he is subject to such action. And because of his anger. He is enraged at being known for what he is, when he is aware of Satan's work and of his followers: the men who tempt weak people in their weak points, to remove from the world a saint who offends them, wicked as they are, when compared with his goodness. The saint then prays and trusts in God. "Let what You allow, be done" he says. He adds only the clause: "providing it serves Your purpose." The saint knows that the time will come when the wicked dandel will be rejected from the harvest. By whom? By God Himself Who does not allow more than what is useful to the triumph of His loving will.»

«If You maintain that Satan and his followers are always to be blamed... it seems to me that the responsibility of the disciple diminishes» says Matthew.

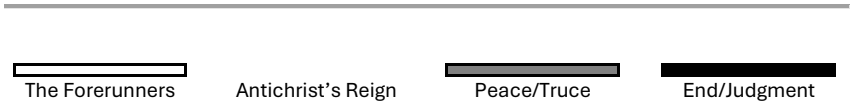
«Do not believe that. If there is Good there is also Evil and man is gifted with discernment and freedom.»

«You say that God does not allow more than what is useful to the triumph of His loving will. Therefore also such error is useful, if He allows it, and it serves the triumph of the divine will» says the Iscariot.

«And you infer, as Matthew does, that that justifies the disciple's crime. God created the lion without ferocity and the snake without poison, now one is ferocious and the other poisonous. That is why God separated them from man. Ponder over that and draw conclusions. Let us go to the house. The sun is already too warm. It looks as if there is going to be a storm. And you are tired because of the sleepless night.»

«The rooms in the house are high, large and cool. You will be able to rest» says Elias.

They go up the outside staircase. But only the apostles lie down on the mats to rest. Jesus goes out on to the terrace, a corner of which is shaded by a very tall oak-tree, and becomes engrossed in thought.



Messages For M.R. And Romualdo⁴²⁶

Jesus says:

“It is a time of graces! It is a time of Grace! I came to bring ‘peace’ to men of good will. Write, then, and hand over to Maria Raffaelli⁴²⁷ what I tell you, for the sake of her peace.”

Jesus says to M.R.:

⁴²⁶ NB45, December 26, 1945, p. 142

⁴²⁷ Maria Raffaelli, of Castelnuovo of Garfagnana (Lucca), had a disabled son, Antonio, who posed serious problems for his mother and two sisters (Rosa and Dina). As a historical reference, it is interesting to add that Maria Raffaelli had involuntarily provided the occasion for the first meeting between Maria Valtorta and Father Romualdo M. Migliorini (see *The Notebooks. 1943*, note 5, for general information on the life of Father Migliorini). Having learned that the infirm woman lacked spiritual care, she went to tell a priest she knew, Father Pietro M. Pennoni, at St. Andrew's Convent of the Servants of Mary. This priest had to ask his own superior for permission to attend to Maria Valtorta. But the superior, who was precisely Father Migliorini, was waiting for an occasion to go to the sick woman, about whom someone had already spoken to him, and he replied, “I'll go.”

“My peace be with you, and may what I say to you be a river of peaceful waiting and peaceful suffering rendered bearable by my promise, which never lies. My daughter, you know a great deal about what men teach concerning Me. But you know little about what I really am and do. Listen. It is the Lord who speaks; it is Wisdom; it is Truth.

“One thing is to be tormented, and another is *to want to be tormented*. The former is a misfortune *which does not go beyond the earthly day and often ceases before*. The latter is a sin because it is ‘connivance with the will of Satan.’ This sin *is not in your son*. When he becomes delirious, it is not he who speaks. Is a phonograph responsible for what comes out of its speaker? It’s not, is it? Well then, in the same way your son is not responsible for what the ‘other’ makes him say. I do not even hear those words, for, with the Accursed One, I use the silence of lips and ears. I do not listen to his words, the words *not his* booming in the air; I look at this poor son of mine and yours, O mother of sorrow, and it is entirely mercy which is poured out by Me upon him.

“I said, while thinking of you, ‘In illnesses Satan often hides to torture and bring people to curse the Lord.’ I said, ‘The pain of mothers is salvation for their children.’ And so it is, Maria. Heaven is populated with children saved by their mothers. Go, go with your cross. You are carrying it for yourself and for him. *His* even more than yours. Oh, good mother, aren’t you happy to be the Cyrenean for your son? My Mother murmurs, ‘If only I had been able to carry your cross, my Son!’

“Don’t be in a hurry. These are long matters. You could even not see their completion during your mortal day. You could rise to Heaven with this faith (*faith -- do you understand? -- not hope*), with this *faith* in what I say, and there, with more power, help your child... Oh, do not sigh out your grief! Waiting becomes an Instant up above. And then comes the joy of seeing him handsome, healthy, good, and happy forever. Forever. Forever. What looks like a punishment is just a means. What may appear to be damnation is instead salvation. His cross is his expiation on earth of his sins as a man. I do not make people pay twice. I am just.

“Have faith. Support him with your prayers. Give him to Me. Offer him to Me. Say, ‘I trust in You.’ The balm descending from my wounds is *never* inactive.

“My daughter, peace be in you and upon those like you... My mercy upon your son.”

“And now,” Jesus continues with me, “say this to Father Romualdo.”
Jesus says:

“You are free to go. Act. Try. But the objections made to the ‘Dora’ case,⁴²⁸ so tumultuous and interspersed with lights and shadows, and the objections made to the ‘Maria’ case, so calm, orderly, and peaceful, like everything coming *directly* from Me, against Whom the devil cannot strike and must work lying in ambush and with difficulty, serve to justify a point in the Gospel which is not valid for Me alone, but for all the cases where *I am*, even if hidden in a creature-instrument. ‘We played the pipes for you, and you would not dance; we sang dirges, and you would not be mourners.’ And at another point: ‘For John the Baptist has come, not eating bread, not drinking wine, and you say, “He is possessed.” The Son of man has come, eating and drinking, and you say, “Look, a glutton and a drunkard, a friend of tax collectors and sinners.” Yet wisdom is justified by all her children.’⁴²⁹

“Yes, human wisdom, proud and incredulous, seeking to show off its learning on everything, having lost the spirit of events and going by appearances it wishes to justify in a way it cannot -- because the supernatural eludes natural methods of research and judgment -- wants to justify -- and does not realize it is contradicting itself -- the two different cases with the same mistaken reasons. Just to be able to absolve itself from its incredulity, its inability to perceive and recognize the supernatural -- that is, the divine -- where it is present.

“The last time will be that of the spirit. But, in truth, in truth, I tell you that only those who are voluntary victims of the Spirit, and quarries accepted by the Spirit, will still be able to admit the supernatural. The others... dregs that He will deposit at the bottom of the infernal pools and for which *the Word will no longer exist, for it does not give itself to pigs because it is respected by Itself and protected by Itself.*

“And may this be light for you, Romualdo Maria. My peace be in you.”

<div style="border: 1px solid black; width: 100%; height: 10px; margin-bottom: 5px;"></div> The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	<div style="background-color: black; width: 100%; height: 10px; margin-bottom: 5px;"></div> End/Judgment
For Father Migliorini⁴³⁰			

For Father Migliorini

Jesus says:

⁴²⁸ See note 121 [*This refers to Dora Barsotelli, who said she was favored by manifestations concerning whose origins the writer harbored apprehensions and doubt, as we shall see in the course of the present volume and as can be noted in other writings separate from The Notebooks.J.*]

⁴²⁹ Matthew 11:16-19; Luke 7:31-35.

⁴³⁰ NB45, March 20, 1946, p. 235

“For the just to obey is always the will of the Lord. *But there is no other will in your departure, no other will of God.* If I had another, I would contradict Myself. *For I wanted you here,* alongside my ‘Spokesman.’ *Here, and not elsewhere.*

“Maria, our poor Maria, wrote this on her own because she understood. I confirm it. I prepared you for this hour with the visions of the departure of Syntyche and John. Read them carefully. You will hear the thought of your Savior.

“And go in peace *because you are in my Grace.* And this is all. The judgment of men does not affect or influence the judgment of God. Go in peace, son of mine and of Mary. In peace as regards Yourself, in peace as regards poor Maria. I -- and my angel -- will take your place. And since for spirits there are no separations, there will still be three of us here, as there have been for three years, to do what is the glory of God: *to make God known.*

“I bless you: by the Father and the Holy Spirit and Myself as well, good Servant; and with Me the Mother and the Man of Obedience, Joseph, bless you, and the Man of Charity, John the Apostle, and all the Saints from your Order. Go in peace, for the angels of the Lord are with you, *and God is with you.*”⁴³¹

I have written the following for Father.

My Father, I am very happy to be able to add the words of the Lord to my poor words as a creature who, in the sight of God and men, testifies that your assistance at my side, beginning in June 1942 and willed by God -- God *definitely* wanted this -- was the preparatory stage for the ministry to which God destined me. Previously, there was God and the creature’s will to serve God. But there was still *a lot of-- too* much -- humanity in me, as you know, and God could not come -- He, Order, where there was disorder; He, Love, where there were resentments... You came and ordered *everything.* And God was able to act because you had come before. You were the “forerunner” going ahead to prepare the ways of the Lord. And the Lord came. And He stayed, for you -- Jesus said so one day and repeated it -- with your presence kept at a distance the one who hates me because I am an instrument of God. Do you remember that dictation? I should now be fearful because you are going away and Satan hates me more than ever. But I trust in Jesus’ promise and in your prayers, Reverend Father, and in those of the Fathers in the Order.

You will read at your ease in the “Directions” what I have been thinking for twenty-two days, gradually written during your first absence. And this will help you to understand me when I tell you that this pain is peace for me and

⁴³¹ She later added in minute writing: “On March 20, 1946 it was that way... Then, on July 4, 1946, Jesus wanted another spiritual guide for me. He knows why, do not seek to find out. I would suffer too much if I knew... (December 9, 1947).”

confirmation and that I trust it will be a momentary darkening, like Jesus' from the evening of Holy Thursday until Easter morning. He taught us how to remain faithful, how to sweat blood without rancor towards those making us sweat it, and how to die on the Cross to *save*. Let us imitate Him.

I give you my Crucifix, the one that in July 1930 for the first time gave me undeniable proof of the power of the Cross and of faith and my first victory against the devil.⁴³² I allocated it to you in my will, for it is sacred to me because of what I obtained with it and because it was in the hands of my dear ones at death. It was to have been placed in my hands in agony and death, until the coffin was closed, and then to have been left with you. This means that if Jesus grants me the grace of dying with you nearby, you will bring it to me in those hours...

And now I give you my thanks, my thanks *for everything, because of everything, as regards everything*. You have never made *me* feel I was an orphan and alone, sick, poor, and weak. You have been affection, help, peace, and support. Here and elsewhere I will not forget you. I shall now feel I am *alone* on earth...

But I will say no more; otherwise the new Syntyche will lose the strength to hold up *her* cross and the one belonging to her Father. I must temper myself further, constantly, until dying in the effort, and have faith, faith, faith in the Lord.

Maria

Mary says:

“We are close to the incarnation of the Word in Me. ‘I am the handmaid of the Lord. Let it be done according to his word.’ For, even if it is not an order, it is a ‘permission’ by God which is presented to us. What is presented to us is thus holy. Beloved son, beloved daughter, Romualdo and Maria, children of the ever Sorrowful Mother because of the sorrows of her beloved children; say my word yourselves as well, and the Most Holy Word will take shape in you more vitally than ever to the point of making you other instances of Himself. Be maternally blessed.”

And St. Joseph says:

“And blessed by me, who always believed and always did what the Lord ordered: in going, in returning, and in accepting. And *I was guided by the angel of God because I always subjected my human judgment to that of Heaven.*”

⁴³² See the *Autobiography* in connection with that period in her life.

596. The End Of Time Discourse.⁴³³

...⁴³⁴

They sit down on a slope of the Mount of Olives, in front of the Temple kissed by the setting sun. Jesus looks fixedly at that place and sorrowfully. The others are proud of its beauty, but a veil of worry, left by the words of the Master, is spread on their pride. And if that beauty should really perish?...

Peter and John speak to each other and then they whisper something to James of Alphaeus and Andrew, who nod assent. Then Peter addresses the Master saying: «Let us go aside and explain to us when Your prophecy on the destruction of the Temple will take place. Daniel mentions it, but if things were as he says and as You say, the Temple would have but a few more hours. But we do not see any armies or preparations for war. So when will it happen? Which will be the sign of it? You have come. You say that You are about to go away. And yet it is known that it will only happen when You are among men. So, will You come back? When will You come back? Tell us, so that we may know... »

«It is not necessary to go aside. See? The most faithful disciples have remained, those who will be of great help to you twelve. They may hear the words that I will speak to you. Come near Me, all of you.» He shouts the last words to gather them all.

The disciples scattered on the slope come near the others, they form a compact group around the main one of Jesus and the apostles and they listen.

«Take care that no one deceives you in future. I am the Christ and there will be no other Christs. So, when many will come and say to you: “I am the Christ” and they will deceive many, do not believe those words, even if they are accompanied by wonders.

Satan, the father of falsehood and the protector of liars, assists his servants and followers with false wonders, which, however, can be recognised as not being good ones, because they are always joined to fear, perturbation and falsehood. You know the wonders of God: they give holy peace, joy, health, faith, and they lead to holy desires and deeds. The others do not. So ponder on the forms and consequences of the wonders you may see in future, performed

⁴³³ *Gospel, Vol. 9, April 2, 1947, p. 440 (594. Poem, Vol. 5, p. 463)*

⁴³⁴ *Titled sections, 596 (594). The Wednesday Before Passover. The Greatest Commandments. The Widow's Mite. Jesus Against Scribes and Pharisees. A Moment of Respite in the King's Gardens. The Old and the New Temple, are omitted.*

by the false Christs and by all those who will clothe themselves in the garments of saviours of peoples, whereas they are wild beasts who ruin them.

You will hear also, and you will see people speak of wars and rumours of wars and they will say to you: "These are the signs of the end." Do not be upset. It will not be the end. All this must happen before the end, but it is not the end yet. People will rise against people, kingdom against kingdom, nation against nation, continent against continent, and plagues, famines and earthquakes will follow in many places. But this is only the beginning of the birth-pangs. Then they will bring affliction upon you and will kill you, accusing you of being guilty of their suffering, and hoping to get out of it by persecuting and destroying my servants.

Men will always accuse the innocent of being the cause of the evil that they, sinners, procure for themselves. They accuse God Himself, Perfect Innocence and Supreme Goodness, of being the cause of their suffering, and they will do the same with you, and you will be hated on account of My Name. It is Satan who instigates them. And many will be scandalised and they will betray and hate one another. It is still Satan who instigates them. And many false prophets will arise, who will deceive many. And Satan is still the true author of so much evil. And with the increase of lawlessness, love in many men will grow cold. But those who stand firm to the end will be saved. And first this Good News of the Kingdom of God is to be preached all over the world as witness to all the nations. Then the end will come. The return to the Christ of Israel who will accept Him and the preaching of my Doctrine to all the world.

And then another sign. A sign for the end of the Temple and for the end of the World. When you see the abomination of the desolation prophesied by Daniel -- let those who are listening to Me understand properly and let those who read the Prophet read between the lines -- then those who are in Judaea must escape to the mountains, those who are on the terrace must not come down to collect what is in their houses, and those who are in the fields must not come back home to fetch their cloaks, but they must flee without turning back, otherwise it may happen that they will no longer be able to do so, and while running away they must not even turn around to look, in order not to keep the horrible sight in their hearts, and thus go mad. Woe to those with child and to those giving suck in those days! And woe if you have to escape on a Sabbath! The flight would not be sufficient to save you without sinning. So pray that it may not happen in winter or on a Sabbath, because then the tribulation will be so great as it has never been from the beginning of the world until now, nor will ever be alike again, because it will be the end. And if those days were not shortened for the sake of those who are chosen, no one would be saved, because the satan-men will enter into an alliance with hell to torture men.

And even then, in order to corrupt and mislead those who have remained faithful to the Lord, some people will arise and say: "The Christ is there,

the Christ is here. He is in that place. There He is.” Do not believe them. Let no one believe them, for false Christs and false prophets will arise and produce great signs and portents, enough to deceive even the chosen, if it were possible, and they will speak doctrines that are apparently so comforting and good as to deceive even the best ones, if the Spirit of God were not with them enlightening them on the truth and the satanic origin of such portents and doctrines. I am telling you. I am foretelling it, so that you may know how to behave. But do not be afraid of falling. If you remain in the Lord, you will not be led into temptation and ruin. Remember what I told you: ⁴³⁵ “I have given you the power to walk on snakes and scorpions, and of all the power of the Enemy nothing will harm you, because everything will be subjected to you.” But I also remind you that, in order to achieve this, you must have God within you, and you must rejoice, not because you control the powers of Evil and poisonous things, but because your names are written in Heaven.

Remain in God and in His truth. I am the Truth and I teach the truth. So I repeat to you once again: whatever they may say about Me, do not believe it. I alone have spoken the truth. I alone tell you that the Christ will come, but when it is the end. So, if they say to you: “He is in the desert,” do not go. If they say to you: “He is in that house,” do not listen to them. Because in His second coming the Son of man will be like lightning striking in the east and flashing as far as the west, in a shorter time than a blink. And He will glide over the great Body, suddenly turned into a Corpse, followed by His shining angels, and He will judge. Wherever the corpse is, there will the eagles gather. And immediately after the distress of those last days, as you have been told -- I am speaking ⁴³⁶ of the end of time and of the world and of the resurrection of the bones, ⁴³⁷ of which the prophets speak -- the sun will be darkened, and the moon will shed no more light, and the stars will fall from the sky like grapes from a bunch that is too ripe and is shaken by a gale, and the powers of Heaven will be shaken.

And then in the darkened vault of heaven the dazzling sign of the Son of Man will appear, and all the nations of the Earth will weep, and men will see the Son of man coming on the clouds of heaven with great power and glory. And He will order His angels to reap the corn and gather the grapes, and to separate the darnel from the corn, and to throw the grapes into the vat, because the time of the great harvest of Adam’s seed has come, and there will be no more need to keep small bunches or seeds, because the human race will never be perpetuated again on the dead Earth. And He will order His angels to gather the chosen with loud trumpets from the four winds, from one end of the heavens to

⁴³⁵ I told you in [*The Gospel as Revealed to Me*] 280.2.

⁴³⁶ ...the prophets speak, as in: *Ezekiel 37,1-14*.

⁴³⁷ See **A Vision of the Last Judgment**, January 29, 1944, above.

another, so that they may be beside the Divine Judge to judge with Him the last living men and those who have been raised from the dead.

Learn the similitude from the fig-tree: when you see its twigs grow supple and put forth leaves, you know that summer is near. So, when you see all these things, know that the Christ is about to come. I solemnly tell you: *this generation that did not want Me* will not pass away, before all this takes place. My word does not pass. What I have said will take place. The hearts and minds of men may change, but my word does not change.

Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will not pass away. But as for the day and the exact hour, nobody knows them not even the angels of the Lord, only the Father knows them.

As it was in the days of Noah, so it will be when the Son of man comes. In the days before the Flood, men were eating, drinking, taking wives, taking husbands, without worrying about the sign, right up to the day Noah went into the ark and the cataracts of heaven were opened and the Flood swept all living beings and things away. It will be like this also for the coming of the Son of man. Then two men will be close to each other in the field, and one will be taken and the other will be left, and two women will be at the millstone grinding, and one will be taken and one left by the enemies in the Fatherland, and even more by the angels who will be separating the good seed from the darnel, and they will have no time to prepare for the judgment of the Christ.

So be awake because you do not know at what time your Lord will come. Consider this: if the head of a family knew at what time a burglar would come, he would stay awake and would not let his house be robbed. So be vigilant and pray, being always prepared for the coming, without letting your hearts become sluggish through all kinds of abuse and intemperance, and your spirits be dull and distracted from the things of Heaven by excessive care for the things of the Earth, so that death may not take you all of a sudden, when you are not prepared. Because, bear this in mind, each one of you must die. All men, once they are born, must die, and this death and subsequent judgment is a particular coming of the Christ and its universal repetition will take place at the solemn coming of the Son of man.

What will happen to that faithful and prudent servant, appointed by his master to give food to the servants in his absence? His lot will be a happy one if his master comes back suddenly and finds him doing his duty with diligence, justice and love. I tell you solemnly that he will say to him: "Come, good faithful servant. You have deserved my reward. Here, administer all my property." But if he seemed good and faithful, but was not, and if interiorly he was as bad as he was hypocritical exteriorly, and once the master has left, he says to himself: "The master will come back late! Let us have a good time," and he begins to beat and ill-treat his fellow servants, cutting down their food and everything else to have more money to spend with revellers and drunkards, what will happen?

The master will come back all of a sudden, when the servant does not expect him, and his wrong-doing will be found out, his position and money will [be] taken off him, and he will be led where justice wants. And there will he remain.

And the same will happen to the unrepentant sinner, who does not think that death can be close at hand, as his judgment can be near, and he enjoys himself and abuses saying: "Later I will repent." I tell you solemnly that he will not have time to do so, and he will be condemned to be forever where there is dreadful horror, where there is only blasphemy and weeping and torture, and he will come out only for the final Judgment, when he will be reclothed with the flesh raised from the dead, to present himself entire at the final Judgment, as he was entire when he sinned in the time of his earthly life, and in body and soul he will present himself to Jesus Judge, Whom he did not want as his Saviour.

They will all be gathered there before the Son of man. An infinite multitude of bodies, given back by the land and by the sea and recomposed after being ashes for such a long time. And the souls in their bodies. To each flesh returned to the skeletons will correspond its own soul that once animated it. And they will stand before the Son of man, splendid in His divine Majesty, sitting on His throne of glory supported by His angels.

And He will separate men from men, placing the good on one side and the bad on the other, as a shepherd separates the sheep from the kids, and He will place the sheep on His right, and the goats on His left. And in a gentle voice and with a benign appearance he will say to those who look at Him with all the love of their hearts, and are peaceful and beautiful, shining with the glorious beauty of their holy bodies: "Come, you who have been blessed by My Father, take possession of the Kingdom prepared for you since the origin of the world. For I was hungry and you gave Me food, I was thirsty and you gave Me drink, I was a pilgrim and you gave Me hospitality, I was naked and you clothed Me, sick and you visited Me, in prison and you came to comfort Me."

And the just will ask Him: "Lord, when did we see You hungry and we fed You, thirsty and we gave You drink? When did we see You a pilgrim and we welcomed You, naked and we clothed You? When did we see You sick and in prison and we came to visit You?"

And the King of kings will say to them: "I tell you solemnly: when you did one of these things to one of the least of My brothers, you did it to Me."

He will then address those who are on His left hand and will say to them, looking very severe, and His eyes will be like flashes of lightning striking the reprobates, and in His voice the wrath of God will thunder: "Go away from here! Away from Me, with your curse upon you! Go to the eternal fire prepared by the fury of God for the devil and the angels of darkness and for those who have listened to their voices of treble obscene lechery. I was hungry and you did not give Me any food, I was thirsty and you did not quench My thirst, I was naked and you did not clothe Me, I was a pilgrim and you rejected Me, I was

sick and in prison and you did not visit Me. Because you had but one law: the pleasure of your own egos.”

And they will say to Him: “When did we see You hungry, thirsty, naked, pilgrim, sick, in prison? Really, we never met You. We did not exist, when You were on the Earth.”

And He will reply to them: “That is true. You never met Me. Because you did not exist when I was on the Earth. But you were acquainted with My word and you had among you people who were hungry, thirsty, naked, ill, in prison. Why did you not do to them what you would have perhaps done to Me? Because no one says that those, who had Me among them, were merciful to the Son of man. Do you not know that I am in my brothers, and that where one of them suffers, I am there, and that what you have not done to one of the least of My brothers, you have refused it to Me, the First-Born of men? Go and burn in your own selfishness. Go and be enveloped in darkness and ice, because you were darkness and ice yourselves, though you knew where the Light and the Fire of Love were.” And they will go to the eternal torture, whereas the just will enter eternal life.

Those are the future things...

Go now. And do not part from one another. I am going with John, and I shall be with you half through the first watch, for supper, and then we shall go to our teaching.»

«Also this evening? Shall we be doing that every evening? I am aching all over because of the dew. Would it not be better to go to some hospitable house now? Always under tents! Always watching at night, when it is cold and damp... » says Judas complaining.

«It is the last night. Tomorrow... it will be different.»

«Ah! I thought You wanted to go to Gethsemane every night. But if it is the last one... »

«I did not say that, Judas. I said that it will be the last night to spend all together at the Field of the Galileans. Tomorrow we will prepare for Passover and will consume the lamb, then I will go by Myself to Gethsemane to pray. And you can do what you like.»

«But shall we not come with You, Lord! When have we ever wanted to leave You?» asks Peter.

«You should be quiet, because you are culpable. You and the Zealot do nothing but flutter here and there as soon as the Master does not see you. I have been keeping an eye on you. At the Temple... on the day... in the tents up there... » says the Iscariot, happy to denounce them.

«That is enough! If they do that, they are doing the right thing. But do not leave Me alone... I beg you... »

«Lord, we are not doing anything wrong. Believe me. Our deeds are known to God, and His eyes do not turn away from them in disgust» says the Zealot.

«I know. But it is useless. And what is useless may always become harmful. Be together as much as possible.»

He then says to Matthew: «My good reporter, you will repeat to them the parable of the ten wise virgins and the ten foolish ones, and that of the master who gives some talents to his three servants to make them bear interests, and two earn twice as much and the sluggard hides it in the ground. Do you remember? »

«Yes, my Lord, very well.»

«Repeat them, then, because not everybody knows them. And also those Who know them will be pleased to hear them again. You can while away the time so, in wise conversation, until I come back. Stay awake! Be vigilant! Keep your spirits awake. Those parables are also appropriate to what I have said. Goodbye. Peace be with you.»

He takes John by the hand and goes away with him towards the town... The others set out towards the Fields of the Galileans.



Jesus says:

“You had your Holy Year in your fiftieth year. *You had Me in a way only you know.*⁴³⁹ And *you are remaining* in this jubilee year of yours until it turns into your eternal century of heavenly peace. But the Holy Year that will come must be marked by a special character: *the Marian character.*”

“The extraordinary Holy Year was celebrated for the nineteenth centennial of my Passion. *Infinite Wisdom would love there to be a celebration of this other centennial as well -- of the glorious Assumption of my Mother into Heaven -- and to have this celebration give a special character to the next Holy Year.*⁴⁴⁰ *Infinite Wisdom would love to have this duty, this need, and this far-sightedness be felt as regards providing a note of Marian triumph and thus a stimulus for devotion to Mary, your Salvation in this terrible conclusion to this*”

⁴³⁸ NB45, October 23, 1947, p. 428

⁴³⁹ On March 16, 1947, in connection with March 14, her fiftieth birthday.

⁴⁴⁰ In 1933, under Pope Pius XI, the extraordinary Holy Year of the Redemption had been celebrated. In 1950, and ordinary Holy Year, Pope Pius XII would define as a dogma of faith the Assumption of Our Lady in soul and body into the glory of Heaven.

terrible century in which the complete opening of the seven seals⁴⁴¹ may take place, as God's punishment -- in the next Holy Year. For too many centuries now Christendom has been awaiting this triumphal proclamation of the Virgin Mother, taken up into Heaven by God to be a joy for God, whose living Temple on earth she was, and the Queen of the heavenly choirs and the people of the Saints.



“Many of the seals have in reality already been opened. But woe if they were all opened or should come to be!

“Hasten the hour of the triumph of the Woman, foundress of the lineage of those marked with the sign of the servants of God, the chosen whose dwelling is Heaven. Hasten the hour of Mary's triumph over Satan, the world, matter, and death, overcome by Us twice, overcome in Her as a creature, too, in her not knowing the spiritual death of sin, in addition to not knowing death in her flesh, which was not corrupted and lives here. Hasten the hour of Mary's triumph; Let the men, women, and children of the One, Holy, Catholic, Apostolic, and Roman Church join the Angels, headed by Michael so that the dragon with seven heads, ten horns, and seven accursed diadems -- the seven seductions⁴⁴² -- will be cast down for a certain period and Christendom will have time to gather together and fortify itself in charity and faith and close ranks as a defense for the final battle.

“Woe if the woman dressed in purple and scarlet where the unclean beast with blasphemous names sets his throne were to be proclaimed queen before the Queen of the Angels and men is proclaimed with infallible words, the Woman dressed in sunlight, whose feet tread upon the moon and whose head is crowned with stars.⁴⁴³

“There cannot be a second Redemption carried out by Me, Christ. But there can still be one to save a greater number of spirits from the coils of hell: that of glorious Mary. In devotion to Her lies the secret of the last Redemption.

“If they hear Me in the words of the Work, you know who you should communicate these other words to.”

			
The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment

[To Prevent The Antichrist From Triumphing]⁴⁴⁴

The eve of the General Election.

⁴⁴¹ Revelation 5 and 6.

⁴⁴² Revelation 12:3.

⁴⁴³ Revelation 12:1, 17:3-4.

⁴⁴⁴ LNB, April 17, 1948, p. 108

Immediately after Holy Communion which I offer for the elections and as my Viaticum in case I die going to vote, I say to Jesus: «I offer you my life and even renounce seeing The Work published, provided the communists don't win.»

Jesus answers me:

«I have always accepted all your offers and sacrifices. But this time *no*. My Will is something else. Your wishes go against my Will and I cannot accept them. My Will is that The Work is published. Although it is true that the sacrifice of a created being can do much to prevent the Antichrist from triumphing, my Word distributed among the crowd can do so much more.

You would achieve a tenth, a hundredth, only a thousandth with your sacrifice. The Work, where I speak to the faithful to fortify them, to the tepid to inflame them, to unbelievers to make them believers, to sinners to convert them, to the antigod and those uncertain between God and antigod, to make them again *belong to God*. They are often the weakest and most subservient to certain doctrines of the cunning who, are *real antigods* or well on the way to becoming one. The Work can do a thousand times a thousand and ten thousand more. Your sacrifice would increase *your* degree of glory. But I want many, who are now the prey of Satan, to reach heavenly glory. That's why I have given The Work. I know that it is health for those who read it in good will in order to know me. Even just this. After all!... Nothing will stop the the *[sic]* poison the Dragon spreads before going forward to dominate and triumph.

“Then the Serpent vomited water from his mouth, like a river, after the Woman to sweep her away in the current... Then the Dragon went to make war: on the rest of Her children, all those who keep God's commandments and remain faithful to Jesus Christ, bearing witness to him.”⁴⁴⁵

The wave advances. The wave of hatred against the teaching and the militant Church. And the war against the most holy freedom of mankind advances, which not even God himself violates free will, the freedom of conscience, the freedom of faith and action. We still need this. In truth the whole Earth is becoming the great whore Babylon. The mother of all fornication and abominations, and many put themselves at her service, the Beast of the Abyss, seducer of the weak, persecutor of the many who are strong; my Holy Confessors.

But why is Satan, the Antichrist and all the beasts of the depths seducing less, and why are my servants supported in the pressing persecution which continues to spread and increase in strength? I want the Work to be given to the people. I said so when I was on the Earth, and I repeat it now that I am in Heaven, even if I am always with my Christians: “I have compassion for these people” (Matthew c.15, v.32; Mark c.8, v.2). “If I do not give them food, they might

⁴⁴⁵ Rv 12:15-17

faint.” I say it again now: “I have compassion for these people. I want to give them the Word of Life, the Food which will keep them Alive in the Faith, so they will not faint.”⁴⁴⁶

Therefore, my secret apostle, I cannot accept your offer. If you want to offer me a sacrifice according to your current intention, ask me to let you die as soon as the Work is published and widespread in Italy and in many other countries, all of which have a great need of the Word of Eternal Life in order to save themselves and live. You won't have the time to receive any praise, taste the joy of knowing My Will has been done, for which you have fought hard, are fighting hard and will continue to fight hard, suffering more and more. This I accept. Other offers no, because they are contrary [*sic*] to My Will.»

The Forerunners Antichrist's Reign Peace/Truce End/Judgment
[Be That Force...Like The Times In The Catacombs]⁴⁴⁷

25 April 1948

During the night I prayed and suffered and offered my sufferings so that Jesus might dictate the words dictated the previous days. I am afraid I cannot repeat them accurately, and even more I fear that if spoken by me they will not be believed to be supernatural announcements. Jesus grants my wish and dictates:

«Our enemies are in the shadows. They are not defeated, on the contrary they are more active than ever in order to gain revenge and harm us. Now you can recount the meaning of Isaiah's prophecy at Sobna,⁴⁴⁸ and say that either they do what I want or *what is prophesied will come true without fail*. One day, more or less soon, *according to how the members of my teaching and militant Church carry out what I want*. That means from my Vicar to the layman of A.C., to secular Catholics who are not members of any Congregation, Association or Third Order but inspired, by the three theological virtues and the “life” found in the Commandments and the Gospel.

Cry out, “Jesus, save us we are going to die.” You might receive a miracle, like when the tempest struck Peter's boat.⁴⁴⁹ But you must not take advantage of my mercy and just wait for Me to rescue you, and only when you are about to sink. Equip the boat and those in it while you still have the time and means.

⁴⁴⁶ Mt 15:32; Mk 8:3

⁴⁴⁷ LNB, April 25, 1948, p. 110

⁴⁴⁸ Is 22:15-25

⁴⁴⁹ Mt 8:25

Return to the methods of the catacombs, as I said in my message of 20 November 1943 to young Giovanni.

Come out of your hole in the rock. Come out of it in order to carry out your humble, difficult loving work. If you don't do it, no high hiding place or tower of jasper, or porphyry and steel will save you when the Antichrist, who you have not fought against with the arms of victory and [not] defeated in the hearts of many, blows his enemy wind,⁴⁵⁰ and those who in their heart think of "jump, O Peter, like a ball in a wide open square and there die" -- the square; that of St. Peter's, where You, My Vicar (eternal Vicar from Peter to the last of the Popes), speak and bless from on high. Always the only just one, the only Shepherd of love even in these times of the wolves of horror -- they move to lead the strays, the deluded, the ignorant, those who not only demagoguery, but also and even more so, those who inertia, indifference, disdainful fools, useless pride and the cowardice of the clergy, who are no longer a lantern on the hill top or salt able to give flavour to souls, have de-Christianized. They will do this if you sleep.

If we allow Christ to be removed from men's hearts, who will take his place? The Antichrist. That's the law. Woe betide you if this happens.

Once an avalanche is formed and moving nothing can stop its deadly course. Only a force that can penetrate it and break it up into small parts can nullify it and prevent destruction. It is you, Priests, the force that penetrates and breaks up the avalanche that has been formed and which if it starts to move will crush you. It is also you Catholics at the service of the Church, in cooperation with the Priests. However, you haven't done it so far.

Be that force, I repeat, like the times in the catacombs. Then Priests and even Popes lived among the people. Not just the Christian people but also among the pagans, mixed up with them, earning their daily bread by their manual or civic work. In the evening this was crowned by the Breaking of Bread in the Gathering of the faithful. They were in the imperial palaces, the patrician's houses as well as among the stonecutters, the dock workers, the weavers, wool workers and fullers. They cultivated the common people. They were also among the doctors and educators. Also those who through birth or wealth didn't need to work, and who went humbly dressed every day to the poorest quarters to carry out charitable works.

They all preached my doctrine by word but even more by example. They didn't preach about a fixed text according to the rules of oratory. They simply talked to passers-by or fellow workers. It all served to talk of Me, quietly diffusing the knowledge of Jesus Christ and the Gospel with patience, love and perseverance.

⁴⁵⁰ Is 22:18

Neither discomfort nor danger frightened them. Not even in the depths of the Circuses or in prisons and courts, or places where they could be torn apart by furious crowds, like lambs by wolves. They entered these places to bring the Word, the Sacraments and blessings to Christians close to martyrdom and to win pagan spirits for Christ.

They didn't use political demagogy. And above all they didn't preach in delicate moments of popular discontent or changes of Emperor. They led a *Christian life. That's all. And true.* And they attracted people to their way of life; that is my way[.]

In truth, one can say, like the beloved in the Canticle, that the pagans ran after Me attracted by the wonderful scent of Christ which my disciples, true other Christs, left behind them as they passed through the corruption and the errors, crushing them, and establishing Christ.

This is how Popes, Bishops, priests, deacons, subdeacons, assisted by non-consecrated Christians, soldiers, matrons, senators, workers, children, virgins christianised and will christianise.

To re-christianise Italy and the world today, where you live and where a doctrine that is worse than the false pagan religions of the past and the even falser religions of today has asserted itself -- the doctrine that makes a god of man, abolishing any kind of respect for the Divine, vaguely perceived but felt and worshipped by pagans and idolaters of every time and place -- it is necessary *to live* that life, the true Christian life, as we read was lived in the earliest Christian times. (See Acts 2:42, 45-47, 4:32, 6:2-4, 7; and the apostolic letters in which we clearly see the help of Christians in assisting the evangelisation of the Apostles and disciples, and the life of the clergy scattered among the people; 2 Cor 11:27; 1 Peter 4:7-9, 5:2-3; Jude v.20-23, just to give a few examples. You can also read the acts of the martyrs and saints...).

Learn from the Church militia, from the Priesthood, that Priesthood which should be holy, i.e. heroic, unselfish, humble, contrite, pure, all patience and love, so as to block the insidious word of the enemies of the Church, finding confirmation in your way of life. If the least of the flock are separated from the holy Sheepfold and follow infernal pastors, take the holiest, most willing, heroic, prepared to give up all and accept sacrifices, even martyrdom, and spread them, hidden like the vital elements in the air -- the eye won't see them but the earth, plants, animals and mankind will benefit from them -- spread them throughout this land of Italy, to reclaim then colonise and finally to generously sow truth and justice.

Why do you look to faraway lands to evangelise when your own country needs it? It is said, "No-one is a prophet in their own land." In truth I tell you

that you are least of all. Pastors you are blind⁴⁵¹ because you do not see what is around you and do not know how to protect the people from evil.

You seem to think that only idolaters, pagans and even Christians who are not Catholics have been injured by the great wound, and so you run to them trying to heal them and bring them “*alive,*” by grafting them on to the mystical Body. However, here in your own country, there are not just the lapsed, pagans and idolaters. There are those without God, the antichrists and the satans. Don’t you think that if their number increased further they could severely damage the Church, the papacy and cut off the motor nerves of the great Mystical Body by destroying Hierarchies, disorganising and creating fear and confusion and provoking a long, dangerous paralysis which would be felt by *all the living members* of the Mystical Body, or those waiting for life from it?

How long would the redemption of pagans be delayed? How many losses among the living members, if that happened? I see...

I have said, reclaim, cultivate and plant. Whoever wants to reclaim land is not happy in areas that are ready to be sown. They go where stones, plants and water have made the land sterile, tangled and putrid. They clear it, shape it, burn it off and clean it up. Then they cultivate it, which means start a civilised life where once there was a wild area. Finally they sow the seed, plant, rear animals, and make fertile, rich and healthy, vast areas that were initially dangerous desert and which become a civilised and populated area.

Truly, much of the population is like that wild area. Bad, but not always because of the tendencies of the spirit. Haters, but not always because of the tendencies of the spirit. An enemy but not always because of the tendencies of the spirit. Ninety times out of a hundred it is through ignorance. Bad because they don’t know the Truth. Haters because they don’t know Love. An enemy because they don’t know the Church.

And by “Church” I don’t mean what we see in many cases in its ministers. It would be better they don’t know that version. I say they don’t know the Church as I founded it, animated by my spirit; love, fraternity and paternity

Oh! For that declaration by the pagans in the early centuries which you don’t hear anymore, or only very rarely, “See how much they love and how virtuous they are! See how they love each other!/[”] Because of this authenticity of the clergy and Christians of the early centuries, the world of that time became Christian. Now through the opposite situation, the world is returning to paganism, atheism or Satanism.

Take the holiest ones among you and spread them around; pieces of yeast in a mass of dough. Spread them out; the truth among lies. Spread them out; the light amidst the darkness created by Satan’s servants on orders from their king. Spread them around; love where hate reigns.

⁴⁵¹ Mt 13:57

Exceptional times call for exceptional measures. I have been pointing them out to young Giovanni⁴⁵² since 1943. I have mentioned them, both in the Work and in other dictations, some of them recent. Again I repeat them now, only not as advice but as a command. Much needs to *[be]* renewed *if you want to save*.

You are not anchored, you are encrusted with habits formed over the centuries, but which are not those I gave my Apostles and disciples, and about which the Paraclete continually advised the young Church in order to help its development.

The world is changing. Not for the good. But it is changing. The Church cannot stay still, *but must*, not adapt itself to the bad evolution of the world, but *transform itself in order to be able to confront the bad evolution of the world and correct it*. It must remain unchanging only in dogma and doctrine. It has to adjust to the times in the ways it exercises its ministry.

In times of turmoil and antichristian acts, what was sufficient in times of faith, peace and reverential love for God and his Church is no longer enough. This is why I tell you what David said to Ahimelech, “The vessels of my servants are holy, if our mission is unholy, it will be made holy through the vessels”⁴⁵³ that is “*Take my holy servants and even if you put them in unholy places what is holy will not be made unholy. On the contrary whatever comes into contact with what is holy, that is my holy servant, will be sanctified.*”⁴⁵⁴

It is essential that the people turn back to Me.

It is useless to sing that Christ reigns in occasional gatherings which could be judged as being provocative. Sing about Christ’s reign with your life and your works, establish it among the ignorant, the mad and the sick in spirit, with the patient work of the masters of love and the spiritual doctors. Be doctors and teachers not only for the good, but *for everyone*. As I was.

Being priests must not constitute a special position which gives honours and saves one from the punishment of mankind; work, fatigue, poverty and hunger. I was hungry and I was God. I was fatigued, poor and had to work, and I was God. I lived in danger, I didn’t avoid it, and I was God.

Take the holiest ones among you and spread them around. At the same time, in silence and in a hidden way, a mystic army will help them with prayers, penance and suffering; *that of victim souls*; many Moses⁴⁵⁵ on the mountain while the Joshuas battle and win on the plains using *only the weapon of the Gospel and a truly evangelical life, they battle and win with and for the Gospel*. Do it without delay. You don’t know if you will still be able to do it in the future.

⁴⁵² *Jesus’ name of endearment for Maria.*

⁴⁵³ 1 Sam 21:6 (vulg.)

⁴⁵⁴ 1 Kings 21:5

⁴⁵⁵ Ex 17:9-13

In this land of Martyrs and Saints where the heart of the Church is, why don't you do what they already do with success in other Nations, for the love of God and in defence of the Church, morality and Christian civilisation, where there is always freedom and peace?

Do you want everything from Me? Everything from Mary? You also have to want your own good and that of the whole world. Don't become euphoric over temporary victories. The many Moses on the mountain pray, suffer and offer up for the missionary Clergy in Italy and for their Catholic assistants. Missionary Priests in their own country and the catholic assistants of missionary Priests in their own country work so that the Gospel, the Church and the Sacraments, which are antidotes, life, light and truth, are taken where they don't normally go, and to those who don't come to you, or if they do come, don't understand. They are also taken to those who are sinners, and even antichrists, because "*they don't know.*"

On the day of judgment, I will ask you rather than them, "Why did you allow me to be persecuted?["]

Because, in truth, to allow ignorance of Me and my Truth to live and give root to error through lukewarmness or fear or pride is to persecute me. No more or no less than those who do it without malice, or who are incited to do it, or those incapable of resisting incitement, or those without the capacity to distinguish lies from truth because they lack knowledge of the Truth. Those kept in ignorance by Satan's servants in order to have an army of slaves, of supine masses, delirious with hate, intoxicated by false illusions, tricked by cunning lies, to use against Christ and both the teaching and the militant Church.

Do not allow this to happen anymore. Go into the streets mingle with these crowds dying of spiritual hunger, and give them pieces of the bread of Truth. My Word is truth and life. Go out. Teach. Love.

I said that instructing the ignorant, admonishing sinners and forgiving insults are works of mercy. Do this where there is the most need, where it is necessary to toil most, and battle and win.

Let everyone pick up their cross and carry it, and after having worked and suffered, raise it in the new positions reconquered by Christ, like soldiers do for the glory of their homeland. A priest is a soldier of Christ and his supreme goal [*sic*] should be the glory of my Kingdom in the world.

Raise my sign in the heart of people and Satan will flee from them. This, *and nothing else*, will save you. This is a spiritual weapon and an effective one. Satan and his servants will be defeated not by political parties or words or human actions, but by what is supernatural.

Do what I tell you and I will be with you.

But with Paul I say,⁴⁵⁶ “Be careful not to resist He who speaks, because if those who refuse to listen to those who speak to them on Earth cannot escape, then if you turn your back on He who speaks to you from Heaven there is even less chance you can escape.”

All of this was told to my instrument⁴⁵⁷ *a long time ago*. But because of the hardness of heart of many, I ordered the destruction of the dictation giving the time and place. Not all of that dictation is repeated in this one. *Much of it remains in the heart of my instrument*, so that you don’t come to hate it. Others, more likely than him to react to your judgements, will receive those parts not dictated. What I have said is enough. I have just said that the events and meditations on what could happen to you have made you more inclined to listen to the advice of divine wisdom and love.»

He tells me other things which he orders me not to write, and which I happily don’t write...

I already find it quite a weight having to obey the order to give this dictation to the person Jesus has indicated... and I thank him with all my heart that all I have to do is repeat some of the terrible dictation on the prophecy of Isaiah to Sobna. Only verse 18 «for the present», says Jesus leaving the other parts in the secret of my spirit «for distant times that will come to pass.»

To carry very sad knowledge in one’s heart is a sad, heavy weight. To be able to speak it could *maybe* give some personal relief. However, I say «maybe». Because, as the Lord has judged, «it would certainly be much easier that I receive a crown of tribulations, as people do not want to accept the truth of things that don’t bring them glory». Therefore, blessed be the Lord for having chosen other voices (living or yet to come?) to speak the rest of the message.⁴⁵⁸

⁴⁵⁶ Heb 12:25

⁴⁵⁷ Maria Valtorta.

⁴⁵⁸ [Among the handwritten pages of the dictation of 25.4.49 there is a page of thin paper on which there was the following typed text, with handwritten corrections by Maria Valtorta: *After an intensive investigation in nearby Prato, part of a programme of raids to be carried out after the victory of the Fronte Democratico Popolare (Popular Democratic Front) was discovered. Only a part, because the full plot was only known by its heads. Within 24 hours of the victory, churches and Catholic organisations were to be destroyed as in Columbia. Everything was organised, addresses given, the convents, associations, schools, houses used for religious teaching and practices, and the people who through their party affiliation or membership of Azione Cattolica (Catholic Action) or other religious associations were to be suppressed. At a signal to be given from on high, that is the heads of the Movimento Rivoluzionario comunista (communist Revolutionary Movement). This signal would be transmitted to the head of every communist cell, who having already organised armed groups in their area, would begin the destruction. Convents would then be transformed into factories or... much worse, and those clergy and religious who had escaped the first massacre, hunted down.*]

23-12-48, 11 a.m.

For His Holiness. The Eternal Father says: «Invoke my Spirit and read. Read what can enlighten you. Read the words of those who saw a time, another time, and another time again. A time close to them. The time of my Word among men. Your time. Read and see.

Hell is coming closer. In the Church (for Church I mean the community of *all catholic* Christians) of my Christ there is no longer that holiness which would spur the God of Victories to send his angels to defeat the demons.

The Church of my Christ, incorrectly interpreting the word of its Divine Founder, believes it is so strong and so invulnerable so as to no longer take care to practise those actions which would make them friends of God. This is true of the vast majority of its members, and even among its elite members. It presumes. It feels itself superior to everything and everyone. It says, "I am established. Nothing will prevail against me."

No. Know how to understand the word of God. Don't fall again into the errors *willed* by the ancient scribes who wanted to interpret God's prophecies and promises according to what pleased their own foolish pride as the Chosen People. They believed they were established through that election until the end of time, such was their way of living. This error brought about their downfall, their slaughter, their scattering and persecution. For 20 centuries they have been atoning for the error that they wished on themselves.

Hell will not prevail as long as the Church is holy as its Eternal Pontiff ordered it to be.

Look back over the centuries. Times of spiritual decadence of the mystical body, especially in its teaching members, corresponded to its separation into parts and the death of disciples.

Hell prevails to a greater or lesser extent according to how much the Church strips itself of holiness, and therefore God's help. *It may prevail but never destroy*. In its long history the Church has never known a moment like this current lethargy -- where there is nothing but corruption and triple corruption -- and there has never been a similar attack by Hell.

Read John's Apocalypse. What are the stars which Satan makes fall from Heaven, from the Church's Heaven?⁴⁶⁰

⁴⁵⁹ LNB, December 23, 1948, p. 170

⁴⁶⁰ Rev 12:4

Who if not those who were killed by the Beast of the Abyss for having given faithful witness to me? Who if not those who were chosen to be luminaries of the Church but whose light has gone out? Who if not those pastors who have become idols through their presumption? Who if not the salt which has degraded to poison for the little ones, and who see it and walk away in disgust, and languish or perish?

Too many shepherds are idols as described by Baruch in chapter VI.⁴⁶¹ Many, too many stars of the Church are overwhelmed. Some, the first, by the anger of the antichrists. They are the best and are the glorious martyrs in my Kingdom. The second, flattered by Satan, are more numerous. The new Jerusalem⁴⁶² is becoming a new Babylon and will suffer the same fate as Babylon.

Oh! Spirit of my Christ, perfect spirit of the Most Perfect Shepherd, true life of your Church. How you have dispersed and suffocated the will of men in whom the law of the flesh is stronger than the law of the spirit, despite God infusing them with His gifts!

Take and read, invoking my spirit. Read the prophets. Read Ezekiel chapters 8, 9 and 16.⁴⁶³

Read Isaiah chapter 19.⁴⁶⁴ Those who no longer know how to be Jerusalem, the Church or Holiness will become Egypt. Read, read and re-read. Meditate on chapter 19 of Isaiah.

Too many Sebnas, unworthy Temple prefects are in the Temple these days (the Temple means the clergy assigned to churches) so that God's Spirit cannot dwell there with his Presence creating an invincible shield, an intangible armour, a sure defence. Indeed God will allow Evil to advance and purify, through its horrendous barbs, those who make themselves gods, adoring their power, their intellect and their judgment.

Oh! Miserable ones! Who are you without Me? How can they judge Me and my perfect Will if they cannot judge themselves, and repent and be reborn in the spirit of God?

Read, read, re-read, meditate, tremble and weep. Sebna's time dominates. thrown like a ball into the uncontrolled crowds.

I have said this for years to my spokesperson so it could reach you. This is what I say to You today, Vicar of my Christ and my servant. Yes, because I am God. And no-one is greater than Me. All are servants compared to Me, the Lord. All are nothing in front of my Divine All.

You, you at least don't be like too many of them. Keep your will separate from theirs so as not to make yourself their accomplice. You, are my serv-

⁴⁶¹ Bar 6

⁴⁶² Rome.

⁴⁶³ Ezk chap. 8, 9, 16

⁴⁶⁴ Is 19:22

ant; they are your servants and You the Supreme Head. Your word loosens and binds. It is second only to mine; because You serve me in holiness and love, my word is united with yours, *so that it is God who speaks through your lips as Pontiff.*

You have the staff in your hands and Wisdom, through the spirit. I gave you them when I chose you. Use the power and the knowledge as you see fit, and do not disgust your Lord who wanted to mark your Papacy through an extraordinary gift; the Good News newly preached, confirming that taught for centuries. This is to help you, O Father of Christianity, and all Christians, against whom the evil Dragon advances.

Don't you, the head, also fall. Don't say, "The gift is not proportionate to the danger," as some people say, and as they tempt you to say. Do not offend Me who generated the Word. I who am Mighty, and can do all that I will. I am also a Father and if my child obeys me, I will support them, whatever the degree of danger that assails them.

Don't look at the means by which the gift of the Word came you. *[sic]* It comes to help those who believe or doubt, and also those who don't believe. In servicing the Word, the means obeyed God's orders. That's why it came to you, so that You could do what God wanted. If You had rejected the means you would have sinned. You would not have hurt him; he is innocent. You would have hurt Me, *We*, who are one God in Our wonderful Trinity, and sinned against Love.

That's because Love, our Triune Love, wanted to give this Pontificate the Word of God. If you resist my Will to love, you will repeat the gesture of the Princes of the Priests, of the Sanhedrin, the Pharisees and Scribes who did not bend to evangelising Love, but persecuted and condemned Him right up to the assigned hour of His Martyrdom.

I say to you; read St. John chapter 11⁴⁶⁵ again.

When the Sanhedrin condemns Jesus, he withdraws to Ephraim. God distances himself when Mankind rejects him. However, even at that moment the fate of the Temple and the City was sealed; their destruction and the persecution of those who had persecuted the Word. *After an act of justice and love, love and justice reply.*

I, the Lord, say to You, "You, all of you, need my protection more than your predecessors over the last 20 centuries, and more than sheep in the flock. Because the Shepherds will be struck first in order to disperse the flock."

Gain favour with the Lord your God. You can. You are the Pope. You don't have excuses for not doing so.

⁴⁶⁵ Jn 11:54

Don't imitate Pilate, or you will suffer his fate. He was not justified by the symbolic washing of his hands.⁴⁶⁶ He lacked justice as he condemned without asking others to condemn. Even more so, because having the power he should have known how to silence the sinful tongues.

Do not disown He who speaks of the work. It will be a judgment against You. Knowing Him, serve Him by making the work known. It will be your Glory.

Don't disregard this warning, even if it comes to you through a human creature. Others, your predecessors listened to my means. And if the Church is still Roman, it is because a Pope yielded to Catherine.

Be just, so as to have your Lord as an ally against the advancing Antichrist.»

For me, «The Spirit speaks where it will; to the spirit. But man is not only spirit, and too many things weigh down his spirit. So give these words to his counsellor and if that isn't enough, all Heaven will cry.»

I ask, «How to give? I'm afraid and don't have the possibility to do it.»

He replies, «The person will come who, by my Will, is to take these words without hesitation to the Confessor and Counsellor of Pope Pius.»

«I'll be in trouble», I think [cry].

The Eternal one says, «You will serve me and I will love you in proportion to the suffering you face in doing it. You are Daniel among the lions. God kept Daniel from harm and the Lord was exalted even by those who up until then had been His enemies,⁴⁶⁷ because they recognised him as the True God. Do not be afraid. Everything passes but my love is eternal for those who love and serve me.»

The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment
-----------------	---------------------------	-------------	--------------

Special Help From Jesus, The Two Passions⁴⁶⁸

...⁴⁶⁹

“I am God. Those who want to see miracles to satisfy their foolishness and their corrupt spirit, ‘the inhabitants of the earth,’ as the Apostle John calls

⁴⁶⁶ Mt 27:24

⁴⁶⁷ Dn 6:17-24

⁴⁶⁸ NB45, March 30, 1949, p. 518

⁴⁶⁹ Only one paragraph from a long, 37-page dictation commenting on the section's heading is excerpted here.

them,⁴⁷⁰ *turn to the Beast, who will give them what they desire the more they do not desire the Truth.* He will give them deceit, to lead them astray and take them to eternal death... ”

...

The Forerunners	Antichrist's Reign	Peace/Truce	End/Judgment
-----------------	--------------------	-------------	--------------

The Frustrations Of God's Work^{471 472}

Jesus says:

“When I hear the hypocritical and unreasonable sentence, which is a challenge to Charity, Wisdom, and Justice and a curtain to conceal their contrary will, audaciously and haughtily and even vilely contrary to mine -- ‘If it is the work of God, God will take care of it and make it triumph’ -- with a start of holy wrath I would like to come down to earth and repeat the gesture with which I cleansed the Temple of swindlers, thieves, and merchants.

“I ought to do this. But I am Mercy and remain such as long as man is on earth. I wait for their conversion as long as they have breath. But later, for the obstinate and the tempters of their Lord -- and they tempt Him because they know He is excessively good to them -- there will be the first and second Judgment, and they will know a Face of the Lord that is different from the one against which they hurl the spittle of their provocative sentence.

“What should I do to take care of the Work and make it triumph? Should I bring into action the tremendous God of Sinai, the God of the times of indignation and severity, and strike them dead in their sin, in their sins, for many are the sins contained in their arrogance towards my will. What else, if not this?

“Through you,⁴⁷³ I have provided *all the proofs*. In you there is no sin of rebelliousness, simulation, or haughtiness. You are the docile victim of their

⁴⁷⁰ Apocalypse 13:8.

⁴⁷¹ NB45, August 16, 1949, p. 531

⁴⁷² ET: Elsewhere, Valtorta was told by her guardian angel, Azariah, about two different reasons why people who are granted the gifts of private revelations sometimes refuse to believe in them: “Have some, like Paul believing they were doing good, rejected the gift [of a private revelation]? Have they called it imaginary foolishness on seeing it in others’ hearts? Let them examine themselves. Why? With what thought did they do so? With that of denying that God can do all? If so, they have sinned. With the thought that what the Church possesses is sufficient and that it is useless to wish to perfect what is perfect? If it is because of this thought, they have not sinned, for a respectful zealous love ‘of the tradition of the fathers’ has moved them” (Maria Valtorta, *The Book of Azariah*, Centro Editoriale Valtortiano, Isola del Liri [FR, Italy] 1993, p. 162).

⁴⁷³ Maria Valtorta.

will. You yourself defend their will -- for they are ‘the Church’ -- from those who would like to trample on it. Because of your crucifixion⁴⁷⁴ it is certain that you cannot scrutinize the books of doctors. Because of your cultural background, it is certain that you cannot write those pages. And what else do they want, if this does not suffice for them to say, ‘Yes, it is the Spirit of God present here?’ There is no dogmatic error -- there truly is none in the Work.

“If the Spirit has provided lights (lights of grace)⁴⁷⁵ to render fully luminous what one school or another has illuminated with a ray in one point over twenty centuries, let them bless God for his grace and not say, ‘But we say something different.’

“Who is Wisdom? Is she their servant or queen?

“But in order not to call themselves rebels out of human pride, to conceal these wounds of theirs, they say, ‘It is up to God.’

“God has acted and acts. But the prince of the world holds sway in this world, whereas the King of kings reigns in Heaven and, faithful -- *He is faithful* -- to the free will He has left to man -- to test, reward, or, quite often, condemn him -- He does not do violence to their will, but awaits them, *and soon*, in judgment.

“They would do well to meditate on the page in the Gospel where I, the Teacher of teachers, Incarnate Wisdom, Word, and Truth, say that sins against the Holy Spirit *will not be forgiven*.

“And this truly is a work of the Spirit of the Spirit of God, of the Love of the Father and the Son, of the Spirit who knows all truth and comes to tell it to the men caught in the present whirlwind -- or, rather, whirlwinds -- so that they can defend themselves from the doctrines of hell.”

This dictation followed upon a text by Father Cordovani on the need for the knowledge of theology among lay people, too, and their request for true and valid theology...

He then said to me:

“You shall tell your and my true friends never to repeat that statement again. They say this without malice. But I am pained all the same. Children of the Truth, as they want to be, must either keep silent in this regard or tell the truth: ‘Jesus cannot triumph with the Work because men do not want this.’

⁴⁷⁴ ET: The “crucifixion” refers to Maria’s bedriddenness.

⁴⁷⁵ ET: All parentheses in these last two dictations are found in the Italian original. It is sometimes unclear whether their contents should be ascribed to Jesus, as part and parcel of the dictations, or to Maria, as explanations. These could have been provided to her by a second voice speaking within her, a guidance which she explicitly claimed was at work during visions (see for instance ET:123).

“The truth should be stated in themselves and with their fellows (not with their enemies), just as I always stated it, even warning the children of the Torah (my apostles and disciples) about the yeast and the sins of the teachers of the Torah (the scribes and pharisees, including the highest among them, Caiphas and Annas themselves).

“Warn them. All. Laity and priest (my Father S.). So that they will not cause Me this sorrow.

“This sorrow! What pain! To see Myself, God, frustrated in my will by men or not understood, to the point of being told, ‘You must take care of it.’ Does no one consider, that this ‘if it is the work of God, He must take care of it’ is proof of the offensive doubt present in them and this does not come from God? Don’t they consider that they are offending charity towards Me -- by insinuating that God, to persuade them, ought to perform extraordinary works to effect the triumph of those which are already extraordinary -- and charity towards you -- by insinuating, even unconsciously, that you have either simulated or had Darkness as your teacher? Let them not say so any more. Ever again.

“I had been wanting to say this for a long time. Because I see your heart is getting covered with wounds, one for each time the foolish statement is made. But you are now too wounded, soul of mine, for Me to go on maintaining silence.

“Soul of mine, soul of mine, soul of mine! Come and weep here, to be able to go on living. Come to Me. Here. And let us weep together because I once more came ‘to my house *and was not welcomed or recognized,*⁴⁷⁶ and once more ‘*Jerusalem kills her prophets between the temple and the altar...*⁴⁷⁷

“Since men and angels were created, how many perfect works of God have been frustrated or squandered by man?! And did they perhaps not come from God because they did not succeed? On the contrary, *precisely because they have come from God, they have been frustrated.* I am telling you so because it is true.”

The Forerunners

Antichrist’s Reign

Peace/Truce

End/Judgment

Lesson 34⁴⁷⁸ [...*There Will Be A New Heaven And A New Earth...And The Suffering Of Creatures Will End.*]

March 14, 1950

Romans 8: 22-25

⁴⁷⁶ ET: See John 1:11.

⁴⁷⁷ ET: See Matthew 23:29-37; Luke 11:47-51.

⁴⁷⁸ LES, March 14, 1950, p. 249

The Holy Spirit says,

«The world is populated, rather, it has been populated. from the beginning by unreasonable creatures and by reasonable creatures. Populated. not so there could be many of every species, but because many were the species of the unreasonable creatures, and above these, queen, was the pair of the two creatures endowed with reason and with a spiritual and immortal soul, very different from the one which is called “living soul” in Chapter 1, verse 30 of Genesis and which was not but the breath for which in the Book, it is written of them who “had breath in their nostrils.” And all things that had been made were “good” to the judgment of the same God Creator who is absolute and perfect Goodness.

They were “very good.” Of what goodness? Only that of serving as an aid to man in cultivating Eden, or as food, or as a delight? That is, of a passive goodness because that is what they had to do, or of a servile goodness towards man, a creature different from every other because of his erect position, the magnificence of his walk, the beauty of his face, the power of his actions and voice, for that dominion peculiar to a reasonable being which manifests itself in his secure will, in his decisive command, in his capacity of rewarding or punishing justly all things which command the inferior being to a natural subjection?

No. They were “very good” because they were still lacking in savageness, in wickedness and cunning; and the lion dwelled with the young sheep, and the wolf with the lamb, and the leopard with the kid, and the young ones of the bear grazed with those of the mare, just as it transpires from verse 19 of the 2nd chap. of Genesis, when it is said that Adam familiarly stays with all the animals of the earth and of the air, by giving a name to them all, without suffering an insult from the most ferocious ones amongst them, nor without striking fear in any of them since they were good and they felt instinctively that man, too, was “good,” who would not have punished them without having had a motive to do so; and so, too, as Isaiah predicts that it shall be, when “the knowledge of the Lord,” that is, the kingdom of the spirit will have *truly* filled the Earth. (Isaiah c. XI from v. 6 to 9).

Then Adam sinned and the Earth was cursed because of him, and from amongst the many tribulations which she [the Earth] bore to the fallen man, because he made himself insubordinate to God, was that of the insubordination of the inferior creatures towards him. And he, besides drawing with toil his daily nourishment from the earth that had become cursed, had to struggle to defend himself from the animals that were no longer good, rebellious towards him as he towards the Creator, enemies amongst themselves because the disorder had by now established its kingdom, which will last until the coming of the Day of the Lord and of His Kingdom, and heaven and earth as they are now will disap-

pear and there will be a new heaven and a new earth, (Apoc. c. 21, v. 1) and the suffering of creatures will end.

Because the day and the eternal kingdom will truly have come for all the children of God who, until that day, will always have to struggle, sigh and groan, so as to generate the “son of God” from themselves, born as such not “of blood nor of the will of the flesh;” but for having received the divine Life, by having received the Word made Man, He of whom Isaiah writes, repeating the words of the eternal Word,”... I have redeemed you and have called you by [your] name: you are mine,... I am your Saviour... All those who call my Name, I have created them for my glory, *I have formed them, I have made them*” and again, “They are my people, children who will not deal falsely.”

To receive divine Life means to strengthen man's own life to be able to do supernatural works. To be called by name and to hasten to the divine call means to do what the Man-God did and all that *can be done* because He has redeemed and saved you. Therefore, you have the supernatural elements in you, and first of all, you have Grace for which you can live as just ones and ascend as saints with your spirit, up to the rejoining of it with the flesh, in Heaven, and to each the degree of glory merited in correspondence and proportioned to the gift of Christ for each individual man.

It is not to be said nor to be thought of that in Heaven, though there being many different dwelling places, that is, different degrees of glory, that the reward of the blessed be more or less greater. No. The glory to which your celestial Father has predestined you is constituted by living in His Tabernacle. Celestial blessedness is constituted by seeing God face to face. *All* the blessed will equally have this vision. Of a different degree because the gift of Christ was not given to all in equal measure, but nevertheless, in sufficient measure for all in order to reach the degree that the eternal Wisdom has known *all along* as reachable by that being. However, equal will be the reward because, be it the servant of a glebe or a powerful king, be it a learned person of the Church or one who is prompted and who barely knows how to say, and not even well, the most simple and common prayers, nor does he know anything else other than the essential truths of religion, if they live according to a measure of justice corresponding to the divine call and to the divine gift proportioned to their single mission in the world, they both use the treasures of God given to them with an equal venerable respect and make them bear fruit. Therefore, they will find their treasure in Heaven.

Not all the apostles, not all the prophets, not all the evangelists nor priests are saints in Heaven. Not all the hermits, not all the repentant, not all the martyrs for faith, blessed. Not all the virgins, not all the parents, not all the children” the 144,000 of the immense crowd that no one was able to count, of every nation and tribe, people and tongue” of whom John speaks. The mystical Body is made up of members of every species. However, all, even the most humble

ones, sigh and suffer in the militant Church in order to give birth to Christ within themselves and reach “through unity of the faith and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto the perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ,” that perfection similar to the one of the Father that Jesus proposed to men as the perfect measure of the children of God.

This forming and generating in order to give to the light of the Heavens a “son of God” is very sorrowful work. For this reason, it is said that the saved people who sing praises to the Lamb is composed of those who have “come from the great tribulation” given by the sources which I have already explained to you: the devil, the world, and the *I* which has been made weak and altered by the consequences of the Sin. And the Pauline comparison “travaileth in birth” brings to mind these consequences more than ever.

If Adam and his wife had remained innocent and faithful to the Lord, then childbirth would have been without pain for the woman and it would also have been without struggle and toil for both man and woman to reach their ultimate end, so that sorrow would not have been necessary for all the descendants of Adam, similar to those of a long labour, in order to come to the day of birth in Heaven by having generated Christ within oneself: the true Christian, the other christ.


However, with sin came condemnation, and with condemnation, toil of every kind, physical and moral, and spiritual, in order to become “children of God.” Toil which is based on the sure hope of final salvation. A sure hope to the extent of it being similar to seeing through, by intuition, that which the beatific future will be. And hope becomes faith. And faith gives you patience in expectation of that future.

Faith, hope, and charity, the three theological virtues, especially charity, help to achieve the complete development of how much *seed* is within you: Grace, the root of Glory which has need of the co-operation of all your intellectual and spiritual faculties, as the great St. Thomas Aquinas says, and of all your activities, be they sensitive, spiritual and supernatural ones, that is, those which are taken up with a holy appetite and desire towards God in order to efficaciously work in you and bring you to the attainment of the ultimate end: Glory. The transformation of a carnal man into a spiritual man, and from this, into a child risen to the possession of the Kingdom of the Father, a fellow heir of Christ and with Christ, is actually similar to a long and labourious pregnancy and to a sorrowful labour.

However, you who are living it, comfort your spirit with the words of the divine Master, “When a woman is in labour, she has sorrow because her hour has come; but once she has delivered the child, she no longer remembers the anguish for the joy that a child is born into the world.” And a much greater birth is that of a man who is reborn, through his own will, in spirit and in truth, from a carnal man to a son of God. And again, remember the other divine words,

“Through your endurance, you will gain your lives,” that is, you will give glory to them after the long earthly labour.

Work, therefore, with faith and tenacity at your transformation into children of God, and wait patiently to see what you now only believe to be and hope of being able to see. For no matter how long life and how difficult the trial may be, they are always immeasurably inferior in length and depth with regards to eternity and the beatitude that awaits you. For however arduous the causes and agents which make you struggle and give you sorrow, think that God has bestowed agents upon you and a ground of strength and victory infinitely greater than those which assail and afflict you: Grace, the Sacraments, the evangelical Word, and the Law made easier through inspiration placed there by Christ: love; and lastly, the help and prayer of the Holy Spirit.»

The Forerunners Antichrist's Reign Peace/Truce  End/Judgment
Lesson 36⁴⁷⁹ [...On Judgement Day, One Will See...]

April 25, 1950
Romans 8: 28-30

The Holy Spirit says,

«All things turn to good to whomever loves God because God predisposes all things so that they can be a means of good for His saints. Even those which seem to the superficial ones to be a means of sorrow and danger of evil due to their nature, being able with their essence to bring a soul to collapse, to doubt, or to rebellion.

However, it is not the things in themselves that can bring to these consequences. It is the character not formed to both the moral and natural law, and it is the soul which is not formed to the divine law, that is, deprived of the good will of serving God in everything that He proposes, that which can make of the things predisposed by God for the purpose of good, a means of falling into imperfections or into more or less grave sins. If one were to think on the contrary, that is, that God predisposes things not for the purpose of good, one might as well say that even the predestination to grace is an evil because it often becomes the talent that was not made to bear fruit in the parable, so much so that the slothful servant, from the unjust judgement towards his master, has the same [master] then take the talent from him in order to give it to others more capable of making it bear fruit.

⁴⁷⁹ LES, April 25, 1950, p. 259

But is it perhaps God who prevents men, all men predestined to grace, from being able to use this treasure in a just manner and depending on what they are permitted to do? No. So much so that even to those who do not know of the true God, He places a natural law and conscience in their hearts so that they can then live in such a way as to belong, if not to the Body, to the soul of the mystical Body, and therefore, to be able to delight in the benefits of Grace.

God knows those who are, or those who were, or those who will be -- and He has always known -- those who will not leave the mysterious aids of God inert so that man can achieve his end. And He also knows they who were, are, or will be those who, in a more or less complete manner, transform themselves, or who transformed themselves, or who will transform themselves in the likeness and image of the Man-God by means of love and obedience to the voice of the conscience and to the dictates of the moral law.

Truly, on Judgement Day, one will see amongst those who will be on the right [side] of the Son of Man, many of those whom men judged as not elected to the Kingdom because they did not belong to the Church while on His left, there will be many, who for having been at least in appearance -- for only God knows the truth of things -- living members of the mystical Body, men had judged as certain co-heirs of Heaven. And the astonishment of those who had judged will be great, as well as that of the two categories of the judged.

And the elect through mysterious operations of God, seconded by their upright conscience, will say, "Why are we here if we did not know You nor serve You as You say, by feeding You, by giving You drink, and by receiving You and visiting You?"

And the just Judge, who died in order to give eternal Life to all those of good will, will reply, "Because you have known Me without knowing it, and without knowing it, you have served Me through the love that was given to your neighbour. You have helped Me because even a sip of water given out of love to one who was thirsty has been love given to Me."

And the rejected will ask, "How can You close your Kingdom to us if we were yours?"

And He will reply, "As you closed your heart to the needs of your brothers, so I, too, close to you the doors of the Kingdom. That which you did not do to the least amongst you, you did not do to Me, and with greater gravity of sin because you knew of Me, of My Gospel and of the Law. Go, therefore, a long way away from Me, workers of iniquity, because he is my brother he who is like Me, and you, under the hypocritical mask, do not resemble Me for your being without Love which is my Nature."

This is where the resemblance lies: in love. The most perfect Love in the Firstborn amongst the brothers. A love that aspired to become the most perfect possible in the brothers of Christ in the flesh and in faith. Whoever does not

live in love and does not practice works of love is not a brother of Christ who loved as far as dying for His brothers, and therefore, he is not His co-heir.

He has also called those predestined to glory. And those called have not remained nor do they remain deaf to His call, nor did they tire of following Him. But rather, with heroism, they followed and they follow behind His footprints along the steep path of perfection. Nor did they become dejected or do they dishearten if the love of election of the Lord was a series of trials and sufferings for them. Nor did they believe or do they believe to be less loved if God would permit that men and events would doggedly unleash themselves upon them. Nor did they become disheartened if the weakness of the flesh or a bending of the spirit made them fall or make them fall. Rather, knowing the One who has called them, His Love, His Mercy, they consider Him as their Father and Brother even in the hours of tempestual sorrow, and trusting in the infinite merits of Christ in whom they firmly believe or believed, they accomplished and accomplish their walk towards Heaven where the call had come.

No one can digress from this rule if he wishes to remain in the degree of glory for which God has predestined him. No one, however much he may be loved, can fall into quietism by saying, "After all, God wants me there and He will think about guiding me there." Each of you *must* operate in order to put the divine gifts to work and not leave them inactive.

Adam and Eve, who were also innocent, full of Grace and other gifts, squandered many treasures, and for centuries and centuries, they paid for their infidelity and for their foolish judgement, for, since they were so loved by God, there was no need for them to have many fears and absolute obedience.

Jesus, Man by birth of a Woman, and Mary, both like the first innocent Adam and Eve, full of gifts and most loved by the Father, were faithful custodians and active in using, with justice, the gifts received, and just as it would have occurred for all men if [Adam and Eve] had remained innocent and full of Grace, they [Jesus and Mary] did not possess corruption of the flesh, but with it joined to the soul without stain of any sort, they entered into the eternal Kingdom, to the complete glorification, without awaiting the end of the centuries in order to rejoice, together with the flesh, the perfect jubilation of those risen and glorified after the last Judgement.»

The Forerunners

Antichrist's Reign

Peace/Truce

End/Judgment

Lesson 46⁴⁸⁰ [...The Judgement That Will Follow The End Of The World Is The Conversion Of Israel...]

November 2, 1950

Romans 11: 25-36

The most divine Author says,
«One of the signs of the final coming of God and of the Judgement that will follow the end of the world is the conversion of Israel which will be the extreme conversion of the world to God.

Why are they the last, they who were the first to be the people of God? It is through an eternal and human decree.

Nor does the eternal decree seem unjust. They, who were already the first -- rather: the *only* ones -- in knowing the eternal truths, should have been the very first of the new people of God: of the Christian people; just as Adam and his companion should have been the very first of the celestial people. However, not having exercised good will made of the first ones, the last ones. And while it is said in the Scriptures that Enoch and Elijah were, in life, taken by God out of the world into another better world in order to return, at the right time, to preach repentance and combat the Anti-christ when the world will have become the Babylon and the Anti-christ -- and this due to their [Enoch and Elijah's] extraordinary justice -- the same is said in the Scriptures that, out of its sins, Israel will be reproached by God and from being the first, it will become the last to enter into the Kingdom of Christ.

Adam is a good example of what it means to sink into the reproachfulness of God. He had to wait for a good number of centuries and millennia in the underworld despite having already expiated his sin for a long time on Earth before re-entering into at least terrestrial Paradise where Enoch and Elijah had already been enjoying the joyful friendship of God for centuries.

Even for the Hebrew people, though the Kingdom of God is not inexorably closed to them for their having rejected it when they could have welcomed it, centuries and millennia will have to pass before Israel can return to being a friend of God the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit. First, the other nations will become "the people of God." They, the Jews, will be the last. Last, even if from Zion, there will always come those who will be the salvation.

⁴⁸⁰ LES, November 2, 1950, p. 313

Zion, here, is meant for Israel, and Israel, here, is meant for the “people of the children of God.” Jesus came from Israel. From Israel, there came Enoch and Elijah and they will return to prepare the return of the Son of God: the Christ, because at His coming, the impiety or the abomination of the desolation, according to the evangelical word, be not like a corrupted swamp upon the whole of the Earth and in all its places, and so that all, even those who, for centuries, had been the arrogant ones and all those predestined to the Life, could have it [the Life] before the end of time.

Everyone, even Israel. Because, if as it is said by He who is the Incarnate Word and Wisdom of the Father, the days of the desolation will be shortened thanks to the merits of the elect, it is also to be believed that not all of Israel will be reproached and excluded, and this thanks to the merit of its fathers (the patriarchs, prophets and the just ones of the Hebrew people). For the justice of these, God will use mercy and will not cancel the election of the Jews to His people in order not to separate the fathers from their children and because: God is not mutable in His plans.

Full of mercy even for the pagans and the idolaters, full of mercy even for sinners who repent, He cannot cease being the Father of mercies for those who were His people and that, out of zeal that was no longer divine because it was no longer measured, and no longer order -- a zeal that wanted and which believed itself to be more perfect than the same decree and will and design of God -- they did not know how to believe, accept, and receive the Christ just as God the Father had sent Him.

Christ died even for the Hebrews. Rather, in His utmost requests from the Cross, He commended to the Father the Hebrews more than any other people because it was they who had merited the reproachfulness of God and who pertinaciously would have persisted in their errors.

Why did the elect people have to be the very one who was most guilty? Could God not have prevented them from becoming so? As He had fulgurated Saul, could He not have fulgurated the Chief Priests, the Pharisees and the scribes in order to convert them to the Truth and Justice? He certainly could have. But where, then, is the merit of their conversion which would not have been spontaneous but forced by a divine and powerful will?

Was there or was there not a mysterious motive in this conduct of God? There certainly was, because God does not do anything without a purpose and end. And every end is just, even if it is mysterious for mortals.

The moment will come in which all things worked by God, incomprehensible at this time, will be revealed to you. And then, together with Paul, you will repeat, “Oh the depths of the riches of the Wisdom and knowledge of God!”»

The Forerunners

Antichrist's Reign

Peace/Truce

End/Judgment

[Jesus' Lament and Curse Regarding The Obstinate Refusal To Support The Work's Salvific Timing and Purpose]⁴⁸¹

16-6-50. Feast of the Sacred Heart.

(I am re-copying because of an order received on 12-6-53. Only today [19-6-53] did I find the piece of paper in question and copy it).

Jesus appears to me in the Glory of Heaven. Glorious, majestic Jesus, true King of Kings and Lord of Lords, as he was after his Resurrection and Ascension. With his beautiful Hands he is holding open his royal mantle, which is fastened by a golden clasp, and flows below his feet forming a long train, which completely covers his feet.

I contemplate him, noting his perfect physical harmony, as well as the divine and regal power He has achieved after *having completed everything* on Earth, even the power of his form.

Under the open mantle his Most Sacred Heart, a *real Heart*, is visible. There is also a *real* flame or fire of unbearable radiance. A brilliant conical ray comes from it, and it widens as it approaches the Earth. Similar rays come from his pierced Hands and his pierced Feet; from under his clothes. Five blades of burning fire of dazzling light descending on the Earth.

Jesus' appearance, looking West with his back to the East, is severe but not angry. In fact, when he turns to speak to me it is gentle, then slowly, slowly as he speaks, he becomes the terrifying *Rex tremendae majestatis* [Latin: King of terrible majesty], Jesus the scourge of the merchants and money changers of the Temple, and the unjust Pharisees and Scribes.

He tells me,

«Look, my infinite Love, which is my Characteristic, has drawn from this Merciful Heart a new gift of infinite Mercy, divine Mercy for mankind; the Work.⁴⁸² This was-Supposed to strengthen the three Theological Virtues and the four Cardinal Virtues in human spirits, and give my Love, in the exact measure needed to those who are about to be overrun by Satan's hatred, the Antichrist and his servants.

I had given it in good time, before the terrible deadline, so that it could be distributed as manna and medicine to the multitudes so they wouldn't die through the events without faith, cursing God or denying his Being. Because they would have said, if there was a god he wouldn't have allowed these things

⁴⁸¹ LNB, June 16, 1950, p. 205

⁴⁸² *The Work, Maria Valtorta's writings as Jesus' spokesman.*

to happen, He who says he can do everything. I had given it in good time, asking my Servants first, the Priests, the pastors of souls,⁴⁸³ the small, simple, just, laudable task of publishing it. A very small task in comparison to my great Work and your⁴⁸⁴ great labour carried out in your physical and spiritual condition. I had given it in good time, I who am Wisdom and know everything, I who am Love and do everything for love, I who am All-seeing and know the right moment for every event or appearance. I have spoken in every way, through prayers, through fulfilled prophecies, also through reprimands to the Pastors, who are not shepherds and who are foolishly secure in their wellbeing. They don't have the gut feeling of Shepherds for their lambs.

They ridicule, deride and trample on my Will to love. They have afflicted and condemned my servants to a long passion. They have acted according to their own will, for their own purpose, not based on the slightest rational reason, and so deprive souls of my gift.

What are they waiting for? That a world disaster will allow them to say, in order to justify their harmful action, "Given the special moment of upheaval in the world, we are prevented from allowing publication, just as others would be?" No, that is not a valid reason. Three years ago I finished it and asked that they acted so that many could return to Me through these Words of Life. For three years they have opposed this.

Acting the way they do they oppose it, depriving souls of comfort in these threatening times. If in the very near future Humanity is overcome by a new ferocious whirlwind which makes the last one of 40-45 [WWII] seem like nothing, then in your dying among the anguishes of hell you won't have, my poor children, the comfort of those words, designed to stop you from dying despairingly. This will be through the fault of those who opposed my Will, blocking the publication and dissemination of the Work From heaven I will curse those who took it upon themselves to deprive you of the gift I gave you to be a supreme light and comfort in those terrible times.

I curse them! Because they, men, my servants prevent me from being the King of Kings and the Lord of Lords here on Earth as I am in Heaven; The Universal and Eternal King, free to benefit his subjects, The Shepherd of shepherds of my flock which is attacked by physical, moral and spiritual enemies who are given every freedom, even those of using natural means as deadly weapons of destruction not only of God's Creation but also against faith in God's Omnipotence and Goodness. Weapons against which, with the same lying excuses used by my enemies in Palestine to justify, or *try* to justify their actions against Me - the weapons used by the Pharisees, Scribes, Sadducees and Hero-

⁴⁸³ Elsewhere in NB and LBN Jesus refers to these (Church hierarchy) who will be the cause of a great loss of souls, for not promoting the "Work;" really terrible.

⁴⁸⁴ Maria Valtorta.

dians; all false servants of God and lying believers because they didn't match their words with just actions; Simoniacs who for gold and power trample on justice - who between human and superhuman good choose the first in order to gain human benefits. However, they do themselves harm and will be harmed on Earth and in Heaven. That's because they don't raise their voice as free men, true men, men of good will to say, even if it costs them their life, "Non licet" [It is not allowed] against the greatest crime against Humanity. Not like my heroic Precursor⁴⁸⁵ who dared to cry out against his earthly king.⁴⁸⁶

I curse them! I curse them all and I will continue to curse them if they don't repent, if they don't make reparation for their unjust action. These stubborn, stiff-necked people who won't bow even under the holy yoke of my Will as God. These hard-hearted people who have no pity on you or the crowds needing the Bread of my Word. They who don't know how to say to the powerful of all races and nations, "Stop the hatred, the massacres and the injustices! God, the God you say you love, but, in reality you don't or you do in a very imperfect way, preaches love not hate. God, the God you deny in his works of mercy, wisdom and love, and who you persecute, persecuting those chosen by Me to be my instruments: those you oppress, oppressing them even in the freedom of spirit, already goes against you." [sic]

You see, o Maria, these flaming swords issuing from the wounds which my love for men opens in Me, Man-God, Saviour and Redeemer? I am Mercy, but only for the good. For you. For those like you who are true sons of God the Father.

However, they are also two-edged swords, like that which my beloved Apostle John, the Eagle, Love in the apostolic group, speaks of in his Apocalypse. They are swords that cut, flashes of lightning that strike whoever has evoked my divine displeasure.⁴⁸⁷ I curse them and turn them away from Me.

My curse is a whip that strikes the merchants and traders, the false doctors of the Temple, and it's a mark that cannot be cancelled. It strikes them because although they have all the external signs of being my servants, they don't have the spiritual sign; the light which shows the truth, the wisdom to distinguish true justice, the love which gives what is good to souls, the justice without which holiness crumbles.

It is a spiritual whip, but no less just or true, the same as that with which I once struck the merchants and traders of the old Temple, and the verbal whip with which I struck and knocked down the false priests of the Temple on the Mount which was later destroyed, like them, as a result of divine punishment.

⁴⁸⁵ *John the Baptist.*

⁴⁸⁶ MT 14:4

⁴⁸⁷ Rev 2:12

It was for zeal of my Father's House -- and the Father's House is the assembly of the faithful, the adoptive sons of God, reborn through my sacrifice to this degree of adoption and Grace. They are bewildered sons, oppressed, that you, as I foresaw, and as I preached to my first Priests not to do; with all that I have given you, you don't comfort, you don't nourish, you don't lead and, what's worse, you block Me from doing these things with those pages of *true* Life -- this zeal, I was saying, for the Father's House, his adopted sons, my bothers through human blood that you cooperate in discouraging and doubting the truth of the gift and my mercy, fills me with indignation and wears out my Patience.

Woe betide you, rebellious servants! Peace to you my faithful lambs!

Here is the Heart that waits for you to change your ways in order to forgive you! Even more than this, it pours out its rivers of peace on those who you make slaves of your unjust overbearing power, your poor transient overbearing power that in an instant can turn to dust, to nothing!

You should know that they, those you oppress, are more a part of Me than you with all your transient powers and greatness. They suffer with Me, just as I am in them and suffer in them. Therefore, at the end of their faithful lives they merit all the joys of Heaven; and they will have them to mitigate what you made them suffer on Earth and to forget, in endless beatitude all the pain they had because you, held them prisoners, morally and spiritually for such a long time. They were always afraid of your ever more cruel actions, cruel and unjust, they who merited every honour.»

A few minutes after having finished speaking, Jesus closes his mantle and disappears. However, for the next ten days, that is until the outbreak of the Korean War, he appears in the same way, without speaking but suffering a lot, even in his dazzling beauty.

The Forerunners

Antichrist's Reign

Peace/Truce

End/Judgment

/Churches Desecrated, Bishops And Priests Attacked... I Will Return Only At The Last Hour...⁴⁸⁸

«Do you see? Churches desecrated, Bishops and Priests attacked... already excommunicated for being Communists they come under another excommunication for those who raise their hands against Priests and desecrate churches.

Evil grows and spreads increasingly. After a fleeting success the giants with feet of clay, the prophets of lies, fall down, collapse, break

⁴⁸⁸ LNB, July 25, 1953, p. 229

up, crumble and die. However, the lesson hasn't been learnt. If I was allowed to, I would return to Earth and suffer my Passion again, or even more atrociously, in order to save them. However, the Father, to whom I am subject, as well as a most obedient Son, does not allow me to. I will return only at the last hour of the world as Christ the Judge and King of Kings, for the last, supreme judgement. It will be quick like a bolt from the blue. That hour will be powerful for the good, and terrible for the wicked!

If you were not still necessary to me, I would say to you, "Give me your life for their conversion," and I'm sure you would agree immediately because you are a heroically holy soul, completely dedicated and given to saving souls. I only ask you for prayers and offerings of suffering for them.

For them I dictate this poem to you,

"Poor leaf carried on the wind
That's what a dead soul is.
I close the door with a dark lament
Until the terrible eternal torment.
I seal the door with a fatal rush
Until the horrible infernal pond
Where it dies forever
And punishment, by its will, suffers.
Have they themselves chosen their fate?
Or do they serve it with eternal death!"
(Jesus cries while saying this. Then he resumes)

I read your intimate question. You know that I was and am the Man of infinite words and profound silences. Therefore, I could tell you what you want to know. However, I say, "Everything is influenced by the way they act towards you and the Work. Above all I need you, and I need you alive for this as a victim soul for the redemption of sinners."»

Index

Abomination, in God's house, before end of world (157)

Abomination of desolation

- over the Holy Place (179)
- warning of (227)

Abandonment, to God, as protection from human events (9-10)

Adam

- as father of death (116)
- as example of expiation (255)
- lineage of, Christ as Firstborn of (57-58)

Adultery

- as sin against love (100)
- as small sin, excused (201)

Adultery, spiritual, desire as (119)

Aggaeus, possessed man, cured (214-215)

Alliances, with evil, condemned (42-44)

Angels

- fighting to defend nations assigned to them (21)
- protecting, given to each nation by God (14)
- selection by, of blessed and accursed (110)

Angels of the Sign, placing seal on the chosen (68)

Angelic choirs, singing praises at judgment (53-54)

Antichrist

- epoch of, compared to Satanic epoch (128)
- forerunners of (69)
- final adversary, mystery of (52)
- nature of, as fallen star (69)
- prevention of, through The Work (234)
- reign of, short-lived but tremendous (36)
- son of Satan, generated by Hatred with threefold Impurity (36)
- wars of, through, before period of peace (87-88)

Apocalypse

- commentary on Babylon, the beasts, and the plagues (73-81)
- commentary on hidden manna and little white stone (66)
- commentary on the two witnesses (71)
- John's, referenced (153)
- periods in, not confused (82)
- reference to inhabitants of the earth (246)
- voices in, as concert (109)

Archangels, God's faithful, imitated by Satan (31)

Areopagus, Paul's speech in (164)

Art, corruption of (119)

Ascension, blessing at, of Mother and disciples only (6)

Ashers, the, fall by sword not of man (46, 47)

Assumption of Mary, centennial of (232)

Atheism, as first beast (180)

Avalanche

- as metaphor for sin (199-200)
- as metaphor for sin (236)

Babylon

- new, Rome as (243)
- rising power of (138)

Babylon, the great, as the whole Earth (77)

Balaam, as example of obedience (162-163)

Baruch, Book of, referenced (243)

Bearbines, as sluggish disciples (219)

Beast, the

- black monstrosity compared to Christ's splendor (31)
- hates the Light, seeks the shadow (31)
- turning to, for miracles (245-246)
- victory over (64)

Beasts, the two

- first beast corresponds to Michael (73-74)
- second beast corresponds to Gabriel (73-74)

Betrayal, of God, by Italy (103-104)

Birth pangs, as metaphor for transformation (251)

Bishops, attacked (260-261)

Blood

- as a lavacre, sent to purify the world (1)
- of Christ, as Knowledge and a School (18)
- of Christ, feast of, necessity for (26)
- of Christ, shed for redemption but rejected by men (1)
- of Christ, shedding of, at various places (84-87)
- of Christ, veneration of, would dispel evil (25)

Blood of Christ, speaks with words of eternal life (18)

Bodies, damned, appearance of (190-191)

Bodies, glorified, appearance of (190-191)

Butter and honey, as food for Emmanuel (204)

Cain, punishment of, as warning (68)

Calf, golden, worship of (166)

Calumny, as small sin, excused (200)

Cananean woman, faith of, as Gentile (90)

Capernaum, synagogue in, teaching and exorcism (213-215)

Catacombs, return to methods of (236-237)

Catherine of Siena, St., as example for Popes (245)

Centripetal force, as divine creation (160)

Centurion, the, faith of, as Gentile (90)

Charity

- as life of the spirit (16)
- as price of existence (212)
- Easter as triumph of (208)

- hatred against, unleashed by Satan in full force (23)
- lack of, leads to condemnation (15)
- sins against, punished with fire of Charity (194)

Cherubim, fire between, for punishment (194)

Childhood, corruption of (119)

Childlike souls, rarity of, in corrupt world (40)

Children of God, in all nations (90)

Children of sin, suffering of, as orphans (91-92)

Christ

- as ambassador of the Father (140)
- as Emmanuel (204)
- as Father's Voice (39)
- as Firstborn from among the dead (57-58)
- as King, sovereign rights of (58-59)
- as Light of the world (204)
- as Physician (40-41)
- as ransom for men (140)
- as Savior of Israel (148)
- as Son of Man, House for God's Name (164-165)
- as Star (205-206)
- desire of the Father, fulfillment of (50)
- desire to return and die again, prevented by the Father (1-2)
- forerunners of (135)
- incarnation of, purpose of (34)
- lament over humanity's refusal to turn to him (1)
- mercy of, extended despite human indifference (1)
- second coming of, in glorified Flesh (62-63)
- second coming of, with new power (59)
- silence of, as trial for the soul (10)
- splendor of, compared to black monstrosity of the Beast (31)
- success in saving souls at Calvary, limited (2)
- temptation of, beyond the desert (24-25)

- words on the cross, to commend spirit (92-93)

Church

- as earthly Jerusalem, antechamber of heavenly Jerusalem (48)
- at end of time, hosanna before passion (125-126)
- militant, praying with martyrs' blood (128)
- periods of, obscurantism and splendor (156-157)
- spiritual decadence of (242)
- suffering of, like Christ's Passion (36)

Circumcision, spiritual, with Christ (176)

Co-redeemers

- Mary as head of (4)
- place of, distinct from martyrs and ordinary saved (4)

Co-redemption

- of the good, as substitution for Christ's second martyrdom (1-2)
- through self-immolation, grants salvation to souls (2)

Colossians, Book of, referenced (173)

Commandments

- first, "I am the Lord, your God" (94-95)
- observance of, promises prosperity (33)
- transgression of, threatens punishment (33)

Communion, offered for elections (233-234)

Communists

- excommunication of (260-261)
- threat of, in elections (233-234)

Confession, as formal act without fruit (65)

Confidants, needed for joy of Christ's Heart (40)

Confident, the, needed for joy of Christ's Heart (40)

Consistency, need for, in judgment of others (38-39)

Cordovani, Father, referenced (247)

Corpus Christi, in time of wrath, Satan strikes Christ in his churches (23)

Corruption, of society, various forms (118-120)

Couch-grass, as parasites (219)

Cowardice, condemnation of, toward the powerless (38-39)

Creation

- goodness of, before Fall (249)
- perfection of Adam in (10)

Crime, as barrier to Light (123)

Cross

- adoration of, as throne of power (122)
- Feast of the Holy, as Feast of Sacrifice (84-85)
- one true, of Christ (174)

Cross, triumphant, rediscovered after blindness (125-126)

Course

- of Christ, on the wicked (129-130)
- of Christ, on those blocking The Work (258-260)

Daniel, Book of

- compared to John (179)
- prophecy of (227, 233)
- prophecy of 1290 and 1335 days (108-109, 179)
- referenced (178-179)

Darnel, as evil disciples (219-220)

David, words to Ahimelech (239)

Death

- as queen of dead world (189)
- keys of, held by Christ (64)
- three dwellings of souls after (55)
- two kinds of (115)

Demons

- exorcism of, in Capernaum (214-215)
- given to each nation by Lucifer (14)
- as masters in hearts (48-49)
- single order from Lucifer to sow horror and despair (14-15)
- voices of, as laughter (131)

Denial, as science negating God (160)

Despair, prevention of, through suffering (92)

Dictation

- of Jesus on co-redemption (1-2)
- of Jesus on the Eucharist and the

struggle between Heaven and hell (14-16)

- of Jesus on priests, saints, the Trinity, and spiritual possession (16-20, 24-27)
- of Jesus on the kingdom of Satan and Eucharistic union with Mary (20-23)
- of Jesus on the feast of Corpus Christi and the blessed victims (23-24, 26)
- of Jesus on the Trinity, spiritual possession, and temptation (24-29)
- of Jesus on spiritual possession and the orbit of God (28-29)
- of Jesus on Peter, John, and the Beast (30-32)
- of Jesus on malice, pride, and the value of souls (32-35)
- of Jesus on the Antichrist and the suffering of the Church (35-36)
- of Jesus on forgiveness and judgment (38-39)
- of Jesus on forgiveness (39-40)
- of Jesus on the ultimate sin and the need for prayer (40-42)
- of Jesus on Isaiah and wicked leaders (42-45)
- of Jesus on Isaiah and the Church (45-49)
- of Jesus on faith, rationalism, and the Antichrist (49-52)
- of Jesus on the final judgment (53-54)
- of Jesus on the wicked one and souls given to Love (54-56)
- of Jesus on peace and the scarcity of just men (56-57)
- of Jesus on his Primogeniture and the Kingdom of the spirit (57-62)
- of Jesus on the judgment and those who pierced him (62-64)
- of Jesus on victors over the Beast (64-65)
- of Jesus on the hidden manna and the world's perdition (66-67)
- of Jesus on the seven seals and the Antichrist (67-71)
- of Jesus on the two witnesses and

Satanic war (71-73)

- of Jesus on the Apocalypse and the two beasts (73-81)
- of Jesus on the periods of the Apocalypse (82)
- of Jesus on Ecclesiastes and the simplicity of God (82-84)
- of Jesus on the shedding of his Blood (84-87)
- of Jesus on Joel and the Kingdom of the Spirit (87-89)
- of Jesus on the Gentiles' faith (89-90)
- of Jesus on the value of the spirit (91-93)
- of Jesus on the Law, love, and Purgatory (94-102)
- of Jesus on Italy and the Holy Shroud (102-104)
- of Jesus on shepherds, judgment, and the period of peace (105-108)
- of Jesus on Zephaniah, Daniel, and the final judgment (108-113)
- of Jesus on the judgment of leaders (113-115)
- of Jesus on death and spiritual resurrection (115-117)
- of Jesus on contemporary idolatry and corruption (117-120)
- of Jesus on faith, mercy, and the Cross (121-124)
- of Jesus on peace and prayer (124-125)
- of Jesus on the Church and the Prince of Peace (125-127)
- of Jesus on the Satanic epoch and divine punishments (127-130)
- of Jesus on the Word and the future (130-132)
- of Jesus on punishment and the precursors of Christ (132-135)
- of Jesus on the forerunners and the Kingdom (135-136)
- of Jesus on the forerunners of Satan and loss of freedom (137-138)
- of the Eternal Father to Christians (138-141)
- of Jesus and Mary on Haggai and Mary's role (142-148)

- of Jesus on Israel's conversion (148-150)
- of Jesus on priests, prophecy, and the Church (150-156)
- of Jesus on the Church and the fount of his Word (156-162)
- of the Eternal Father on obedience (162-163)
- of the Eternal Father and Jesus on the Holy Name and Italy (163-173)
- of Jesus on the one true Faith and modern heresy (173-178)
- of Jesus on Daniel and the last times (178-179)
- of Jesus on Daniel and the four beasts (179-184)
- of Jesus on priests and their idols (184-188)
- of Jesus on Ezekiel and the sign of Tau (193-196)
- of Jesus on Ezekiel and divine grace (196-198)
- of Jesus on Psalm 93 and the accumulation of sins (199-202)
- of the Eternal Father on Christ as Light (202-206)
- of Jesus and the Holy Spirit on Easter and mercy (206-208)
- of Jesus on the forerunners of Christ (209-210)
- of Jesus on the sacrifices maintaining the world (210-213)
- of Jesus on Ezekiel and spiritual resurrection (216-218)
- of Jesus on The Work and the elections (233-234)
- of Jesus on evangelizing Italy (235-241)
- of the Eternal Father to Pope Pius XII (242-245)
- of Jesus on the demand for miracles (245-246)
- of Jesus on the frustration of God's work (246-248)
- of the Holy Spirit on Romans and transformation (248-252)
- of the Holy Spirit on Romans and predestination (252-254)
- of the most divine Author on Is-

- rael's conversion (255-256)
- of Jesus on The Work and his curse (257-260)
- of Jesus on the last times and the poem (260-261)

Disma

- forgiveness of (150)
- promise to, as teaching of mercy (92)

Dodders, as tormenting disciples (219)

Dragon, the

- begetting Antichrist (153)
- seven heads and horns (233)

Early Christians

- imitation of (127)
- imitation of (236-237)

Earth, as planet, formation of (160)

Easter, as triumph of Charity (208)

Ecclesiastes, last verses of, referenced (83)

Elect, among non-believers (253)

Elections, Italian, eve of (233-234)

End of time, discourse on (226-231)

Enoch and Elijah, return of, to combat Antichrist (255)

Entreaty, to Our Lady of Sorrows, text of prayer (7)

Envy, as anti-charity (101)

Esau, exchange of birthright, as warning (73)

Eternal Father

- as Father of Jesus and of the writer (130-131)
- words to Christians (138-141)
- words on Christ as Light (202-206)
- wrath of, held back (208)

Eucharist

- and the Word, formal acts without fruit (65)
- approached by modern Pharisees, eating condemnation (15)
- approached out of habit, fruits vanish (15)
- as transformation into Life and Grace (122)
- degrees of union with: perfect seekers achieve fusion (14)
- fruits of, vanish when approached

out of habit (5)

- Mary as model of Eucharistic life (22-23)
- transformation through, would end hatreds and wars (15-16)

Evangelists, the four, at final judgment (195)

Evangelization, of Italy, need for (237-238)

Evil

- growth of (260-261)
- inevitability of (54)
- servants of, cursed (54)

Exodus, eternal, of Jewish race (149)

Exorcism, of Aggaeus in the synagogue (214-215)

Ezekiel, Book of, referenced (187, 193-194, 196, 216, 243)

Face of God

- glimpsed by servants (163)
- hidden by men (131)

Faith

- as intrinsic part of man (173-174)
- loss of (118)
- loss of, at Christ's coming (51)
- loss of, due to perverse thoughts and useless noises (5)
- of Gentiles, recognized (90)
- true believers, rarity of (123)

Fall of man, consequences of (249-250)

False Christs, warning against (226-227)

False voices, warning against (140)

Family

- destruction of (201)
- love of, as duty (97-99)

Famine, as sign of second coming (109)

Father, Eternal

- words to Christians (138-141)
- words on Christ as Light (202-206)
- wrath of, held back (208)

Fear, role of, for those far from God (84)

Fig-tree, parable of (229)

Final Judgment, description of (229-231)

Fish, as good works (198)

Flames, from Christ's wounds (257)

Flood

- new, as God's wrath (133)
- new, as Satanic cruelty (203)

Forerunners

- of second coming, slain children as (24)
- periods of, and Antichrist (82)
- as section header referencing Antichrist's reign and judgment (6)

Forerunners of Christ

- preparing ways through holocaust (135)
- recognition of (210)

Forerunners of Satan, emulating their master (137)

Forgiveness

- necessity of, imitating Christ (38)
- necessity of, to receive forgiveness (39)
- reward of, in heaven (40)

Fount, Maria Valtorta as (161)

Four beasts of Daniel, as four errors (180-181)

Free will, as gift of God, lost (137)

Freedom, loss of, under Satanic dominion (137)

Frustration, of God's work, by men (246)

Future, seeking to know, through Word (131)

Gabriel, archangel, second beast as imitator of (73-74)

Gamaliel and Hillel, identified by second voice (191)

Gesu and Cristo, meaning of the names (78)

Gethsemane

- blood shed at, to sanctify the countryside (85)
- hour of, as suffering (92)

Giants with feet of clay, fall of (260-261)

Glance of Christ

- as sun for the good (53-54)
- as thunderbolt for the wicked (53-54)

God

- absence of, as prime cause of evil (46)

- as creator, did not create death (115-116)
 - as sole God, rulers subject to (113-114)
 - concealment of glory, before the wicked (43-44)
 - invocation of, to make Satan flee (129)
 - respect for freedom of thought (137)
 - simplicity of (84)
 - unknown, of whom Paul speaks (117)
- God's forgiveness**, awaiting men's mercy (39)
- Good Shepherd**, contrasted with false shepherds (107)
- Good will**, of non-believers, recognized (253)
- Gospel**
- one true, Roman Catholic (174)
 - teaching of, on charity (89-90)
- Grace**
- as root of Glory (251)
 - as source of true intercessory power, obtained through annihilation of self in Christ (2)
 - as water from Christ's Heart (197-198)
 - state of, as blessedness to be preserved (9-10)
- Grains of sand**, as sins (199-200)
-
- Haggai, Book of**, referenced (142)
- Hatred**
- as ruin of man (39)
 - condemnation of, toward the defeated (38-39)
 - need to purify from (89-90)
- Healing**, of demoniac (214-215)
- Heaven**, transportation of Church to (48)
- Heaven and Hell**, struggle between, with men as deceitful screen (16)
- Hell**
- gravel of, for the wicked one (54)
 - keys of, held by Christ (64)
- Hemlock**, as criminal disciples (219-220)

- Heresy**, modern, as parody of Faith (174)
- Herod's palace**, blood shed at, for all kings (85)
- Hidden manna**, as the Word of God (66)
- Hitler**, words of, on new worship (177-178)
- Holy Name, Jesus**, splendor and glory of Trinity (164-165)
- Holy Spirit**
- as Consoler (208)
 - gifts of, rejected for power and wealth (11)
 - illumination by, to see Mary (147)
 - rejection of, by the world (11)
 - role in comprehending the Word (139)
 - sin against (247)
- Holy Trinity**
- as light: Father as vast peaceful light (26-27)
 - as light: Holy Spirit as inflamed vibrant light (26-27)
 - as light: Son as vibrant light giving life to souls (26-27)
- Holy Year**, Marian character of (232-233)
- Hope**, in darkness, as act of faith (123)
- Horror**, of the last times, increase of (68)
- Humanity**, as dry bones (216)
- Hypocrisy**
- of leaders, naming God for deception (114)
 - of small sins (200-201)
-
- Idol shepherds**, as consequence of errors (152-153, 157)
- Idolatry**
- contemporary, of thought (117)
 - modern, gods of flesh, money, and power (34)
 - modern, removal of false gods (95)
- Idols**
- casting aside of (46)
 - of priests: jealousy, heresies, sensuality, sects (187-188)
- Immortality**, preparation for (117)
- Infanticide**, condemnation of (96-97)

Intercession, power of, dependent on union with Christ (2)

Isaiah

- commentary on, applied to present hour (42-45)
- prophecy of, applied to generation (106)
- prophecy of men whose spirit is in nostrils (127)
- prophecy of rod and stick of wrath (133)
- prophecy of, on Satan's fall (137)

Isaiah, Book of, referenced (202, 243, 249)

Ishmael Ben Fabi

- hardness of (212)
- referenced (235)

Israel

- conversion of (148)
- conversion of (255)
- love of peace (149)
- rejoining of, to Christ's Rome (108)
- rejoining of, to Christ's Rome (178)
- telling truth (149)

Italy

- prophecy concerning, from Obadiah (102-104)
- punishment of (211)
- re-Christianization of (237-238)
- warning to (102, 166)

Jerusalem

- earthly, Rome as second earthly Jerusalem (44)
- holy, succession to Babylon (138)
- killing prophets (248)

Jezabel, acts of fornication by (124)

Joel, Book of, commentary on 2:18-23 (87)

John, little John, Maria Valtorta as (83, 209)

John, the Beloved Disciple

- as comfort to Christ (31)
- as poet, with soul of a flower (30)
- compared to Daniel (179)
- compared to Peter regarding headship of the Church (30-31)
- writings of, epistles and Apocalypse (36)

Joshua, battle of (239)

Judas

- as example of betrayal (121)
- question of, at parable (221)

Judges, holiness of, required (99)

Judgment

- entrusted to the Son (63)
- final, beginning of (70)
- final, before visible glory of the Lord (109)
- final, commentary on Revelation (53-54)
- final, with Evangelists (195)
- final, vision of (188-191)
- left to God, not men (38)
- nothing without (117)
- of shepherds, woe to (106-107)
- postponement of (207)
- postponement of, by Jesus (6-7)
- refrain from (90)
- second advent as severe, inexorable general judgment (6-7)

Judgment Day, astonishment at (253)

Just men, scarcity of (57)

Kingdom, eternal, with Christ (135)

Kingdom of Christ

- as visible, real Kingdom (59)
- justification for incarnation and death (82)

Kingdom of Evil, established (207)

Kingdom of God, in hearts, as beginning (87-88)

Kingdom of Satan

- chosen over Kingdom of God (34)
- over two-thirds of humanity under sign of Beast (11)

Kingdom of the Spirit, after the Anti-christ's wars (87-88)

Kings of kings, Christ as (258)

Knowledge, true, versus human (74)

Korean War, outbreak of (260)

Law of God

- hinges on love (94)
- neglected, leading to perdition (67)

Lazarus

- miracle of, as symbol (116)
- resurrection of, as symbol (58)

Leaders

- judgment of, by God (113-114)
- responsibility of, as shepherds (106-107)
- sins of, brought by masses' lesser sins (41-42)
- wicked, woe to (44)

Leviathan, the, visited by the Lord (45)

Liar, the, creates mirages (131-132)

Lie, the, does not save (44)

Light

- Christ as (204)
- from God, needed by leaders (114)

Little white stone, as Truth revealed (66)

Love

- as core of Law (94)
- as guide for the close (84)
- as resemblance to Christ (253-254)
- consequences of neglecting (4)
- greatest act of, giving one's life (71)
- necessity of, for salvation (4)
- total, as condition for victory (64)
- universal, because of single Father (90)

Lucifer

- gifts of, limited to corruption and fire (5)
- imitation of God by, in giving demons to nations (14)
- imitation of God by, in giving demons to nations (20-21)
- imitation of God by, in taking on forms of life and death (54-55)
- revenge of, upon Adam and Eve (10-11)
- single order to demons to separate peoples from God (14-15)

Maccabees, Book of, referenced in dispute (213)

Magdalene, conversion of, as spiritual resurrection (116)

Malice and Pride, culmination of, in the world (32)

Mankind, spiritual course of, after the Fall (60-61)

Manna

- in the desert, ruined for the unde-

...serving (66)

- spiritual, Word of God as (217)

Marriage, corruption of (118-119)

Martyrdom, spiritual, versus brief martyrdom (71)

Martyrs

- blood of, calling for Justice (84)
- innocent, death without rancor as (23)

Mary

- as Co-Redeemer (147)
- as Holy of Holies after the Triune God (22)
- as Mother of Sorrows (86-87)
- as model of Eucharistic union with Christ (22-23)
- as Silent One (147)
- as Virgin who waits (147)
- as Woman dressed in sunlight (233)
- beauty of, contemplated by the Trinity (22)
- exploitation of, for human purposes (5-6)
- love for, through the Holy Spirit (147)
- Paradise found in (54)
- preservation from original sin (58)
- sinlessness of (54)
- spiritual maternity of (36)
- triumph of (233)
- union with Christ, never separated since Incarnation (22-23)
- veil of, with Christ's blood (87)

Mary, Our Lady of Sorrows, entreaty addressed to (7)

Mass, as formal act without fruit (65)

Masses, responsibility of, for leaders' sins (41-42)

Masters in faith, concealed in the two witnesses (71)

Meek, inheritance of the Earth (135)

Mercy

- divine, aids given to the spirit (11)
- divine, for saints (208)
- divine, of Jesus (38)
- for the fallen, from love (121)
- human, as condition for receiving God's forgiveness (39)

Messengers, treatment of, called madmen and obsessed (6)

Michael, archangel

- as heavenly sign in last time (108)
- as heavenly sign in last time (178)
- first beast as imitator of (73-74)

Michael and Gabriel, satanic imitators of (31)

Miracle

- conditions for, requiring repentance after (6)
- exorcism as (214-215)

Miracles, demand for, by corrupt (245-246)

Mirrors of God, victors as (135)

Missionary priests, in Italy (240)

Moses, as intercessor (239)

Moses and the Prophets, sufficiency of, for faith (50)

Mount of Olives, discourse on (226)

Murder, spiritual, suppression of children as (201)

Mystical Woman, of Revelation (157)

Name of Jesus, deniers of, woe to (165)

Nettles, as untameable spirits (219)

Noah, days of, as sign (229)

Numbers, Book of, referenced (162)

Obadiah, Book of, applied to Italy (102-104)

Obedience, to God, as sign of servant (162)

Orbit of God, soul in, attracted by God like an electric wave (29)

Our Father, Mary's first, at Bethlehem (147)

Overbearing, condemned (132-133)

Parable, of wheat and darnel, explained (218-219)

Paradise, Mary as (54)

Parents

- dignity of, as second creators (97-98)
- responsibility of, for children (92)

Patriarchs, prayers for Israel (149)

Paul, St.

- on Israel (255)
- on the Antichrist (154)
- reference to Hebrews 12:25 (241)

Paul of Tarsus, in Areopagus, on unknown God (164)

Peace

- conditions for, removing fornication with Satan (124)
- period of, after Antichrist (82)
- period of, after the Antichrist's wars (87-88)
- period of, Christ's reign (108)
- true, versus truce (56-57)
- world's vs. Christ's (211)

Peace, Prince of, Pope as (126)

Pelican, mystical, Christ as (181)

Penance

- spur to, from contemplating the Beast (31)
- value of, in blocking divine punishment (4)

Pentecost, inadequacy of new, without prior purification (4, 12)

Perfection, gradual, conquered by degrees (121-122)

Persecution, not to fear (210)

Persecutions, final, of the children of Christ (36)

Pestilence, as sign of second coming (109)

Peter

- as head of the Church (30-31)
- as practice, compared to John as poetry (31)
- compared to John regarding love and authority (30-31)

Peter, Pope Pius XII

- addressed by Eternal Father (243-245)
- as new Peter, watch and pray (168)
- sign of Christ upon (24)

Peter, St., on prophecy (154-155)

Peter's boat, tempest on (235)

Pharisees, modern

- approach Eucharist with outward ardor but cold hearts (5)
- rejection of Christ's words (210)
- rejection of truth (248)

Piedmont, Holy Shroud in (102, 166)
Piercings, of Christ, over the centuries (63)

Pilate, Pontius, warning not to imitate (245)

Pilate's wife, faith of, as Gentile (90)

Plagues, seven last, as figurative (75)

Plants, as virtues (198)

Poem, dictated by Jesus (261)

Popes, as teachers of mutual forgiveness (126)

Possession, spiritual

- by God, as beatific and joyful (28-29)
- by God, transformation of the soul by (29)
- by Satan, as torment and darkness (28)

Power

- deceitful use of, condemned (43)
- human, as brute strength (113)

Praetorium, blood shed at, for all authorities (85-86)

Praises, human, vanity of (105-106)

Prayer

- lack of efficacy, due to lack of desire (124)
- of the Virgin to the Word (161-162)
- power of collective, by ten just souls (27)
- power of, requires requisites (57)
- power of, to prevent the ultimate sin (41)
- responsibility for leaders, through prayer (38)

Precursors of Christ, crown of cross and pain (134)

Predestination, and free will (252-254)

Pride

- as sin of rulers (103)
- danger of, when receiving supernatural gifts (9)

Priests

- as incense burners (185-186)
- as light of the world (35)
- as light of the world (184-185)
- as salt of the earth (35)
- as shepherds (150)
- as shepherds (186)

- as soldiers of Christ (240)
- as stars in Christ's firmament (35)
- attacked (260-261)
- perfect, as sun (186)
- responsibility of (106-107)

Prodigies, of God, ineffective on most (88)

Profaners, curse upon (129-130)

Progress, human, limitations of (118)

Prophecy, unity and veracity of (153)

Psalms 93, commentary on (199)

Punishment

- as calls of love (129)
- as divine, through man (133)
- divine, individual decree (110)
- divine, just and less harsh than deserved (35)

Purgatory, as suffering of love (94, 101-102)

Purification, necessity of, before receiving a new Pentecost (4)

Rationalism

- as killer of faith (51)
- as threat to faith and supernatural knowledge (9)

Reclamation, as metaphor for evangelization (238)

Redemption

- last, in devotion to Mary (233)
- substitutionary, through self-immolation (1-2)
- through Mary's silence (147)

Reflection, of Maria Valtorta on suffering, grace, and pride (8-10, 12-13)

Rejoicing, in heaven, over forgiveness (40)

Remainder, the Lord's, those who remain faithful (89)

Remorse, of the wicked, as punishment (55)

Repentance, lack of, among wrongdoers even after miracles (6)

Resurrection

- final, of the just (135)
- final, of skeletons (190)
- first and second, explained (81)
- of the flesh, at final judgment (108)
- of the flesh, when saved complete

(178)

- of the witnesses, glorious (71)
- spiritual, as greatest miracle (116)
- spiritual, of dry bones (216)

Rest, Sunday, commanded for man's good (96)

Revelation, commentary on 11:17-18 (53-54)

Revelation, commentary on "even those who pierced Me" (63)

Revolution, as beast (181)

Romans, Book of, referenced (248, 252, 255)

Rome, of Christ, overcoming by love (126)

Sabbath, neglect of (200)

Sacred Heart, flames from (257)

Sacrifice

- necessity of, for mission (161)
- necessity of, for the spirit (83)
- of Work publication, refused (234)
- one true, the Mass (174)
- perpetual, cessation of (179)

Saints

- as flowers from corrupt earth (139)
- fusion with Christ through Eucharist (5)
- memory of (117)
- mercy for (208)
- stigmatization of, in heart and mind (17)

Samaritan, priests as merciful as (185)

Samuel, Book of, referenced (239)

Sands, as souls (198)

Satan

- as aper of God (74)
- as aper of God (181)
- as Captain of army against Christ (197)
- as lord of lies (44)
- as master in the mystical forest (67)
- children of, immense number (57)
- ephemeral triumphs of (114)
- fornication with, as obstacle to peace (124)
- imitation of God by, in manifestations (31)

- instruments of, men as (132)
- kingdom of, not divided (14-15)
- kingdom of, not divided (20-21)
- malice of, to extinguish priestly luminaries (35)
- single order to demons to separate peoples from God (20-21)
- temptation by, increases with spiritual advancement (17, 24-25)
- third manifestation of, last coming (82)
- war behind human war (71-72)

Satanic epoch, three times fiercer than anti-Christian (128)

Scandal

- of leaders, leading little ones astray (114)
- of priests, to the faithful (187)
- responsibility for (44)
- responsibility for (46)

Science

- human, as obstacle to belief (50)
- human, distortions of (74)
- human, limitations of (117-118)

Scourges

- inadequacy of divine, to turn men to love (4)
- serpent raised on cross as symbol (122)

Sebna, as type of unworthy prefect (243)

Second coming, preparation for, through Eucharistic transformation (15-16)

Second death, which knows no resurrection (93)

Second voice, as intuition in spirit (191)

Selection

- final, during Satan's last raging (88)
- self-selection of men (72)

Self-idolatry

- as worst form of idolatry (34)
- forms of, great and small (41)

Self-immolation

- as means to save souls (2)
- reward of, among co-redeemers (4)

Serpent

- as symbol of eternal life (174)
- eternal, as master installed (67)

Servants of God, obedience of, even at cost (162-163)

Seven seals, opening of (233)

Seven thunders, sealed, not to be written (70)

Shepherds

- judgment of, woe to (106-107)
- responsibility of (106-107)

Shroud, Holy, in Piedmont (102, 166)

Sign

- demand for (203)
- demand for, by men (4)
- demand for, refused (50)
- existing signs in Gospel and miracles (4)
- glorious, of the chosen (68)

Signs

- as warning (106)
- observing, to divert with the Cross (104)
- rejection of (123)

Sins, of nations, provoking indignation (129)

Sobna, prophecy of (235)

Soldiers, blood shed on, for militias (86)

Solomon, Temple of, profanation of (130)

Son of God, children of, insignificant number (57)

Son of Man, as firstborn Son of Adam (63)

Soul

- transformation of, by divine possession (29)
- value of, requiring the Blood of God (35)

Souls

- categories of, separation of elect from reprobate (21)
- given to Love, as Paradise on earth (55-56)

Souls, categories of

- modern Pharisees, eat condemnation (15)
- perfect seekers, achieve fusion with Christ (14)
- those approaching out of habit, fruits vanish (15)

- those in need or fear, receive comfort (14-15)

Spirit

- life of, as children of God (127)
- life of, versus life of flesh (11)
- testimony of, at judgment (63)
- time of, to come (59-62)
- warfare with flesh (10-11)

Spiritual inheritance, for children (217)

Splendor of Christ, compared to black monstrosity of the Beast (31)

Star, Christ as (205-206)

Star born of Jacob, Christ as (163)

Stars

- falling of, as Church luminaries (242-243)
- shaking of, by Lucifer (35)

Stone, cornerstone, chosen stone of Zion (47-48)

Suffering

- expiatory, for the salvation of souls (12-13)
- value of, as felicitous martyrdom (28)
- value of, for knowing Christ's doctrine (17)

Suicide, responsibility for, on parents (96-97)

Sun, seven times brighter, ignited by Christ's glance (53-54)

Sunday, as day of rest for flesh and soul (166)

Synagogue, teaching in, at Capernaum (213-214)

Syndrium, modern, politician priests as (187)

Tabernacle

- new, contains true Bread and Christ's Heart (34)
- old, contained tablets and manna (34)
- shelter of, as salvation (128)

Talents, parable of (252)

Tau, sign of

- as pollarded cross (193)
- as spiritual sign (193)

Temple, destruction of, prophesied (226)

Temptation, persistence of, as normal spiritual experience (24)

Ten just men, reference to Jesus' statement (57)

Ten virgins, parable of (232)

Theft, as sin against love (100)

Thought, oppression of, by men (137)

Three years and six months, last time of (178-179)

Transfiguration, Feast of (209)

Transformation, of carnal man into spiritual (251)

Tree of life, Christ as (64)

Trinity

- knowledge of, revealed to lovers of the Son (18, 25)
- unity of, not to be broken (139)

Truth

- one alone (57)
- rejection of (246)

Two witnesses, the, as masters in faith (71)

Ultimate sin, prevention of, through prayer and suffering (41)

Universe, death of, vision (189)

Unknown God, altar to (164)

Vampire, man as, under Satan (181)

Vengeance, desire for, contrary to God's nature (7)

Venial sin, accumulation of (199-200)

Victims

- blessed, with no stain of hatred (24)
- delirious with divine love (161)
- heroic, maintaining world (212)

Victors

- over Satan, as mirrors of God (135)
- warning to (133)

Victors, the

- as pillars in Christ's temple (66)
- defined as those who overcome the Beast (64)
- given the Word as food (64-65)

Violence, uselessness of (132)

Virginity, of the spirit, as preservation of grace (51)

Vision

- of final judgment and resurrection (188-191)
- of Jesus in glory with flames (257-260)
- of Jesus teaching and exorcising (213-215)
- of Jesus teaching the parable (218-221)
- of Jesus' end of time discourse (226-232)

Voices of Christ, as faithful witnesses (210)

War

- as gain for some (124)
- as struggle against Christ (197)
- truce in, temporary (56-57)

Wars, as signs before end (227)

Wicked one, the, as unsleeping tower (55)

Will, human freedom of, respected by God (29)

Wisdom, of the wise, perishing of (45-46)

Wisdom, Book of

- exhortation to the powerful (113)
- on healing through the Savior (122)

Word of God

- as hidden manna (66)
- as necessary guide (65)
- as nourishment for the spirit (66)
- blessedness of hearing and observing (59)
- ignorance of (131)
- love for (139)
- sacredness of (83)

Work, The

- as gift of Mercy (257)
- authenticity of (247)
- importance of publication (234)

Wormwood, mixed into man's bread, wine, and sleep (68)

X-rays, as metaphor for God's sight (194)

Yeast, as metaphor for holy ones (238)

Yoke, light, of Christ (84)

Zeal, for Father's House (260)

Zechariah, Book of, referenced (148, 150, 156)

Zephaniah, Book of, prophecy of (108)

Zion

- as Israel (255-256)
- foundation of (47-48)



The Last Days

This ebook is Anonymous', non-commercial compilation of excerpts from the writings of Maria Valtorta,
"The Word that gives eternal life."